



AN INDIAN CACIQUE OF THE ISLAND OF CUBA, ADDRESSING COLUMBUS
concerning a future state.

Published Nov. 1792 by L. Stoddard, Printers

THE
HISTORY,
CIVIL AND COMMERCIAL,
OF
The British Colonies in the West Indies :
IN TWO VOLUMES.

By *BRYAN EDWARDS*, Esq.
OF THE ISLAND OF JAMAICA;
F.R.S. S.A. AND MEMBER OF THE AMERICAN PHILO-
SOPHICAL SOCIETY AT PHILADELPHIA.

THE SECOND EDITION,
ILLUSTRATED WITH MAPS.

VOL. I.

LONDON:
PRINTED FOR JOHN STOCKDALE, PICCADILLY.

M.DCC.XCIV.

TO. THE
KING's Most Excellent MAJESTY;

THIS

POLITICAL AND COMMERCIAL SURVEY

OF

His MAJESTY's Dominions in the West Indies;

WHICH,

UNDER HIS MILD AND AUSPICIOUS
GOVERNMENT,

ARE BECOME THE PRINCIPAL SOURCE OF THE NATIONAL
OPULENCE AND MARITIME POWER,

IS,

WITH HIS GRACIOUS PERMISSION,

MOST HUMBLY INSCRIBED,

BY . HIS MAJESTY's

MOST LOYAL AND DUTIFUL SUBJECT
AND SERVANT,

B. EDWARDS.

LONDON,
3rd June, 1793.

P R E F A C E.

TH E discovery of a new hemisphere by Christopher Columbus, and the progress of the Spaniards in the conquest of it, have been deservedly the theme of a long series of histories in the several languages of Europe; and the subject has, been recently resumed and illustrated by a celebrated Writer among ourselves.—It is not therefore my intention to tread again in so beaten a track, by the recital of occurrences of which few can be ignorant, if the noblest exertions of the human mind, producing events the most singular and important in the history of the world, are circumstances deserving admiration and enquiry.

My attempt, which I feel to be sufficiently arduous, is,

To present the Reader with an historical account of the origin and progress of the settlements made by our own nation in the West Indian islands;—

To explain their constitutional establishments,
internal

internal governments, and the political system maintained by Great Britain towards them ;—

To describe the manners and dispositions of the present inhabitants, as influenced by climate, situation, and other local causes ; comprehending in this part of my book an account of the African slave-trade, some observations on the negro character and genius, and reflections on the system of slavery established in our colonies ;—

To furnish a more comprehensive account than has hitherto appeared of the agriculture of the Sugar Islands in general, and of their rich and valuable staple commodities, sugar, indigo, coffee, and cotton, in particular ;—finally,

To display the various and widely extended branches of their commerce ; pointing out the relations of each towards the other, and towards the several great interests, the manufactures, navigation, revenues, and lands of Great Britain :—

THESE, together with several collateral disquisitions, are the topicks on which I have endeavoured to collect, and convey to the publick, useful and acceptable information. Their importance will not be disputed, and I have only to lament that my abilities are not more equal to the task I have undertaken.

BUT, before I proceed to investigations merely political and commercial, I have ventured on a retrospective survey of the state and condition of the West Indian islands when first discovered by Columbus; and I have endeavoured to delineate the most prominent features in the character and genius of their ancient inhabitants. I was led to a research of this nature, not merely for the purpose of giving uniformity to my work, but because, having resided many years in the countries of which I write, I presume to think that I am somewhat better qualified to judge of the influence of climate and situation, on the disposition, temper, and intellects of their inhabitants, than many of those writers, who, without the same advantage, have undertaken to compile systems, and establish conclusions, on this subject. I conceive that, unless an author has had the benefit of actual experience and personal observation, neither genius nor industry can at all times enable him to guard against the mistakes and misrepresentations of prejudiced, ignorant, or interested men; to whose authority he submits, merely from the want of advantages which those who have possessed them have perverted. He is liable even to be misled by preceding authors, who have undertaken,

taken, on no better foundation than himself, to compile histories and form systems on the same subject: for when plausible theories are deduced, with ingenuity and eloquence, from facts confidently asserted; he suspects not, or, if he suspects, is cautious of asserting, that the foundation itself (as it frequently happens) is without support; that no such facts actually exist, or, if existing, are accidental and local peculiarities only,—not premises of sufficient extent and importance whereon to ground general conclusions and systematical combination.

I HAVE been induced to make this remark from perusing the speculations of Mons. Buffon and some other French theorists, on the condition and character of the American nations. Whether from a desire to lessen the strong abhorrence of all mankind at the cruelties exercised by the Spaniards in the conquest of the New World, or from a strange affectation of paradox and singularity, falsely claiming the honours of philosophy, those writers have ventured to assert, that the air and climate, or other physical phenomena, retard the growth of animated nature in the New Hemisphere, and prevent the natives from attaining to that perfection at which mankind arrive in the other quarters of the globe. Notwithstanding

ing the variety of soil, climate, and seasons, which prevail in the several great provinces of North and South America;—notwithstanding that the aboriginal inhabitants were divided into a great many different tribes, and distinguished also by many different languages; it is pretended that all those various tribes were uniformly inferior, in the faculties of the mind and the capacity of improvement, to the rest of the human species; that they were creatures of no consideration in the book of Nature;—denied the refined invigorating sentiment of love,—and not possessing even any very powerful degree of animal desire towards multiplying their species. The author of a system entitled ‘*Recherches Philosophiques sur les Americains*’ declares, with unexampled arrogance, that there never has been found, throughout the whole extent of the New World, a single individual of superior sagacity to the rest. And the scope of his treatise is to demonstrate, that the poor savages were actuated, not by reason, but by a sort of animal instinct; that Nature, having bestowed on the whole species a certain small degree of intellect, to which they all individually attain, placed an insurmountable barrier against their further progress:—of course, that they are not (properly speaking) *men*,

but beings of a secondary and subordinate rank in the scale of creation.

ALTHOUGH our own learned Historian (*a*) is much too enlightened to adopt, in their fullest extent, these opinions;—which cannot, indeed, be read without indignation;—yet it is impossible to deny, that they have had some degree of influence in the general estimate which he has framed of the American character: for he ascribes to all the natives of the New World many of those imperfections on which the system in question is founded; and repeatedly asserts, that “the qualities belonging to the people of *all* the different tribes may be painted with the same features (*b*).” With this bias on his pen, it is not wonderful that this author is sometimes chargeable with repugnancy and contradiction. Thus we are told that “the Americans are, in an amazing degree, strangers to the first instinct of nature (a passion for the sex), and, *in every part of the New World*, treat their women with coldness and indifference (*c*).” Yet we find soon afterwards, that, “*in some countries of the New World*, the women are valued and admired, the animal

(*a*) Dr. Robertson.

(*b*) History of America, Vol. I. p. 280 and 283.

(*c*) P. 292.

passion of the sexes becomes ardent, and the dissolution of their manners is excessive (*d*).” It is elsewhere observed, that “the Americans were not only averse to toil, but incapable of it, and sunk under tasks which the people of the other continent would have performed with ease; and it is added, that “this feebleness of constitution *was universal, and may be considered as characteristic of the species (c).*” It appears, however, in a subsequent page, that “wherever the Americans have been gradually accustomed to hard labour, their constitutions become robust enough to equal any effort of the natives either of Africa or Europe (*f*).” Personal debility, therefore, could not have been the peculiar characteristic of the American species; for the human frame, in every part of the globe, acquires strength by gradual employment, and is comparatively feeble without it.

AGAIN: Among the qualities which the Historian considers as universally predominant in the Americans, he ascribes to them, in a remarkable degree, a hardness of heart and a brutal insensibility to the sufferings of their fellow-creatures (*g*).

(*d*) History of America, Vol. I. p. 296.

(*c*) P. 290.

(*f*) P. 294.

(*g*) P. 405.

“ So little (he observes) is the breast of a savage susceptible of those sentiments which prompt men to that feeling attention which mitigates distress, in some provinces of America the Spaniards have found it necessary to enforce the common duties of humanity by positive laws (*b*).” Neither is this account of their inflexibility confined to the ferocious barbarian of the northern provinces, or to the miserable outcast of Terra del Fuego. The author extends his description to all the uncivilized inhabitants of the New Hemisphere. It constitutes a striking feature in his general estimate; for he establishes it as a fixed principle, that “ in every part of the deportment of man in his savage state, whether towards his equals of the human species, or towards the animals below him, we recognize the same character, and trace the operations of a mind intent on its own gratifications, and regulated by its own caprice, without much attention or sensibility to the sentiments and feelings of the beings around him (*i*).”

CERTAINLY the learned Author, while employed in this representation, had wholly forgotten the account which he had before given of the first inter-

(*b*) History of America, Vol. I. p. 406.

(*i*) P. 407.

view between the Spaniards and the natives of Hispaniola, when a ship of Columbus was wrecked on that island. “As soon (says the Historian) as they heard of the disaster, they crowded to the shore, with their prince Guacanahari at their head. Instead of taking advantage of the distress in which they beheld the Spaniards, to attempt any thing to their detriment, they lamented their misfortune *with tears of sincere condolence*. Not satisfied with this unavailing expression of their sympathy, they put to sea a vast number of canoes, and, under the direction of the Spaniards, assisted in saving whatever could be got out of the wreck; and by the united labour of so many hands, almost every thing of value was carried ashore. Guacanahari in person took charge of the goods, and prevented the multitude not only from embezzling, but even from inspecting too curiously what belonged to their guests. Next morning this prince visited Columbus, *and endeavoured to console him for his loss by offering all that he possessed to repair it.*”

Thus exceptions present themselves to every general conclusion, until we are burthened with their variety:—And at last we end just where we began; for the wonderful uniformity which is said to have

distinguished the American Indians, appears to be as little founded in nature, as it is supported by analogy.

Of the other branches of my work, great part, I presume to think, will be new to many of my readers. I have not met with any book that even pretends to furnish a comprehensive and satisfactory account of the origin and progress of our national settlements in the tropical parts of America. The system of agriculture practised in the West Indies, is almost as much unknown to the people of Great Britain as that of Japan. They know, indeed, that sugar, and indigo, and coffee, and cotton, are raised and produced there; but they are very generally, and to a surprising degree, uninformed concerning the method by which those and other valuable commodities are cultivated and brought to perfection. So remarkable indeed is the want of information in this respect, even among persons of the most extensive general knowledge, that in a law question which came by appeal from one of the Sugar Islands a few years ago, the noble and learned lord who presided at the hearing, thinking it necessary to give some account of the nature of rum and melasses (much being stated in the pleadings concerning the value

of those commodities) assured his auditors with great solemnity, that “melasses was the raw and unconcocted juice extracted from the cane, and from which sugar was afterwards made by boiling!” (*k*)

ON the subject of the slave trade, and its concomitant circumstances, so much has been said of late by others, that it may be supposed there remains but little to be added by me. It is certain, however, that my account, both of the trade and the situation of the enslaved negroes in the British colonies, differs very essentially from the representations that have been given, not only in a great variety of pamphlets and other publications, but also by many of the witnesses that were examined before the house of commons. The publick must judge between us, and I should be in no pain about the result, if the characters of some of those persons who have stood forth on this occasion as accusers of the resident planters, were as well known in Great Britain, as they are in the West Indies. What I have written on these subjects has at least this advantage, that great part of my observations are

(*k*) I give this anecdote on the authority of a Jamaica gentleman who was present; a person of undoubted veracity.

founded on personal knowledge and actual experience: and with regard to the manners and dispositions of the native Africans, as distinguished by national habits, and characteristick features, I venture to think, that my remarks will be found both new and interesting.

AFTER all, my first object has been truth, not novelty. I have endeavoured to collect useful knowledge wheresoever it lay, and when I found books that could supply what I sought, I have sometimes been content to adopt, without alteration, what was thus furnished to my hands. Thus, extracts and passages from former writers occupy some of my pages; and not having always been careful to note the authorities to which I resorted, I find it now too late to ascertain the full extent of my obligations of this kind. They may be traced most frequently, I believe, in the first and last parts of my work: In the first, because, when I began my task, I had less confidence in my own resources than I found afterwards, when practice had rendered writing familiar to me; and in the last, because, when my labours grew near to a conclusion, I became weary, and was glad to get assistance wheresoever it offered.

FROM

FROM *living* rather than from *written* information, however, have I generally sought assistance, when my own resources have proved deficient; and it is my good fortune to boast an acquaintance with men, to whom, for local and commercial knowledge, our statesmen and senators might resort, with credit to themselves and advantage to the publick. On this occasion, neither the gratitude which I owe for favours bestowed, nor the pride which I feel from the honour of his friendship, will allow me to conceal the name of Edward Long, Esquire, the author of the Jamaica History, to whom I am first and principally indebted; and who, with the liberality which always accompanies true genius, has been as careful to correct my errors, and assiduous to supply my defects, as if his own well-earned reputation had depended on the issue.

FOR great part of the materials which compose the History of Grenada, I am under obligations to Thomas Campbell, Esquire, formerly speaker of the assembly of that island, who, through means of a friend, furnished such answers to queries that I sent him, as encourage me to present that portion of my work to the publick with a confidence which I dare not assume in my account of some other of

the islands. Yet, even with regard to most of these, I have no cause to complain that assistance has been oftentimes denied me. Concerning Barbadoes and Saint Christopher's in particular, I have been favoured with much accurate and acceptable information, by John Braithwaite and Alexander Douglas, Esquires, gentlemen who are intimately acquainted with the concerns of those colonies; and the polite and cheerful readiness with which they satisfied my enquiries, entitle them to this publick testimony of my thanks.

THE same tribute is most justly due to Benjamin Vaughan and George Hibbert, Esquires, merchants of London, for many excellent and important remarks, and much valuable matter; which, at length, have enabled me to look back on the commercial disquisitions in the last book, with a degree of satisfaction that at one period I despaired of obtaining; being well apprized that this part of my work will, on many accounts, be most obnoxious to criticism. That it is now rendered free from mistakes, I do not indeed pretend. In all researches of a political and commercial nature, the best authorities are sometimes fallible; and there is frequently much difference both in general opinion
and

and particular computation between those who are equally solicitous for the discovery of truth. The facts, however, that I have collected cannot fail to be of use, whether the conclusions I have drawn from them be well founded or not.

I MIGHT here close this introductory discourse, and leave my book to the candour of my readers; but having made my acknowledgments to those gentlemen who have given me their kind assistance in the compilation of it; and feeling, in common with all the inhabitants of the British West Indies, a just sense of indignation at the malignant and unmerited aspersions which are daily and hourly thrown upon the planters, for supposed improper and inhuman treatment of their African labourers; I should ill acquit myself, as the historian of those colonies, if I omitted this opportunity of giving my testimony to the fulness of their gratitude, their honest pride and lively sensibility, at beholding, in a Son of their beloved Sovereign, the generous assertor of their rights, and the strenuous and able defender of their injured characters, and insulted honour! The condescending and unsolicited interposition of the Duke of Clarence on this occasion, is the more valuable, as, happily for the
c 2 planters,

planters, it is founded on his Royal Highness's personal observation of their manners, and knowledge of their dispositions, acquired on the spot. Thus patronized and protected, while they treat with silent scorn and deserved contempt the base efforts of those persons who, without the least knowledge of the subject, assail them with obloquy and outrage, they find a dignified support, in the consciousness of their own innocence, even under the misguided zeal and unfavourable prepossessions of better men. It might indeed be hoped, for the interests of truth and humanity, that *such* men would now frankly acknowledge their error, and ingenuously own, that we have been most cruelly traduced, and ignominiously treated; or if this be too much to ask, we may at least expect that gentlemen of education and candour will no longer persist in affording countenance to the vulgar prejudices of the envious and illiberal, by giving currency to suggestions which *they* cannot possibly know to be true, and which *we* know to be false.

LONDON, 1793.

P R E F A C E

TO THE

SECOND EDITION.

THE sale of a large impression of this Work, in little more than twelve months, having induced the Bookseller to publish a second edition, I have availed myself of the opportunity of correcting several errors which had crept into the first; but I have not found it necessary to enlarge my Book with any new matter of my own, worthy of mention. The only additions of importance are a few notes and illustrations, with which the kindness of friends has enabled me to supply some of my deficiencies. I have thought it proper, however, in that part of the Sixth Book which treats of the commercial system, to insert a copy of the provisional bill presented to the House of Commons in March 1782, by the Right Hon. WILLIAM PITT, Chancellor of the Exchequer, for the purpose of reviving the beneficial intercourse that existed before the

the

the late American war, between the United States and the British Sugar Islands. This bill, through the influence of popular prejudice and other causes, was unfortunately lost. Had it passed into a law, it would probably have saved from the horrors of famine fifteen thousand unoffending Negroes, who miserably perished (in Jamaica alone) from the sad effects of the fatal restrictive system which prevailed! The publication of this bill, therefore, is discharging a debt of justice to the Minister and myself: to Mr. PITT, because it proves that his first ideas on this question were founded on principles of sound policy and humanity; to myself, because it gives me an opportunity of shewing that the sentiments which I have expressed on the same subject are justified by his high authority.

THIS is not a business of selfishness or faction; nor (like many of those questions which are daily moved in Parliament merely to agitate and perplex government) can it be dismissed by a vote. It will come forward again and again, and haunt administration in a thousand hideous shapes, until a more liberal policy shall take place; for no folly can possibly exceed the notion that any measures pursued by Great Britain will prevent the American States from having, *some time or other*, a commercial intercourse with our West Indian territories on their own terms. With a chain of coast of twenty degrees of latitude, possessing the finest harbours for the purpose in the world, all lying so near to the Sugar Colonies, and the track to Europe,—with a

country abounding in every thing the Islands have occasion for, and which they can obtain no where else;—all these circumstances, necessarily and naturally lead to a commercial intercourse between our Islands and the United States. It is true, we may ruin our Sugar Colonies, and ourselves also, in the attempt to prevent it; but it is an experiment which God and Nature have marked out as impossible to succeed. The present restraining system is forbidding men to help each other: men who, by their necessities, their climate and productions, are standing in perpetual need of mutual assistance, and able to supply it.

I WRITE with the freedom of History;—for it is the cause of humanity that I plead.—At the same time there is not a man living who is more desirous than myself of testifying, by every possible means, the sensibility and affection which are due to our gracious SOVEREIGN, for that paternal solicitude and munificent interposition, in favour of his remotest subjects, to which it is owing that the Bread Fruit, and other valuable productions of the most distant regions, now flourish in the British West Indies. These are indeed “imperial works, and worthy kings.” After several unsuccessful attempts, the introduction of the Bread Fruit was happily accomplished, in January 1793, by the arrival at St. Vincent of his Majesty’s ship Providence, Captain WILLIAM BLIGH, and the Assistant brig, Captain NATHANIEL PORTLOCK, from the South Seas; having on board many hundreds of those trees, and a vast number

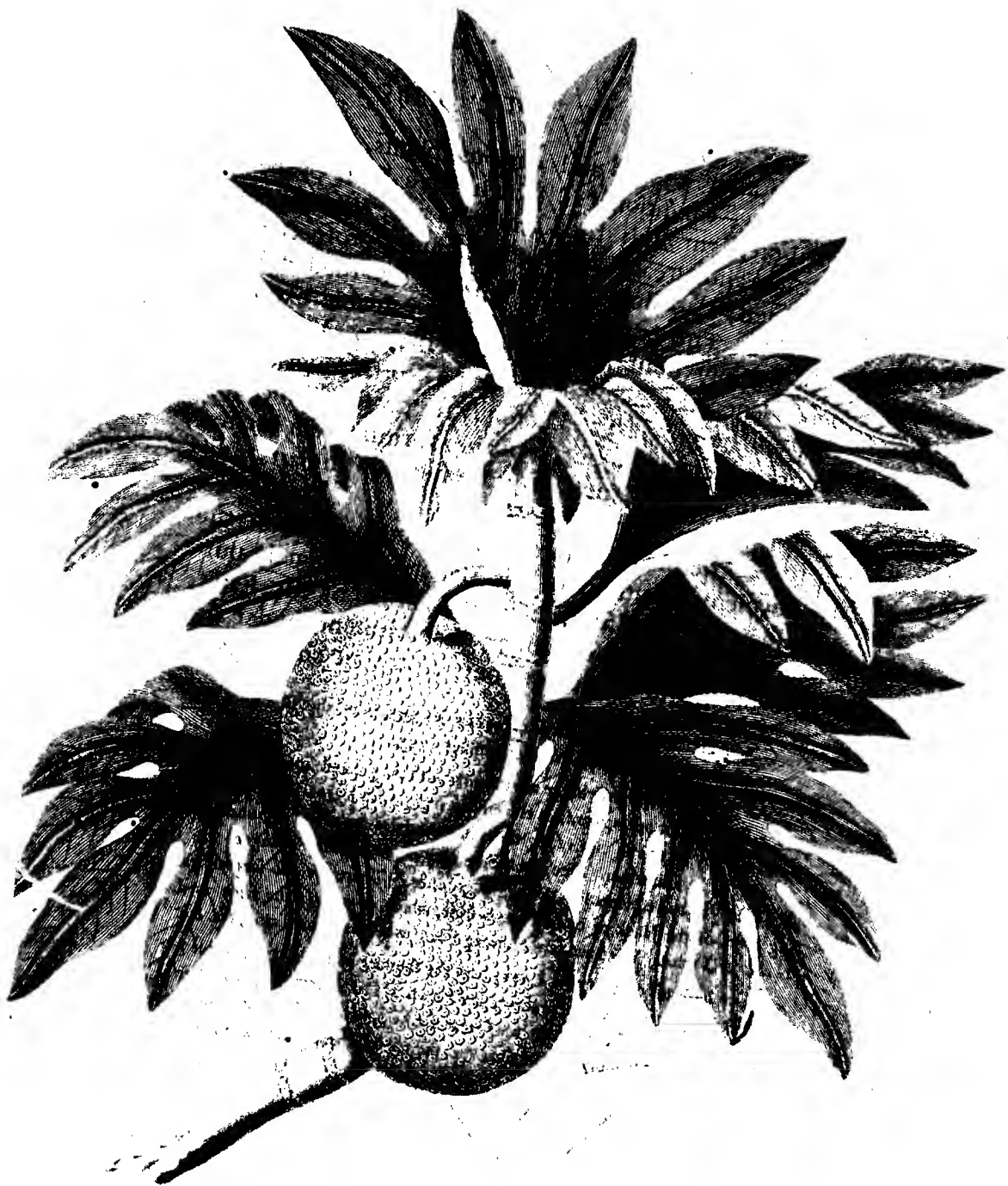
ber of other choice and curious plants, in a very flourishing condition; all which have been properly distributed through the islands of St. Vincent and Jamaica, and already afford the pleasing prospect that his Majesty's goodness will be felt to the most distant period*. The cultivation of these valuable exoticks will, without doubt, in a course of years, lessen the dependence of the Sugar Islands on North America for food and necessaries; and not only supply subsistence for future generations, but probably furnish fresh incitements to industry, new improvements in the arts, and new subjects of commerce!

THE Assembly of Jamaica, co-operating with the benevolent intentions of his Majesty, have lately purchased the magnificent botanical garden of Mr. East†, and placed it on the publick establishment, under the care of skilful gardeners, one of whom circumnavi-

* Extract of a letter to Sir JOSEPH BANKS, from the Botanick Gardener in Jamaica; dated December 1793.

"All the trees under my charge are thriving with the greatest luxuriance. Some of the Bread Fruit are upwards of eleven feet high, with leaves thirty-six inches long; and my success in cultivating them has exceeded my most sanguine expectations. The Cinnamon Tree is become very common, and Mangoes are in such plenty as to be planted in the negro-grounds. There are also several bearing trees of the Jaack or bastard bread-fruit, which is exactly the same as the Nanka of Timor. We have one Nutmeg Plant, which is rather sickly, &c. &c."

† On the death of HINTON EAST, Esq. the founder of the botanick garden, it became the property of his nephew, EDWARD HYDE EAST, Esq. barrister at law, and member of parliament for Great Bedwin, who with great generosity offered it to the Assembly of Jamaica, for the use of the publick, at their own price.



The BREAD FRUIT of OTAHUTE.

Collected 1837-1839 by J. Stockdale Dorrill

gated the globe with Captain BLIGH. I might therefore have considerably enlarged the *Hortus Eastensis* annexed to the First Volume of this Work, but the particulars did not come to my hands in time. However, that the lovers of natural history may not be wholly disappointed, I shall subjoin to this Preface a Catalogue of the more rare and valuable exoticks which now flourish in Jamaica. The present improved state of botany in that island will thus be seen at one view.

IN contemplating this display of industry and science, and offering the tribute of grateful veneration to that SOVEREIGN under whose royal patronage and bounty so many valuable productions have been conveyed in a growing state from one extremity of the world to the other, it is impossible that the inhabitants of the British West Indies can forget how much also is due to Sir JOSEPH BANKS, the President of the Royal Society; by whose warm and unwearied exertions the second voyage to the South Seas was determined on, after the first had proved abortive. Among all the labours of life, if there is one pursuit more replete than any other with benevolence, more likely to add comforts to existing people, and even to augment their numbers by augmenting their means of subsistence, it is certainly that of spreading abroad the bounties of creation, by transplanting from one part of the globe to another such natural productions as are likely to prove beneficial to the interests of humanity. In this generous effort, Sir JOSEPH BANKS has employed a considerable part of his time, attention, and fortune;

and the success which, in many cases, has crowned his endeavours, will be felt in the enjoyments, and rewarded by the blessings, of posterity.

ON the whole, the introduction of the Bread Fruit and other plants from the South Sea Islands—the munificence displayed by His MAJESTY in causing the voyage to be undertaken by which it was finally accomplished—the liberality and judgment of those who advised it—and the care and attention manifested by those who were more immediately entrusted with the conduct of it, are circumstances that claim a distinguished place, and constitute an important era in the History of the British West Indies!

HAVING said thus much in honour of my countrymen, it is but justice to observe, that the French nation (whilst a government existed among them) began to manifest a noble spirit of emulation in the same liberal pursuit. It is to the industry of the French that Jamaica (as will be seen in the History of that Island) owes the Cinnamon, the Mango, and some other delicious Spices and Fruits. Among other branches of the vegetable kingdom, introduced by them into their West Indian possessions, they reckoned three different species of the Sugar Cane, all of which were previously unknown to the planters and inhabitants. I have, in a note to page 204 of the second volume of this edition, observed, that Sir JOSEPH BANKS had satisfied me that such varieties did exist; but I was not then apprized that their cultivation had been successfully attempted in any of our own Islands. By the kindness of Ad-
miral

miral Sir JOHN LAFOREY, Baronet, I am now enabled to gratify my readers with such full and authentick information on this subject, as cannot fail to be highly acceptable to every inhabitant of the West Indies.

These Canes were originally introduced into Martinico; and it was a fortunate circumstance that the distinguished officer whom I have named commanded about that time on the naval station at Antigua. It was equally fortunate that, with a love of natural knowledge, he possessed plantations in the Island last-mentioned; for it is extremely probable, from the disturbances and distractions which have prevailed ever since in every one of the French Colonies, that there would not at this time have been found a trace of these plants in any part of the West Indies, if Sir JOHN LAFOREY had not personally attended to their preservation. With the account which his politeness has enabled me to present to the Publick, I shall conclude this Introductory Discourse.

Remarks on the EAST INDIA and other CANES imported into the French Charaibbean Islands, and lately introduced into the Island of Antigua, by Sir JOHN LAFOREY, Bart.

“ ONE sort was brought from the Island of Bourbon, reported by the French to be the growth of the coast of Malabar.

“ ANOTHER sort from the island of Otaheite.

“ ANOTHER sort from Batavia.

“ THE two former are much alike, both in their appearance and growth, but that of Otaheite is said to

make the finest sugar. They are much larger than those of our Islands, the joints of some measuring eight or nine inches long, and six in circumference.

“ THEIR colour, and that of their leaves also, differs from ours, being of a pale green; their leaves broader, their points falling towards the ground as they grow out, instead of being erect like those of our Islands. Their juice also, when expressed, differs from that of our Canes; being of a very pale, instead of a deep green colour. I caused one of the largest of these Canes to be cut, at what I deemed its full growth, and likewise one of the largest of the Island Canes that could be found upon each of three other plantations. When they were properly trimmed for grinding, I had them weighed: the Malabar Canes weighed upwards of seven pounds; neither of the other three exceeded four pounds and a quarter.

“ THEY are ripe enough to grind at the age of ten months; a few cut for a trial by my manager, above twelve months old, were judged to have lost part of their juices, by standing too long.

“ THEY appear to stand the dry weather better than ours; I observed, that after a drought of a long continuance, when the leaves of our own Canes began to turn brown at their points, these continued their colour throughout.

“ A GENTLEMAN of Montserrat had some plants given to him by Monsieur Pinnel, one of the most considerable planters of Guadaloupe, who told him he had,

in the preceding year (1792) in which an exceeding great drought had prevailed, planted amongst a large field of the Island Canes half an acre of these; that the want of rain, and the *borer*, had damaged the former so much, that he could not make sugar from them, but the latter had produced him three hogheads.

“ IN the spring of this year (1794) a trial was made of the Malabar Canes, on one of my plantations; 160 bunches from holes of five feet square were cut, they produced upwards of 350 lbs. of very good sugar (a sample of which I sent to Mr. Edwards*) the juice came into sugar in the teache, in much less time than is usually required for that of the other Canes, and threw up very little scum. The produce was in the proportion of 3,500 lbs. to an acre; the weather had then been so very dry, and the *borer* so destructive, that I am sure no one part of that plantation would have yielded above half that quantity from the other Canes, in the same space of ground. We had not then the benefit of the new-invented clarifiers, which, though imported, had not been fixed up for want of time.

“ THE French complain ~~that~~ these Canes do not yield a sufficient quantity of field trash, to boil the juice into sugar; to this, and to their never throwing

* The sugar is extraordinarily good; the colour bright, and the grain, though not so large as in the best St. Kitt's sugar, strong. I am persuaded that no raw sugar will answer better for the refinery.

up an arrow, I think their superior size may in good measure be attributed. This inconvenience may be obviated, by the substitution of coals; and the increased quantity of the cane-trash, which their magnitude will furnish (and which we reckon the richest manure we have, when properly prepared) will well indemnify the expence of firing.

“ THE Batavia Canes are a deep purple on the outside; they grow short-jointed, and small in circumference, but bunch exceedingly, and vegetate so quick, that they spring up from the plant in one-third the time those of our Island do; the joints, soon after they form, all burst longitudinally. They have the appearance of being very hardy, and bear dry weather well; a few bunches were cut and made into sugar at the same time the experiment was made with the white Canes. The report made to me of them was, that they yielded a great deal of juice, which seemed richer than that of the others, but the sugar was strongly tinged with the colour of the rind; and it was observed, that upon the expression of them at the mill, the juice was of a bright purple; but by the time it had reached through the spout to the clarifier (a very short distance) it became of a dingy iron colour. I am told the Batavia sugar imported into Amsterdam is very fair; so that if those Canes should otherwise answer well, means may doubtless be obtained to discharge the purple tinge from their juice.”

* * I owe an acknowledgment to the family of the late Alderman BECKFORD, by correcting in this place a mistake with regard to his ancestry, which had crept into the first edition, and is unfortunately transferred to this. In Vol. I. p. 170, it is asserted, that Mr. BECKFORD was descended in the female line from a daughter of THOMAS SCOTT, one of the Judges of CHARLES I. This notion is very prevalent in Jamaica; but his son, Mr. RICHARD BECKFORD, Member of Parliament for Leominster, has assured me that it is erroneous; and he has done me the honour to point out the origin of the mistake, by furnishing me with the following particulars; which, with his permission, I lay before the Publick, in his own words:—

“ THE late Alderman BECKFORD was, in no degree, related in blood to SCOTT the regicide. It is true, that a daughter of SCOTT married with one of the BECKFORD family; but she was a widow at the time she so married, and had no children by Mr. BECKFORD, and consequently there could be no descent.

“ THE ancestors of the late Alderman BECKFORD were Cavaliers, or Royalists, in the time of king CHARLES the First; and upon the usurpation of OLIVER CROMWELL, were obliged to fly their country, and reside abroad. After Jamaica was taken by PENN and VENABLES, during the Protectorate,

I encouragement

encouragement was held out to all settlers to go to the new colony—and thereupon the BECKFORDS went over, and were among the first, as they soon became the greatest planters in the island.

“ THE Family derive their name from the village and parish of Beckford, in Gloucestershire (about eight or ten miles from Tewkesbury) where the heir of Mr. Alderman BECKFORD now possesses a small estate; the most antient patrimony of the Family.

RICH. BECKFORD.”

25th April, 1794.



C A T A L O G U E

Of the more valuable and rare Plants growing in the Publick Botanic Garden, in the Mountains of Liguanea, in the Island of Jamaica.

- A** MOMIUM GRANUM PARADISI—Guinea Pepper, or Grains of Paradise. *Native of Guinea.*
ANTHOLYZA ÆTHIOPICA—Ethiopian Antholyza. *Native of the Cape of Good Hope.*
ARUNDO BAMBOS—Bamboo Cane. *Native of the East Indies.*
ALLAMANDA CATHARTICA—Galarips. *Native of South America.*
Akce Tree. Native of the Coast of Africa.
AVERRHOA BILIMBI—Bimbling Fruit. *Native of Otaheite.*
ANNONA CHERIMOIA—Cherimoya. *Native of South-America.*
ANNONA MYRISTICA—Nutmeg Annona.
ADANSONIA DIGITATA—Monkies Bread. *Native of Senegal.*
ÆSCHYNOMENE GRANDIFLORA—Pea Tree. *Native of the East-Indies.*
ÆSCHYNOMENE AQUATICA—Swamp Pea Tree. — *Native of the East-Indies.*
AMBROMA AUGUSTA—Maple-leaved Ambroma.—*Native of New South Wales.*
ASTER FRUTICOSUS—Shrubby Aster. *Native of the Cape of Good Hope.*
ARTOCARPUS INCISA—Bread-Fruit Tree. *Native of Otaheite.*
ARTOCARPUS INTEGRIFOLIA—Indian Jaack Tree.—*Native of the East-Indies.*
AUCUBA JAPONICA—Japan Aucuba. *Native of Japan.*
ALEURITES TRILOBATA—Candle Tree. *Native of Otaheite.*
ARECHA CATECHU—Beetle Nut. *Native of Timor.*
ATRAGENE INDICA—Indian Atragene. *Native of the East-Indies.*
ARCTOTIS CALENDULACEA—Marygold Arctotis.—*Native of the Cape of Good Hope.*
AMYGDALUS COMMUNIS
var. Dwarf Peach. Native of St. Helena.
var. St. Helena Almond. Native of St. Helena.
BUDLEJA GLOBOSA—Round-headed Budleja. *Native of Chili.*
Bichy Tree. Native of Guinea.
BAUHINIA VARIEGATA—Variegated Bauhinia. — *Native of the East-Indies.*
CURCUMA LONGA—Turmeric Root. *Native of the East-Indies.*
CISSUS QUADRANGULARIS—Angular-stalked Cissus. *Native of India.*
CORDIA — Etow, a dye-wood. *Native of Otaheite.*
CASSINE CAPENSIS—Hottentot Cherry. *Native of the Cape of Good Hope.*
CASSIA SENA—Sena Tree. *Native of Egypt.*
CACTUS COCHINILLIFER—Cochineal Cactus. *Native of South-America.*
CAPPARIS SPINOSA—Caper Shrub. *Native of Italy.*
CAMELLIA JAPONICA—Japan Rose. *Native of Japan.*
CROTALARIA LADURNIFOLIA—Shrubby Crotalaria. *Native of Asia.*
CORONILLA ARABICA—Arabian Coronilla. *Native of Arabia.*
VOL. I. **E** **CALL**

CALLA ÆTHIOPICA—Ethiopian Calla.	<i>Native of the Cape of Good Hope.</i>
CASUARINA EQUISETIFOLIA—Timian Pine.	<i>Native of the South-Sea Islands.</i>
CICCA DISTICHA—Cheimalla Fruit.	<i>Native of Timor.</i>
CUPRESSUS JUNITERGIDLE—African Cypress Tree.	<i>Native of the Cape of Good Hope.</i>
CRETICUS SEBIFERUS—Fallow Tree.	<i>Native of China.</i>
CERATONIA SILICUA—St. John's Bread.	<i>Native of Sicily.</i>
CYCAS CIRGINALIS—Sago Palm.	<i>Native of the East-Indies.</i>
DIOBIA CILIATA—Ciliated Diobina.	<i>Native of the Cape of Good Hope.</i>
DRACENA DRACO—Dragon Tree.	<i>Native of the East-Indies.</i>
DRACENA FERREA—Purple Dracena.	<i>Native of China.</i>
DRACENA	<i>Native of Otaheite.</i>
DOLICHOS SINENSIS—Chinese Dolichos.	<i>Native of China.</i>
EPIDENDRUM VANILLA—Vanilla.	<i>Native of South-America.</i>
FUCHSIA TRIPHYLLA—Scarlet Fuchsia.	<i>Native of Cutch.</i>
FRAXINUS ORNUS—Manna Ash.	<i>Native of Calabria.</i>
FICUS TINCTORIA—Matico, a dye-wood.	<i>Native of Otaheite.</i>
GARDENIA FLORIDA—Cape Jasmine.	<i>Native of China.</i>
GARDENIA THUNBERGIA—Starry Gardenia.	<i>Native of the Cape of Good Hope.</i>
GLORIOSA SUPERBA—Superb Lily.	<i>Native of the East-Indies.</i>
GUILANDINA MORINGA—Horse-Radish Tree.	<i>Native of the East-Indies.</i>
GARCINIA CORNEA—Small Mangosteen.	<i>Native of the East-Indies.</i>
GALEGA PURPUREA—Purple Galega.	<i>Native of the East-Indies.</i>
HIBISCUS POPULNEUS—Poplar-leaved Hibiscus.	<i>Native of the East-Indies.</i>
HIBISCUS MUTABILIS—Changeable Rose.	<i>Native of the East-Indies.</i>
HIBISCUS FICULNEUS—Fig-leaved Hibiscus.	<i>Native of Ceylon.</i>
HIBISCUS TRIONUM—Bladder Hibiscus.	<i>Native of the Cape of Good Hope.</i>
JUSTICIA ADHATODA—Malabar Nut.	<i>Native of Ceylon.</i>
JUSTICIA PICTA—Variegated Justicia.	<i>Native of Timor.</i>
ILEX CASSINE—Paraguay Tea.	<i>Native of Carolina.</i>
INOCARPUS EDULIS—Otaheite Chestnut.	<i>Native of Otaheite.</i>
ILICIJUM FLORIDANUM—Aniseed Tree.	<i>Native of Florida.</i>
KÆMPFERIA GALANGA—Galangale Root.	<i>Native of the East-Indies.</i>
LAWSONIA INERMIS—Smooth Lawsonia.	<i>Native of Africa.</i>
LAWSONIA SPINOSA—Prickly Lawsonia.	<i>Native of the East-Indies.</i>
LAURUS CINNAMOMUM—Cinnamon Tree.	<i>Native of Ceylon.</i>
LAURUS CAMPHORA—Camphire Tree.	<i>Native of Japan.</i>
LAURUS NOBILIS—Sweet Bay Tree.	<i>Native of Italy.</i>
LAURUS INDICA—Royal Bay Tree.	<i>Native of Madeira.</i>
LAURUS FOETENS—Madeira Laurel.	<i>Native of Madeira.</i>
LAURUS BENZOIN—Benjamin Tree.	<i>Native of Virginia.</i>
LAURUS BOBONIA—Carolina Bay Tree.	<i>Native of Carolina.</i>
LAURUS SASSAPHRAS—Sassaphras Tree.	<i>Native of North-America.</i>
LIRIODENDRON TULIPIFERA—Tulip Tree.	<i>Native of North-America.</i>
LAVATERA THURINCIACA—Large-flowered Lavatera.	<i>Native of Hungary.</i>
MELIA AZEDERACH—bread-Tree.	<i>Native of the East-Indies.</i>
MAGNOLIA GRANDIFLORA—Laurel-leaved Magnolia.	<i>Native of Carolina.</i>
MELIANTHUS MAJOR—Honey-Flower.	<i>Native of the Cape of Good Hope.</i>
	MALVA

MALVA CAPENSIS—Cape Mallow.	<i>Native of the Cape of Good Hope.</i>
MONSONIA SPECIOSA—Fine leav'd Monsonia.	<i>Native of the Cape of Good Hope.</i>
MIMOSA NILOTICA—Gum Arabic Tree.	<i>Native of Egypt.</i>
MIMOSA SENEGAL—Gum Senegal Tree.	<i>Native of Arabia.</i>
MIMOSA LEECK—Oriental Ebony.	<i>Native of the East-Indies.</i>
MORUS PAPYRIFERA—Paper Mulberry Tree.	<i>Native of Japan.</i>
MANGIFERA INDICA—Mango Tree.	<i>Native of the East-Indies.</i>
OLEA FRAGRANS—Sweet-scented Olive.	<i>Native of China.</i>
OLDENLANDIA UMBELLATA—Che.	<i>Native of India.</i>
PIPER NIGRUM—Black Pepper.	<i>Native of the East-Indies.</i>
PIPER LONGUM—Long Pepper.	<i>Native of the East-Indies.</i>
PHIADELPHUS AROMATICUS—Sweet-scented Syringa.	<i>Native of New Zealand.</i>
PANDANUS ODORATISSIMUS—Screw Pine.	<i>Native of Caylon.</i>
PISTACIA OFFICINARUM—Pistachia Tree.	<i>Native of Greece.</i>
QUASSIA AMARA—Bitter Quassia.	<i>Native of Guiana.</i>
ROBINIA HISPIDA—Large-flower'd Acacia.	<i>Native of the East-Indies.</i>
ROBINIA MIFIS—Smooth Acacia.	<i>Native of the East-Indies.</i>
SAPINDUS EDULIS—Litchi Plumb.	<i>Native of China.</i>
STAPELIA VARIEGATA—Variegated Stapelia.	<i>Native of the Cape of Good Hope.</i>
SPONDIAS—South-Sea Plumb.	<i>Native of Asia.</i>
SMILAX SARSAPARILLA—Sarsaparilla.	<i>Native of America.</i>
SCHIMUS MOLLE—Peruvian Madick Tree.	<i>Native of Peru.</i>
TACCA PINNATIFIDA—Peeth.	<i>Native of Otahiti.</i>
TRASCANTIA DISCOLOR—Purple Spider-Wert.	<i>Native of Honduras.</i>
TECTONA GRANDIS—Tick-Wood.	<i>Native of Timor.</i>
THEA VIRIDIS—Green Tea Tree.	<i>Native of China.</i>
THEA BOHEA—Bohea Tea Tree.	<i>Native of China.</i>
WACHENDORFIA THYRSIFLOEA—Simple stalked Wachendorfia.	<i>Native of the Cape of Good Hope.</i>
XIMENIA INERMIS—Smooth Zimenia.	<i>Native of the East-Indies.</i>

It may not be unprofitable in this place to add a Catalogue of Medicinal and other Plants, growing in South and North America, the East-Indies, &c. the introduction of which would be a great acquisition to the West-Indies, viz.

SOUTH-AMERICAN PLANTS.

QUASSIA SIMAROUBA—Simarouba Bark.	<i>Grows in many parts of South-America, particularly in Guiana and Cayenne.</i>
CONVOLVULUS JALAPA—Jalap Root.	<i>Native of the South-American Continent.</i>
COPAIFERA OFFICINALIS—Balsam Copaiva Tree.	<i>Native of Brazil and the neighbouring islands.</i>
MYROXYLON PERUIFERUM—Tree producing Balsam Peru.	<i>Found growing with the former.</i>
TELUIFERA BALSAMUM—Tree producing Balsam Tolu.	<i>Grows with the former.</i>
ANCHONA OFFICINALIS—Peruvian or Jesuit's Bark.	<i>Native of Peru, particularly the hilly parts about Quito.</i>
PSYCHOTRIA EMETICA—Ipecacuana Root.	<i>Native of South America.</i>

NORTH-AMERICAN PLANTS.

- ARISTOLOCHIA SERPENTARIA—Snake Root. *Grows in Virginia.*
 POLYGALA SENEGA—Rattle-Snake Root.—*Native of Virginia and other parts of North-America.*
 PANAX^Q QUINQUEFOLIUM—Ginseng Root.—*Native of Canada, Pennsylvania, and Virginia.*
 SPIGELIA MARILANDICA—Indian Pink Root.—*Native of many parts of North-America.*
 PINUS BALSAMEA—Tree producing the Canada Balsam.—*Native of Virginia and Canada.*

EAST-INDIAN AND EUROPEAN PLANTS.

- STYRAX BENZOIN—Tree producing Gum Benjamin. *Native of Sumatra.*
 ANCHUSA TINCTORIA—Alkanet Root. *Native of Montpellier.*
 MIMOSA CATECHU—Tree producing the Japan Earth.—*Grows in the mountainous parts of Indojlan.*
 STYRAX OFFICINALE—Gum Storax Tree. *Native of Italy and the Levant.*
 CISTUS CRETICUS—Gum Ladanum Tree.—*Native of Candia and some of the Islands of the Archipelago.*
 JUNIPERUS SABINA—Savin Leaves.—*Native of the South of Europe and the Levant.*
 ASTRAGALUS TRAGACANTHA—Tree producing Gum Dragon.—*Native of Italy, Sicily, and Crete.*
 PASTINACA OPOPONAX—Plant producing Gum Opoponax.—*Native of the South of Europe.*
 MYRISTICA OFFICINALIS—Nutmeg Tree. *Grows in the Molucca Islands.*
 CARYOPHILLUS AROMATICUS.—Clove Tree.—*Native of the Molucca Islands, and lately discovered in New Guinea.*
 CONVOLVULUS SCAMMONIA.—Plant producing Scammony.—*Native of Antioch, and about Tripoly, in Syria.*
 FERULA ASAFOETIDA.—Asafetida Plant. *Native of Persia.*
 KÆMPFERIA ROTUNDA—Zedoary Root. *Native of the East-Indies.*
 AMOMUM REPENS—Cardamom Seed. *Grows on the Coast of Malabar.*
 GENTIANA LUTEA—Gentian Root. *Native of the Alps.*
 PAPAVER SOMNIFERUM—Opium Poppy. *Native of the southern Parts of Europe.*
 STALAGMITES GAMBIOIDES—Tree producing Gamboge.—*Native of the East Indies.*
 CALAMUS ROTANG—Plant producing Dragon's Blood.—*Native of the Molucca Islands and Java.*
 GARCINIA MANGOSTANA.—True Mangosteen.—*Native of the Molucca Islands.*
 CRATEVA MARMELOS.—Bengal Quince. *Native of India.*
 DIOSPYROS EBENUS.—Oriental Ebony. *Native of Ceylon.*
Native of the East-Indies.

C O N T E N T S

OF THE FIRST AND SECOND VOLUMES.

VOLUME THE FIRST.

B O O K I.

A GENERAL VIEW OF THEIR ANCIENT STATE AND
INHABITANTS.

C H A P. I.

GEOGRAPHICAL arrangement.—Climate.—Sea-breeze,
and Land-wind.—Beauty and singularity of the vegetable and
animal creation.—Magnificence and sublimity of the mountains:
reflections concerning the origin of the West Indian Islands, &c.

Page 1

C H A P. II.

Of the Charaibes, or ancient Inhabitants of the Windward Islands.
—Origin.—Difficulties attending an accurate investigation of
their character.—Such particulars related as are least disputed
concerning their manners and dispositions, persons and domestick
habits, education of their children, arts, manufactures, and go-
vernment, religious rites, funeral ceremonies, &c.—Some reflec-
tions drawn from the whole. - - - 26

C H A P. III.

Of the Natives of Hispaniola, Cuba, Jamaica, and Porto-Rico.—
Their Origin.—Numbers.—Persons.—Genius and Disposi-
tions.—

tions.—Government and Religion.—Miscellaneous Observations respecting their Arts, Manufactures and Agriculture, Cruelty of the Spaniards, &c. - - - - 57

CHAP. IV.

Land animals used as food.—Fishes and wild fowl.—Indian method of fishing and fowling.—Esculent vegetables, &c.—Conclusion. - - - - 91

APPENDIX; containing some additional observations concerning the origin of the Charaibes. - - - 106

BOOK II.

JAMAICA.

CHAP. I.

Discovery of Jamaica by Columbus.—His return in 1503.—Spirited proceedings of his son Diego, after Columbus's Death.—Takes possession of Jamaica in 1509.—Humane conduct of Juan de Esquivel, the first Governor.—Establishment and desertion of the town of Sevilla Nueva. Destruction of the Indians.—St. Jago de la Vega founded.—Gives the title of Marquis to Diego's son Lewis, to whom the Island is granted in perpetual sovereignty.—Descends to his sister Isabella, who conveys her rights by marriage to the House of Braganza.—Reverts to the crown of Spain, in 1640.—Sir Anthony Shirley invades the Island in 1596, and Col. Jackson in 1638. 123

CHAP. II.

Cromwell vindicated for attacking the Spaniards in 1655.—Their cruelties in the West Indies, in contravention of the treaty of 1630.—Proposals offered by Modyford and Gage.—Forcible arguments of the latter.—Secretary Thurloe's account of a conference with the Spanish Ambassador.—Cromwell's demand of satisfaction rejected.—State of Jamaica on its capture. 142

C H A P. III.

Proceedings of the English in Jamaica after its capture.—Col. D'Oyley declared president.—Discontents and mortality among the army.—Vigorous exertions of the Protector.—Col. Brayne appointed commander in chief.—His death.—D'Oyley re-assumes the government.—Defeats the Spanish forces, which had invaded the island from Cuba.—His wise and steady administration.—Bucaniers.—Conciliating conduct of Charles II. on his restoration.—First establishment of a regular government in Jamaica.—Lord Windfor's appointment.—Royal proclamation.—American treaty in 1670.—Change of measures on the part of the crown.—New constitution devised for Jamaica.—Earl of Carlisle appointed chief governor for the purpose of enforcing the new system.—Successful opposition of the assembly.—Subsequent disputes respecting the confirmation of their laws.—Terminated by the revenue act of 1728. - - - - 160.

C H A P. IV.

Situation.—Climate.—Face of the Country.—Mountains, and advantages derived from them.—Soil.—Lands in Culture.—Lands uncultivated, and observations thereon.—Woods and Timbers.—Rivers and Medicinal Springs.—Ores.—Vegetable Classes.—Grain.—Grasses.—Kitchen-garden produce, and Fruits for the Table, &c. &c. - - - - 185

C H A P. V.

Topographical description.—Towns, villages, and parishes.—Churches, church-livings, and vestries.—Governor or Commander in chief.—Courts of judicature.—Publick offices.—Legislature and laws.—Revenues.—Taxes.—Coins, and rate of exchange.—Militia.—Number of inhabitants of all conditions and complexions.—Trade, shipping, exports and imports.—Report of the Lords of Trade in 1734.—Present state of the trade with Spanish.

CONTENTS TO

Spanish America.—Origin and policy of the act for establishing free ports.—Display of the progress of the island in cultivation, by comparative statements of its inhabitants and products at different periods. - - - - - 204

A P P E N D I X—N^o I. *A Return of the Number of Sugar Plantations in the Island of Jamaica, and the Negro Slaves thereon, on the 28th of March, 1789, distinguishing the several Parishes.* - - - - - 243

—————N^o II. *An Historical Account of the Constitution of Jamaica; drawn up in 1764, for the Information of his Majesty's Ministers, by his Excellency William Henry Litchelton, Governor and Commander in Chief of that Island.* 244

Documents annexed to the historical Account. - - - 255

B O O K III.

ENGLISH CHARAIBEAN ISLANDS.

C H A P I.

Barbadoes.—First Arrival of the English at this Island.—Origin, progress, and termination of the Proprietary Government.—Revenue granted to the Crown of $4\frac{1}{2}$ per centum on all Produce exported—how obtained.—Origin of the Act of Navigation.—Situation and Extent of the Island.—Soil and Produce.—Population.—Decline and Causes thereof.—Exports and Imports.

321

C H A P. II.

Grenada and its Dependencies.—First discovery, name and inhabitants.—French invasion and establishment in 1650.—War with, and extermination of the natives.—The island and its dependencies conveyed to the Count de Cerillac.—Misconduct and punishment of the deputy governor.—The colony

<i>colony reverts to the crown of France.—State of the island in 1700.—And again in 1762, when captured by the English.—Stipulations in favour of the French inhabitants.—First measures of the British government.—Claim of the crown to levy a duty of 4½ per cent. on produce exported.—Arguments for and objections against the measure.—Decision of the court of King's Bench on this important question.—Strictures on some positions advanced by the lord-chief-justice on this occasion.—Transactions within the colony.—Royal instructions in favour of the Roman Catholick capitulants.—Internal dissentions.—Defenceless state.—French invasion in 1779.—Brave defence of the garrison.—Unconditional surrender.—Hardships exercised towards the English planters and their creditors.—Redress given by the court of France.—Grenada, &c. restored to Great Britain by the peace of 1783.—Present state of the colony in respect to cultivation, productions and exports; government and population.</i>	- - - - -	351
<i>Postscript to the History of Grenada.</i>	- - -	385

C H A P. III.

<i>Saint Vincent and its Dependencies, and Dominica.</i>	-	389
----------------------------------------------------------	---	-----

C H A P. IV.

<i>Leeward Cbaribbean Island Government, comprehending Saint Christopher's, Nevis, Antigua, Montserrat Montserrat, and the Virgin Islands.—Civil History and Geographical Description of each. Table of Exports from each Island for 1787; and an Account of the Money arising from the Duty of Four and a Half per Cent.—Observations concerning the Decline of these Islands, which conclude their History.</i>	- - -	421
<i>A P P E N D I X. Hortus Eastensis.</i>	- - -	473

VOLUME THE SECOND.

BOOK IV.

PRESENT INHABITANTS.

CHAP. I.

SUMMARY *account of the Inhabitants of the several Islands.*
—Classes.—Emigrants from Great Britain and Ireland.—Pre-
dominant character of the European residents.—Creoles or Na-
tives.—Effect of climate.—Character of the Creole Women and
Children.—Of the people of Colour, and their different tribes or
casts.—Limitations and restrictions on the Mulattoes and native
Blacks of free condition.—Their character at length, concluding
with an Ode to the Sable Venus. - - Page 1

CHAP. II.

Of Negroes in a state of Slavery.—Preliminary Observations.—
Origin of the Slave Trade.—Portuguese Settlements on the
African Coast.—Negroes introduced into Hispaniola in 1502,
and the Slave Trade revived at the instance of Barth. de las
Casas, in 1517.—Hawkins's Voyages to the Coast, in 1562 and
1563.—African Company established by James I.—Second
charter in 1631 by Charles I.—Third charter in 1662.—
Fourth charter in 1672.—Effect of the Petition and Declara-
tion of Right in 1688.—Acts of the 9th and 10th of William
and Mary, c. 26.—New regulations in 1750.—Description of
the

the African Coast.—Ports and Factories.—Exports from Great Britain.—Number of Negroes transported annually to the British Colonies.—State of the Trade from 1771 to 1787.—Number of Negroes at this time exported annually by the different Nations of Europe. - - - - 34

C H A P. III.

Mandingoes, or Natives of the Windward Coast.—Mahometans.—Their wars, manners, and persons.—Koromantyn Negroes, or Natives of the Gold Coast.—Their ferociousness of disposition displayed, by an account of the Negro rebellion in Jamaica in 1760.—Their national manners, wars, and superstitions.—Natives of Whidah or Fida.—Their good qualities.—Nagoes.—Negroes from Benin.—Persons and tempers.—Canibals.—Natives of Kongo and Angola.—Survey of the character and dispositions of Negroes in a state of slavery. 60

C H A P. IV.

Means of obtaining Slaves in Africa.—Observations thereon.—Objections to a direct and immediate abolition of the trade by the British Nation only.—The probable consequences of such a measure, both in Africa and the West Indies, considered.—Disproportions of sexes in the number of Slaves annually exported from Africa.—Causes thereof.—Mode of transporting Negroes to the West Indies, and regulations recently established by act of parliament.—Effect of those regulations. 102

C H A P. V.

Arrivals and sale in the West Indies.—Negroes newly purchased, how disposed of and employed.—Detail of the management of Negroes on a sugar plantation.—Mode of maintaining them.—
f 2 Houses,

CONTENTS TO

Houses, clothing, and medical care.—Abuses.—Late regulations for their protection and security.—Causes of their annual decrease.—Polygamy, &c.—Slavery in its mildest form unfriendly to population.—General observations.—Proposals for the further meliorating the condition of the Slaves, with which the subject concludes. - - - - - 127

APPENDIX, N° I. Consolidated Slave Act of Jamaica 157

—————, N° II. Account of the number of ships, with their tonnage, which cleared from Great Britain to Africa, in each year, from 1700, together with the total exports to Africa in each year, during the same periods; distinguishing the value of the British, India, and Foreign goods; to which are added the quantity and value of each article from the year 1782. 192

BOOK V.

A G R I C U L T U R E.

C H A P. I.

Sugar. Canc.—Known to the ancients.—Conjectures concerning its introduction into Europe.—Conveyed from Sicily to the Azores, &c. in the 15th century, and from thence to the West Indies.—Evidence to prove that Columbus himself carried it from the Canary Islands to Hispaniola.—Summary of P. Labat's reasoning to demonstrate that it was found growing spontaneously in the West Indies.—Both accounts reconciled.—Botanical name and description.—Soils best adapted for its cultivation, and their varieties, described.—Use and advantage of the plough.—Usual method of holing and planting.—Season proper for planting.—Blast.—Manures.—Improvements suggested. - - - 197

C H A P. II.

Crop-time the season of health and festivity.—Mills for grinding the canes.—Of the cane-juice, and its component parts.—Process for obtaining raw or muscovado sugar.—Melasses, and its disposal.—Process of making clayed sugar.—Of rum.—Still-houses and stills.—Cisterns, and their ingredients.—Windward Island process.—Jamaica method of double distillation.—Due quantity of rum from a given quantity of sweets, ascertained and stated. - - - - - 221

C H A P. III.

Capital necessary in the settlement or purchase of a sugar plantation of a given extent.—The lands, buildings, and stock separately considered.—Particulars and cost.—Gross returns from the property.—Annual Disbursements.—Net profits.—Various contingent charges not taken into the account.—Difference not commonly attended to, in the mode of estimating the profits of an English estate, and one in the West Indies.—Insurance of West India estates in time of war, and other occasional deductions.—The question, why the cultivation of the Sugar Islands has increased, under so many discouragements, considered and discussed.

244

C H A P. IV.

Of the minor Staple Commodities; viz. COTTON, its growth and various species.—Mode of cultivation, and risques attending it.—Import of this article into Great Britain, and profits accruing from the manufactures produced by it.—INDIGO, its cultivation and manufacture.—Opulence of the first Indigo planters in Jamaica, and reflections concerning the decline of this branch of cultivation in that island.—
COFFEE,

CONTENTS TO

COFFEE, *whether that of the West Indies equal to the Mocha?—Situation and soil.—Exorbitant duty to which it was subject in Great Britain.—Approved method of cultivating the plant and curing the berry.—Estimate of the annual expences and returns of a Coffee plantation.—*CACAO, GINGER, ARNOTTO, ALOES and PIMENTO; *brief account of each.* - - - - - 263

BOOK VI.

GOVERNMENT AND COMMERCE.

CHAP. I.

Colonial Establishments.—Of the Captain General or Chief Governor; his Powers and Privileges.—Some Reflections on the usual Choice of Persons for this high Office.—Lieutenant General, Lieutenant Governor, and President.—Of the Council, their Office and Functions.—Origin of their Claim to a Share in the Legislature.—Its Necessity, Propriety, and Legality considered.—Some Corrections in the Constitution of this Body proposed. - - - - - 317

CHAP. II.

Houses of Assembly.—Prerogative denied to be in the Crown of establishing in the Colonies Constitutions less free than that of Great Britain.—Most of the British West Indian Islands settled by Emigrants from the Mother Country.—Royal Proclamations and Charters, Confirmations only of ancient Rights.—Barbadoes, and some other Islands, originally made Counties Palatine.—Their local Legislatures how constituted, and the Extent of their Jurisdiction pointed out.—Their Allegiance to, and Dependence

pendance on, the Crown of Great Britain how secured.—Constitutional Extent of Parliamentary Authority over them. 340

C H A P. III.

Principles on which the Nations of Europe settled Colonies in America.—Commercial Regulations of Great Britain.—Remarks on the Acts of Navigation.—Admission of foreign-built Vessels eventually beneficial.—Exports from Great Britain to the Sugar Islands, and their Value.—The same from Ireland.—Wines from Madeira and the Azores.—Other Profits.—Summary of the whole.—Imports from the West Indies to Great Britain and Ireland, and their Value according to the London Prices.—Amount of British Capital vested in the Sugar Islands.—Shipping and Seamen.—General Observations. - - - 367

C H A P. IV.

Trade between the British West Indies and North America previous to the late Civil War.—Official Account of American Supplies, and their Value.—Ships and Seamen.—Returns.—Advantages resulting from this Trade to Great Britain.—Measures adopted by Government on the Re-establishment of Peace.—Proclamation of the 2d. July, 1783.—Petitions from the West Indies.—Opposition of the Settlers in Nova Scotia, &c. and the Ship-builders at Home.—Reference to the Committee of Privy Council.—Evidence taken by the Committee.—Their final Opinion thereon.—Proceedings of Government.—Destruction of Negroes in the West Indies in consequence.—Act of the 28 Geo. III. Ch. 6.—Present State and Value of the Trade between the British West Indies and the remaining British Provinces in America.—The same with the United States of America.—Inference from the whole. - 395

C H A P.

CONTENTS TO VOL. II.

CHAP. V.

Charges brought against the Planters introductory of opinions and doctrines the design of which is to prove, that the Settlement of the British Plantations was improvident and unwise.—Testimony of the Inspector-General on this subject, and animadversions thereon.—Erroneous idea concerning a distinct Interest between Great Britain and her Sugar Islands.—The National Income and the Profits of Individuals arising from those Islands considered separately.—Opinions of Postlethwaite and Child.—Whether the Duties on West Indian Commodities imported fall on the Consumer, and in what Cases?—Drawbacks and Bounties: Explanation of those terms, and their origin and propriety traced and demonstrated.—Of the Monopoly-compact; its nature and origin.—Restrictions on the Colonists enumerated; and the Benefits resulting therefrom to the Mother Country pointed out and illustrated.—Advantages which would accrue to the Planter, the Revenue, and the Public, from permitting the Inhabitants of the West Indies to refine their raw Sugar for the British Consumption.—Unjust clamours raised in Great Britain on any temporary advance of the West Indian Staples.—Project of establishing Sugar Plantations in the East Indies under the protection of Government considered.—Remonstrance which might be offered against this and other measures.—Conclusion.

433

APPENDIX.—Report of a Committee of the Assembly of Jamaica. - - - - - 489

Tables of West Indian Exports and Imports to and from Great Britain and Ireland. - - - - - 505

A LIST of the MAPS and PLATES TO BOTH VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

- I. Frontispiece, an Indian Cacique addressing COLUMBUS; to face the Title Page.
 - II. A Print of the Bread Fruit of Oubaha; to face p. 36 of the new Preface.
 - III. A General Map of the West Indies; in Two Sheets; to face Chap. I. Book I.
 - IV. A Map of the Island of Jamaica; to face Chap. I. of Book II.
 - V. A Map of the Island of Barbadoes; to face Chap. I. of Book III.
 - VI. A Map of the Island of Grenada; to face p. 351.
 - VII. A Family of the Red Caribbes, in the Island of St. Vincent; to face p. 391.
 - VIII. A Map of the Island of St. Vincent; to face p. 392.
 - IX. A Map of the Island of Dominica; to face p. 407.
 - X. A Map of the Islands of St. Christopher and Nevis; to face p. 421.
 - XI. A Map of the Island of Antigua; to face p. 437.
 - XII. A Map of the Virgin Islands; to face p. 457.
-

VOL. II.

- I. Frontispiece, COLUMBUS and his Two Sons; to face the Title Page. See the Account and Illustration of it annexed.
- II. The Voyage of the Sable Venus from Angola to the West Indies; to face p. 27.
- III. A Negro Festival; to be placed at the End of Book IV.
- IV. Plan and Elevation of an improved Sugar Mill, designed by EDWARD WOOLLERY, Esq. of Jamaica; to face p. 223.

Illustration of the Frontispiece to VOL. I.

An Indian Cacique, of the Island of Cuba, addressing COLUMBUS concerning a future State of Reward and Punishment.

THIS remarkable circumstance, which is related in p. 73. of the first edition of this work, and p. 75 of the second edition, happened on the 7th of July, 1494. It is attested by Pet. Martyr and Herrera; but as the doctrine of a future state *of retribution* seems to argue a degree of civilization, which the natives of the West Indies had not attained, doubts have been suggested concerning the fact: I have therefore thought it necessary to quote the authorities on which it is founded *at large*, premising that the person who served on this occasion as interpreter was a native of *Guanabani*. Having accompanied COLUMBUS to Spain, on his return from his first voyage, and remained with him from October 1492, he had acquired the Spanish language, which he spoke with great facility. Martyr's account is in these words:

“ Dum in littore rem divinam præfectus audiret, eccè primum quendam octogenarium, virum gravem, nec eo minus nudum, multis illum comitantibus. Hic, donec sacra peragerentur admiratus, ore oculisque intentus adfuit: dehinc Præfecto canistrum, quem manu gerebat plenum patriæ fructibus, dono dedit: sedensque apud eum per interpretem Didacum colonum, qui id idioma cum proprius accessisset intelligebat, orationem habuit hujuscemodi:

“ Terras omnes istas hactenus tibi ignotas, manu potenti te percurrisse, renunciatum nobis fuit, populisque incolis metum non mediocrem, intulisse. Quare te hortor moneoque, ut itinera duo, cum e corpore profiliunt animas habere scias: tenebrosum unum ac tetrum, his paratum, qui generi humano molesti infensique sunt: jucundum aliud et delectabile illis statutum, qui pacem et quietem gentium viventes amarunt. Si igitur te mortalem esse, et unicuique pro presentibus operibus futura merita obsignata memineris, neminem infestabis.”

Pet. Martyr, decad. 1. lib. tertius. Ed. 1574.

Herrera, the celebrated historiographer of Spain, gives the Cacique's speech in the words following:

Tu has venido à estas tierras, que nunca antes visto, con gran poder, y has puesto gran temor: sabe que segun lo que acã sentimos, ay dos lugares en la otra vida, adonde van las aïmas: uno malo y lleno de tinieblas, guardado para los que hazen mal. Otro es a legre y bueno adonde se han de aposentar los que aman la paz de las gentes, y por tanto si tu sientes que has de morir, y que à cada uno segun lo que acã hizièra, alla le ha de responder el premio, no haras mal à quien no te le hizière.

Herrera Hist. de las Indias Ocid. Decada 1. libro 2.

11011

BOOK

I.

great Oceans were anciently distinguished also, from their relative situation, by the names of the North and South Seas (*a*).

Name.

To that prodigious chain of Islands which extend in a curve, from the Florida Shore on the Northern Peninsula, to the Gulph of Venezuela in the Southern, is given the denomination of *West Indies*, from the name of India originally assigned to them by Columbus. This illustrious Navigator planned his expedition, not, as Raynal and others have supposed, under the idea of introducing a New World to the knowledge of the Old; but, principally, in the view of finding a route to India by a Western navigation; which he was led to think would prove less tedious than by the Coast of Africa: and this conclusion would have been just, if the geography of the Ancients, on which it was founded, had been accurate (*b*). Indeed,

fo

(*a*) The appellation of *North*, applied to that part of the Atlantick which flows into the Gulph of Darien, seems now to be entirely disused; but the Pacifick is still commonly called the *South Sea*. It was discovered in 1513, and having been first entered towards the South, might, perhaps, have derived its name from that circumstance.

(*b*) "The spherical figure of the earth was known to the ancient geographers. They invented the method still in use, of computing the longitude and latitude of different places. According to their doctrine, the equator contained 360 degrees; these they divided into twenty-four parts, or hours, each equal to fifteen degrees. The country of the *Seres* or *Sinæ* being the farthest part of India known to the Ancients, was supposed, by Marinus Tyrius, the most eminent of the ancient geographers before Ptolemy, to be fifteen hours, or 225 degrees to the east of the first meridian, passing through the Fortunate Islands. If this supposition was well founded, the country of the *Seres*, or China, was only nine hours, or 135 degrees west from the Fortunate or Canary Islands; and the navigation in that direction was much shorter than by the course which the Portuguese were pursuing." From

this

so firmly persuaded was Columbus of its truth and certainty, that he continued to assert his belief of it after the discovery of Cuba and Hispaniola; not doubting that those islands constituted some part of the Eastern extremity of Asia: and the nations of Europe, satisfied with such authority, concurred in the same idea. Even when the discovery of the Pacific Ocean had demonstrated his mistake, all the countries which Columbus had visited still retained the name of the Indies; and in contradistinction to those at which the Portuguese, after passing the Cape of Good Hope, had at length arrived by an Eastern course, they were now denominated the *Indies of the West* (c).

AMONG the Geographers of those days, however, there were some, who envying the glory of Columbus, or giving more credit to ancient fable than to the achievements of their contemporaries, persisted in assigning to the newly-discovered Islands the appellation of *Antilia* or *Antiles*: the name (according to Charlevoix) of an imaginary country, placed in ancient charts about two hundred leagues to the Westward of the Azores; and it is a name still very generally used by foreign Navigators, al-

this account, for which the reader is indebted to the learned Dr. Robertson, it is evident that the scheme of Columbus was founded on rational systematical principles, according to the light which his age afforded; whereas if he had proposed, without any such support, to discover a new hemisphere by sailing westward; he would have been justly considered as an arrogant and chimerical projector, and success itself would not have reconciled his temerity to the sober dictates of reason.

(c) Columbus sailed on his first voyage the 3d of August, 1492. In 1494 Bartholomew Dias discovered the Cape of Good Hope; but it was not doubled till the year 1497, when Vasquez de Gama succeeded (for the first time in modern navigation) in this, as it was then supposed, formidable attempt.

BOOK

I.

though the etymology of the word is as uncertain as the application of it is unjust. To the British nation the name bestowed by Columbus is abundantly more familiar: and thus the whole of the New Hemisphere is, with us, commonly comprised under three great divisions; North America, South America, and the West Indies (*d*).

BUT, subordinate to this comprehensive and simple arrangement, necessity or convenience has introduced more minute and local distinctions. That portion of the Atlantick, which is separated from the main Ocean to the North and to the East, by the Islands I have mentioned, although commonly known by the general appellation of the Mexican Gulph, is itself properly subdivided into three distinct Basins: the Gulph

(*d*) The term *Antiles* is applied by Hoffman to the Windward or Charaibean Islands only, and is by him thus accounted for: "Dicuntur Antilæ Americæ quasi ante Insulas Americæ, nempe ante majores Insulas Sinûs Mexicani." (*Hoffman Lexic. Univ.*) Rochfort and Du Tertre explain the word nearly in the same manner, while Mons. D'Anville applies the name to those Islands only, which are more immediately opposed to, or situated against, the Continent: thus he terms Cuba, Hispaniola, Jamaica, and Porto Rico, *the Great Antiles*, and the small Islands of Aruba, Curaçoa, Bonair, Magariitta, and some others near the coast of Caraccas on the Southern Peninsula, *the Less*; excluding the Charaibean Islands altogether. A recurrence to the early Spanish Historians would have demonstrated to all these writers, that the word *Antilia* was applied to Hispaniola and Cuba, before the discovery either of the Windward Islands, or any part of the American Continent. This appears from the following passage in the First Book of the First Decad of Peter Martyr, which bears date from the Court of Spain, November 1493, eight months only after Columbus's return from his first expedition; "Ophiram Insulam sese reperisse refert: sed Cosmographorum tractu diligenter considerato, *Antiliæ* Insulæ sunt illæ et adjacentes aliæ: hanc Hispaniolam appellavit, &c."

of Mexico, the Bay of Honduras, and the Charaibean Sea (*e*). The latter takes its name from that class of Islands which bound this part of the Ocean to the East. Most of these were anciently possessed by a nation of Cannibals, the scourge and terror of the mild and inoffensive natives of Hispaniola, who frequently expressed to Columbus their dread of those fierce and warlike invaders, styling them Charaibes, or Caribbees (*f*). And it was in consequence of this information, that the Islands to which these savages belonged, when discovered afterwards by Columbus, were by him denominated generally the Charaibean Islands.

Of this class, however, a group nearly adjoining to the Eastern side of St. John de Porto Rico, is likewise called the Virgin Isles; a distinction of which the origin will be explained in its place (*g*).

NEITHER must it pass unobserved, that the name of Bahama is commonly applied by the English to that cluster of

(*e*) Vide Introduction to the West Indian Atlas, by Jefferies.

(*f*) Herrera, lib. i. Fer. Columbus, chap. xxxiii.

(*g*) It may be proper to observe, that the old Spanish Navigators, in speaking of the West Indian Islands in general, frequently distinguish them also into two classes, by the terms *Barbvento* and *Sotavento*, from whence our *Windward* and *Leeward* Islands; the Charaibean constituting in strict propriety the former class (and as such I shall speak of them in the course of this work), and the four large Islands of Cuba, Jamaica, Hispaniola, and Porto Rico, the latter. But our English mariners appropriate both terms to the Charaibean Islands only, subdividing them according to their situation in the course of the trade wind; the Windward Islands by their arrangement terminating, I believe, with Martinico, and the Lee-ward commencing at Dominica, and extending to Porto Rico.

small.

BOOK

I.

small islands, rocks, and reefs of sand, which stretch in a North-westerly direction for the space of near three hundred leagues, from the Northern coast of Hispaniola to the Bahama Strait, opposite the Florida Shore. Whether this appellation is of Indian origin, as commonly supposed, is a question I cannot answer; neither does it merit very anxious investigation: yet these little islands have deservedly a claim to particular notice; for it was one of them (*b*) that had the honour of first receiving Columbus, after a voyage the most bold and magnificent in design, and the most important in its consequences, of any that the mind of man has conceived, or national adventure undertaken, from the beginning of the world to the present hour.

Climate.

MOST of the countries of which I propose to treat being situated beneath the tropick of Cancer, the circumstances of climate, as well in regard to general heat, as to the periodical rains and consequent variation of seasons, are nearly the same throughout the whole. The temperature of the air varies indeed considerably according to the elevation of the land; but, with this exception, the medium degree of heat is much the same in all the countries of this part of the globe.

A TROPICAL year seems properly to comprehend but two distinct seasons; the *wet* and the *dry*; but as the rains in these climates constitute two great periods, I shall describe it, like the European year, under four divisions.

(*b*) Called by the Indians Guanahani, by the Spaniards St. Salvadore, and is known to English seamen by the name of Cat Island. The whole group is called by the Spaniards Lucayos.

THE vernal season, or Spring, may be said to commence with the month of May, when the foliage of the trees evidently becomes more vivid, and the parched savannas begin to change their ruflet hue, even previous to the first periodical rains, which are now daily expected, and generally set in about the middle of the month. These, compared with the Autumnal rains, may be said to be gentle showers. They come from the South, and commonly fall every day about noon, and break up with thunder-storms; creating a bright and beautiful verdure, and a rapid and luxuriant vegetation. The thermometer at this season varies considerably; commonly falling six or eight degrees immediately after the diurnal rains: its medium height may be stated at 75° .

AFTER these rains have continued about a fortnight, the weather becomes dry, settled, and salutary; and the tropical Summer reigns in full glory. Not a cloud is to be perceived; and the sky blazes with irresistible fierceness. For some hours, commonly between seven and ten in the morning, before the setting in of the sea-breeze or trade-wind, which at this season blows from the south-east with great force and regularity until late in the evening, the heat is scarcely supportable; but, no sooner is the influence felt of this refreshing wind, than all Nature revives, and the climate, in the shade, becomes not only very tolerable, but pleasant. The thermometer now varies but little in the whole twenty-four hours: its medium, near the coast, may be stated at about 80° . I have seldom observed it higher than 85° at noon, nor much below 75° at sun-rise.

BOOK

I.

THE nights at this season are transcendently beautiful. The clearness and brilliancy of the heavens, the serenity of the air, and the soft tranquillity in which all Nature reposes, contribute to harmonize the mind, and produce the most calm and delightful sensations. The moon too in these climates displays far greater radiance than in Europe: the smallest print is legible by her light; and in the moon's absence her function is not ill supplied by the brightness of the milky-way, and by that glorious planet Venus, which appears here like a little moon, and glitters with so refulgent a beam as to cast a shade from trees, buildings, and other objects, making full amends for the short stay and abrupt departure of the crepusculum or twilight (*i*).

THIS state of the weather commonly continues, with little variation, from the beginning of June until the middle of August, when the diurnal breeze begins to intermit, and the atmosphere becomes sultry, incommodious, and suffocating. In the latter end of this month, and most part of September, we look about in vain for coolness and comfort. The thermometer occasionally exceeds 90°, and instead of a steady and refreshing wind from the sea, there are usually faint breezes and calms alternately. These are preludes to the second periodical or Autumnal season. Large towering

(*i*) In the mountainous and interior parts of the larger islands, innumerable *fire-flies* abound at night, which have a surprising appearance to a stranger. They consist of different species, some of which emit a light, resembling a spark of fire, from a globular prominence near each eye; and others from their sides in the act of respiration. They are far more luminous than the glow-worm, and fill the air on all sides, like so many living stars, to the great astonishment and admiration of a traveller unaccustomed to the country.—In the day-time they disappear.

clouds,

clouds, fleecy, and of a reddish hue, are now seen, in the morning, in the quarters of the south, and south-east; the tops of the mountains at the same time appear clear of clouds, and the objects upon them wear a bluish cast, and seem much nearer to the spectator than usual. When these vast accumulations of vapour have risen to a considerable height in the atmosphere, they commonly move horizontally towards the mountains, proclaiming their progress in deep and rolling thunder, which, reverberated from peak to peak, and answered by the distant roaring of the sea, heightens the majesty of the scene, and irresistibly lifts up the mind of the spectator to the great Author of all sublimity.

THE waters, however, with which these congregated vapours load the atmosphere, seldom fall with great and general force until the beginning of October. It is then that the heavens pour down cataracts. An European who has not visited these climates, can form no just conception of the quantity of water which deluges the earth at this season: by an exact account which was kept of the perpendicular height of the water which fell in one year in Barbadoes (and that no ways remarkable) it appeared to have been equal to sixty-seven cubical inches.

IT is now, in the interval between the beginning of August and the latter end of October, that hurricanes, those dreadful visitations of the Almighty, are apprehended. The prognostics of these elementary conflicts, have been minutely described by various writers, and their effects are known by

BOOK

I.



late mournful experience to every inhabitant of every island within the tropicks, but their immediate cause seems to lie far beyond the limits of our circumscribed knowledge.

TOWARDS the end of November, or sometimes not till the middle of December, a considerable change in the temperature of the air is perceivable. The coasts to the northward are now beaten by a rough and heavy sea, roaring with incessant noise; the wind varies from the east to the north-east and north, sometimes driving before it, across the highest mountains, not only heavy rains but hail; till at length, the north wind having acquired sufficient force, the atmosphere is cleared; and now comes on a succession of serene and pleasant weather, the north-east and northerly winds spreading coolness and delight throughout the whole of this burning region.

IF this interval, therefore, from the beginning of December to the end of April, be called winter, it is certainly the finest winter on the globe. To valetudinarians and persons advanced in life, it is the climate of Paradise.

THE account which I have thus given is, however, to be received not as uniformly exact and minutely particular; but as a general representation only, subject to many variations and exceptions. In the large islands of Cuba, Hispaniola, and Jamaica, whose lofty mountains are clothed with forests perhaps as old as the deluge, the rains are much more frequent and violent than in the small islands to windward; some of which are without mountains, and others without wood; both
powerful

powerful agents on the atmosphere. In the interior and elevated districts of the three former islands, I believe there are showers in every month of the year; and on the northern coasts of those islands, considerable rains are expected in December or January, soon after the setting in of the north winds.

CONCERNING the trade-wind, or diurnal sea-breeze, which blows in these climates from the east, and its collateral points, with little intermission or variation nine months in the year, the causes of it having been traced and displayed by numerous writers, it is unnecessary for me to treat; but the peculiarity of the land-wind by night (than which nothing can be more grateful and refreshing) has been less generally noticed. This is an advantage, among others, which the larger islands of the West Indies derive from the great inequality of their surface; for as soon as the sea-breeze dies away, the hot air of the plains being rarefied, ascends towards the tops of the mountains, and is there condensed by the cold; which making it specifically heavier than it was before, it descends back to the plains on both sides of the ridge. Hence a night-wind is felt in all the mountainous countries under the torrid zone, blowing on all sides from the land towards the shore, so that on a north shore the wind shall come from the south, and on the south shore from the north. Agreeably to this hypothesis, it is observable that in the islands to windward, where they have no mountains, they have no land-breeze (*k*).

Winds.

OF

(*k*) The account thus given of the land-wind, is chiefly in the words of Dr. Franklin, whose description is so precise and accurate as to admit of no improvement.

BOOK

I.

OF the general appearance of a distant country, and the scenery with which it is clothed, it is difficult, by mere verbal description, to convey an idea. To the first discoverers, the prospect of these islands must have been interesting beyond all that imagination can at present conceive of it. Even at this day, when the mind is prepared by anticipation, they are beheld by the voyager for the first time, with strong emotions of admiration and pleasure; arising not only from the novelty of the scene, but also from the beauty of the smaller islands, and the sublimity of the larger, whose lofty mountains form a stupendous and awful picture; the subject both of wonder and contemplation (1).

NOR

ment. In Barbadoes, and most of the small islands to windward, the sea-breeze blows as well by night as by day. It is sometimes the case in Jamaica in the months of June and July, the land at that time being heated to such a degree, that the cold air of the mountains is not sufficiently dense to check the current which flows from the sea.

(1) To the first voyagers to the West Indies, many must have been the objects of astonishment, and in some respects of terror, even before the appearance of land; such as the variation of the compass, the regularity of the winds, the water spout, and other phenomena; of the existence of which they were previously unapprized. It is in such cases that terror exerts its power over the mind with uncontrollable ascendancy; for reason and reflection can furnish no argument to oppose to its progress. Columbus in truth found himself amidst a new creation. What, for instance, could have more strongly excited curiosity than the first sight of that wonderful little animal *the flying fish*? Who would have believed that the natives of the deep had power to quit their watery element, and fly aloft with the birds of the air! It was an era of miracles, and considering the propensity of mankind to magnify what truly is strange, the modesty displayed by Columbus in speaking of his enterprises and discoveries, and the strict adherence to truth which he appears on all occasions to have manifested, form a very distinguished feature in his character. In general the travellers of those days not only reported won-

derful

NOR did these promising territories disappoint expectation on a nearer search and more accurate inspection. Columbus, whose veracity has never been suspected, speaks of their beauty and fertility in terms of the highest admiration: “ There is a
 “ river (he observes in one of his letters to King Ferdinand
 “ written from Cuba) which discharges itself into the harbour
 “ that I have named Porto Santo, of sufficient depth to be navigable. I had the curiosity to found it, and found eight fathoms. Yet the water is so limpid, that I can easily discern
 “ the sand at the bottom. The banks of this river are embellished with lofty palm-trees, whose shade gives a delicious
 “ freshness to the air; and the birds and the flowers are uncommon and beautiful. I was so delighted with the scene,
 “ that I had almost come to the resolution of staying here the remainder of my days; for believe me, Sire, these countries
 “ far surpass all the rest of the world in pleasure and convenience; and I have frequently observed to my people, that,
 „ with all my endeavours to convey to your Majesty an ade-

dentful things which never existed, but sometimes even really believed what they reported. In 1512 John Ponce de Leon, a Spanish lord of distinction (as we are informed by Herrera) actually took a voyage to Florida for the purpose of bathing in the River *Florida*, which he had been told would restore him to youth, like the cauldron of Medea. It is hard that the credulity of this old man, what shall we say to our own learned countryman Sir Walter Raleigh, who sixty years afterwards, in the history of his voyage to Guiana, gives an account of a nation *who were born without heads, and whose eyes were placed in their shoulders*. Raleigh does not indeed pretend that he had seen any of these people himself, but he repeats what he had heard from others with a gravity and solemnity which evince that he seriously believed their existence. See his account of Guiana in Hakluyt's Collection, vol. ii.

BOOK

I.



“ quate idea of the charming objects which continually present themselves to our view, the description will fall greatly short of the reality.”

How ill informed, or prejudiced, are those writers, therefore, who, affecting to disbelieve, or endeavouring to palliate, the enormities of the Spanish invaders, represent these once delightful spots, when first discovered by Columbus, to have been so many impenetrable and unhealthy deserts ! It is true, that after the Spaniards, in the course of a few bloody years, had exterminated the ancient and rightful possessors, the earth, left to its own natural fertility, beneath the influence of a tropical sun, teemed with noxious vegetation. Then, indeed, the fairest of the islands became so many frightful solitudes ; impervious and unwholesome. Such was the condition of Jamaica when wrested from the Spanish Crown in 1655, and such is the condition of great part of Cuba and Porto Rico at this day ; for the infinitely wise and benevolent Governor of the universe, to compel the exertion of those faculties which he has given us, has ordained, that by human cultivation alone, the earth becomes the proper habitation of man (*m*).

(*m*) Dr. Lind, in his “ Essay on the Diseases of Hot Climates,” has preserved an extract from the Journal of an Officer who sailed up a river on the coast of Guinea, which affords a striking illustration of this remark : “ We were (says the Officer) thirty miles distant from the sea, in a country altogether uncultivated, overflowed with water—surrounded with thick impenetrable woods, and overrun with slime. The air was so vitiated, noisome and thick, that *our torches and candles burnt dim, and seemed ready to be extinguished ; and even the human voice lost its natural tone.*” Part I. p. 64.

BUT as the West Indian Islands in their ancient state were not without culture, so neither were they generally noxious to health. The plains or savannas were regularly sown, twice in the year, with that species of grain which is now well known in Europe by the name of Turkey Wheat. It was called by the Indians Mahez, or Maize, a name it still bears in all the Islands, and does not require very laborious cultivation. This however constituted but a part only, and not the most considerable part, of the vegetable food of the natives. As these countries were at the same time extremely populous, both the hills and the vallies (of the smaller islands especially) were necessarily cleared of underwood, and the trees which remained afforded a shade that was cool, airy, and delicious. Of these, some, as the papaw and the palmeto (*n*), are, without doubt, the most graceful of all the vegetable creation. Others continue to bud, blossom, and bear fruit throughout the year. Nor is it undeserving notice, that the foliage of the most part springing only from the summit of the trunk, and thence expanding into wide-spreading branches, closely but elegantly arranged, every grove is an assemblage of majestic columns, supporting a verdant canopy, and excluding the sun, without impeding the circulation of the air. Thus the shade, at all times impervious to the blaze, and refreshed by the diurnal breeze, affords, not

(*n*) The species here meant (for there are several) is the palmeto-royal, or mountain-cabbage. Ligon mentions some, at the first settlement of Barbadoes, about 200 feet in height; but Mr. Hughes observes, that the highest in his time, in that island, was 134 feet. I am inclined to believe, that I have seen them in Jamaica upwards of 150 feet in height; but it is impossible to speak with certainty without an actual measurement.

merely

BOOK

I.

merely a refuge from occasional inconveniency, but a most wholesome and delightful retreat and habitation.

SUCH were these orchards of the Sun, and woods of perennial verdure; of a growth unknown to the frigid clime and less vigorous soil of Europe; for what is the oak compared to the cedar or mahogany, of each of which the trunk frequently measures from eighty to ninety feet from the base to the limbs? What European forest has ever given birth to a stem equal to that of the ceiba (*o*), which alone, simply rendered concave, has been known to produce a boat capable of containing one hundred persons? or the still greater fig, the sovereign of the vegetable creation,—itself a forest (*p*)?

(*o*) The wild cotton tree.

(*p*) This monarch of the woods, whose empire extends over Asia and Africa, as well as the tropical parts of America, is described by our divine Poet with great exactness:

'The fig-tree, not that kind for fruit renown'd,
But such as at this day to Indians known
In Malabar and Decan, spreads her arms,
Branching so broad and long, that in the ground
The bearded twigs take root, and daughters grow
Above the mother tree, a pillar'd shade,
High over-arch'd, and echoing walks between!

Paradise Lost, Book IX.

It is called in the East Indies the *banyan-tree*. Mr. Marsden gives the following Account of the dimensions of one, near Manjee, twenty miles west of Patna in Bengal: Diameter, 363 to 375 feet; circumference of the shadow at noon, 1116 feet; circumference of the several stems, in number fifty or sixty, 921 feet. Hist. Sumatra, p. 131.

THE majestic scenery of these gigantic groves was at the same time enlivened by the singular forms of some, and the surprising beauty of others of the inferior animals which possessed and peopled them. Although these will be more fully described in the sequel, a few observations which at present occur to me, will, I hope, be forgiven. If it be true, as it hath been asserted, that in most of the regions of the torrid zone the heat of the sun is, as it were, reflected in the untameable fierceness of their wild beasts, and in the exalted rage and venom of the numerous serpents with which they are infested, the Sovereign Disposer of all things has regarded the Islands of the West Indies with peculiar favour; inasmuch as their serpents are wholly destitute of poison (*q*), and they possess

(*q*) I say this on the authority of Brown, Charlevoix, and Hughes (of whom the first compiled the History of Jamaica, the second that of Hispaniola, and the last of Barbadoes)—on the testimony of many gentlemen who have resided in several of the Windward Islands—and on my own experience during a residence of eighteen years in Jamaica. In that time I neither knew nor heard of any person being hurt from the bite of any one species of the numerous snakes or lizards known in that island. Some of the snakes I have myself handled with perfect security. I conclude, therefore, (notwithstanding the contrary assertion of Du Tertre respecting Martinico and St. Lucia) that *all* the Islands are providentially exempted from this evil. Nevertheless it must be admitted, that the circumstance is extraordinary; inasmuch as every part of the continent of America, but especially those provinces which lie under the Equator, abound in a high degree with serpents, whose bite is mortal.—Mr. Bancroft, in his Account of Guiana, gives a dreadful list of such as are found in that extensive country; and, in speaking of one, of a species which he calls the small *labarra*, makes mention of a negro who was unfortunately bit by it in the finger. The negro had but just time to kill the snake, when his limbs became unable to support him, and he

BOOK

I.

sees no animal of prey, to desolate their vallies. The crocodile, or alligator, is indeed sometimes discovered on the banks of their rivers; but notwithstanding all that has been said of its fierce and savage disposition, I pronounce it, from my own knowledge, a cautious and timid creature, avoiding, with the utmost precipitation, the approach of man. The rest of the lizard kind are perfectly innocent and inoffensive. Some of them are even fond of human society. They embellish our walks by their beauty, and court our attention by gentleness and frolic; but their kindness, I know not why, is returned by aversion and disgust. Anciently the woods of almost all the equatorial parts of America abounded with various tribes of the smaller monkey; a sportive and sagacious little creature, which the people of Europe seem likewise to have regarded with unmerited detestation; for they hunted them down with such barbarous assiduity, that in several of the islands every species of them has been long since exterminated. Of the feathered

fell to the ground, and expired in less than five minutes.—Dr. Dancer, in his History of the Expedition from Jamaica to Fort Juan on the Lake of Nicaragua, in 1780, which he attended as physician, relates the following circumstance: A snake hanging from the bough of a tree bit one of the soldiers, as he passed along, just under the orbit of the left eye; from whence the poor man felt such intense pain, that he was unable to proceed: and when a messenger was sent to him a few hours afterwards, he was found dead, with all the symptoms of putrefaction, a yellowness and swelling over his whole body; and the eye near to which he was bitten, wholly dissolved. This circumstance was confirmed to me by Colonel Kemble, who commanded in chief on that expedition. It may not be useless to add, that those serpents which are venomous are furnished with fangs somewhat resembling the tusks of a boar: they are moveable, and inserted in the upper jaw.

race too, many tribes have now nearly deserted those shores where polished man delights in spreading universal and capricious destruction. Among these, one of the most remarkable was the flamingo, an elegant and princely bird, as large as the swan, and arrayed in plumage of the brightest scarlet. Numerous, however, are the feathered kinds, deservedly distinguished by their splendour and beauty, that still animate these sylvan recesses. The parrot, and its various affinities, from the macaw to the perroquet, some of them not larger than a sparrow, are too well known to require description. These are as plentiful in the larger islands of the West Indies as the rook is in Europe. But the boast of American groves is doubtless the colibri, or humming bird; of the brilliance of whose plumage no combination of words, nor tints of the pencil, can convey an adequate idea. The consummate green of the emerald, the rich purple of the amethyst, and the vivid flame of the ruby, all happily blended and enveloped beneath a transparent veil of waving gold, are distinguishable in every species, but differently arranged and apportioned in each. Nor is the minuteness of its form less the object of admiration, than the lustre of its plumage; the smallest species not exceeding the size of a beetle, and appearing the link which connects the bird and insect creation.

It has been observed, however, that although nature is profuse of ornament to the birds of the torrid zone, she has bestowed far greater powers of melody on those of Europe; and the observation is partly true. That prodigality and variety of music which in the vernal season enlivens the British groves,

BOOK I. is certainly unknown to the shades of the tropical regions; yet are not these altogether silent or inharmonious. The note of the mock-bird is deservedly celebrated, while the hum of myriads of busy insects, and the plaintive melody of the innumerable variety of doves abounding in these climates, form a concert, which, if it serve not to awaken the fancy, contributes at least to sooth the affections, and, like the murmuring of a rivulet, gives harmony to repose.

Mountains. BUT, resigning to the naturalist the task of minutely describing the splendid aerial tribes of these regions, whose variety is not less remarkable than their beauty, I now return from these, the smallest and most pleasing forms of active life, to the largest and most awful objects of inanimate nature. The transition is abrupt; but it is in the magnitude, extent, and elevation of the mountains of the New World, that the Almighty has most strikingly manifested the wonders of his omnipotence. Those of South America are supposed to be nearly twice the height of the highest in the ancient hemisphere, and, even under the equator, have their tops involved in everlasting snow. To those massive piles, the loftiest summits of the most elevated of the West Indian Islands cannot indeed be compared; but some of these rise, nevertheless, in amazing grandeur, and are among the first objects that fix the attention of the voyager. The mountains of Hispaniola in particular, whose wavy ridges are descried from sea at the distance of thirty leagues, towering far above the clouds in stupendous magnificence, and the blue mountains of Jamaica, have never yet, that I have heard, been fully explored. Neither curi-
osity

CHAP.

I.

osity nor avarice has hitherto ventured to invade the topmost of those lofty regions. In such of them as are accessible, nature is found to have put on the appearance of a new creation. As the climate changes, the trees, the birds, and the insects are seen also to differ from those which are met with below. To an unaccustomed spectator, looking down from those heights, the whole scene appears like enchantment. The first object which catches the eye at the dawn of day, is a vast expanse of vapour, covering the whole face of the vallies. Its boundaries being perfectly distinct, and visibly circumscribed, it has the exact resemblance of an immense body of water, while the mountains appear like so many islands in the midst of a beautiful lake. As the sun increases in force, the prospect varies: the incumbent vapours fly upward, and melt into air; disclosing all the beauties of nature, and the triumphs of industry, heightened and embellished by the full blaze of a tropical sun. In the equatorial season, scenes of still greater magnificence frequently present themselves; for, while all is calm and serene in the higher regions, the clouds are seen below sweeping along the sides of the mountains in vast bodies; till, growing more ponderous by accumulation, they fall at length in torrents of water on the plains. The sound of the tempest is distinctly heard by the spectator above; the distant lightening is seen to irradiate the gloom; while the thunder, reverberated in a thousand echoes, rolls far beneath his feet.

BUT lofty as the tropical mountains generally are, it is wonderfully true, that all the known parts of their summits furnish incontestible evidence that the sea had once dominion
over

Reflections,
&c.

BOOK

I.

over them. Even their appearance at a distance affords an argument in support of this conclusion. Their ridges resemble billows, and their various inequalities, inflexions, and convexities, seem justly ascribable to the fluctuations of the deep. As in other countries too, marine shells are found in great abundance in various parts of these heights. I have seen on a mountain in the interior parts of Jamaica petrified oysters dug up, which perfectly resembled, in the most minute circumstances, the large oysters of the western coast of England; a species not to be found at this time, I believe, in the seas of the West Indies. Here, then, is an ample field for conjecture to expatiate in; and indeed few subjects have afforded greater exercise to the pens of physical writers, than the appearances I have mentioned. While some philosophers assign the origin of all the various inequalities of the earth to the ravages of the deluge, others, considering the mountains as the parents of springs and rivers, maintain that they are coeval with the world; and that, first emerging from the abyss, they were created with it. Some again ascribe them to the force of volcanoes and earthquakes: "the Almighty," say they, "while he permits subterranean fires to swallow up cities and plains in one part of the globe, causes them to produce promontories and islands in another, which afterwards become the fruitful seats of industry and happiness (*r*).

ALL these and other theorists concur, however, in the belief that the surface of the globe has undergone many surprising and violent convulsions and changes since it first came from

(*r*) Goldsmith's History of the Earth, &c. vol. i.

the hands of the Creator. Hills have sunk into plains, and vallies have been exalted into hills. Respecting the numerous islands of the West Indies, they are generally considered as the tops of lofty mountains, the eminences of a great continent, converted into islands by a tremendous concussion of nature, which, increasing the natural course of the ocean from East to West, has laid a vast extent of level country under water (*f*).

BUT notwithstanding all that has been written on this subject, very little seems to be known. The advocates of this system do not sufficiently consider, that the sea could not have covered so great a portion of land on one side of the globe, without leaving an immense space as suddenly dry on the other. We have no record in history of so mighty a revolution, nor indeed are many of the premises on which this hypothesis is built, established in truth.

PERHAPS, instead of considering these islands as the fragments of a desolated continent, we ought rather to regard them as the rudiments of a new one. It is extremely probable, that many of them, even now, are but beginning to emerge from the bosom of the deep. Mr. Buffon has shewn, by incontrovertible evidence, that the bottom of the sea bears an exact resemblance to the land which we inhabit; consisting, like the earth, of hills and vallies, plains and hollows, rocks, sands and soils of every consistence and species. To the motion of the waves, and the sediments which they have deposited, he imputes too, with great probability, the regular positions of the

(*f*) See L'Abbé Raynal, L'Abbé Pluche, and others.

BOOK

I.

various strata or layers which compose the upper parts of the earth; and he shews that this arrangement cannot have been the effect of a sudden revolution, but of causes slow, gradual, and successive in their operations. To the flow of tides and rivers, depositing materials which have been accumulating ever since the creation, and the various fluctuations of the deep operating thereon, he ascribes, therefore, most of those inequalities in the present appearance of the globe which in some parts embellish, and in others (to our limited view at least) deface it.

PURSUING this train of thought, we may be led perhaps to consider many of the most terrifying appearances of nature, as necessary and propitious in the formation and support of the system of the world; and to trace even in volcanoes and earthquakes (of which most of these islands bear evident memorials) the stupendous agency of divine providence, employed, as mankind increase in numbers, in raising up from the bottom of the deep new portions of land for their habitations and comfort.

THESE considerations are founded in piety, and seem consonant to reason; and although in contemplating the tremendous phenomena which the mountains of South America, beyond all other parts of the globe, present to our notice (*t*),

(*t*) "Of all parts of the earth America is the place where the dreadful irregularities of nature are the most conspicuous. Vesuvius, and Etna itself, are but mere fireworks in comparison to the burning mountains of the Andes, which, as they are the highest mountains in the world, so also are they the most formidable for their eruptions." — Goldsmith's *History of the Earth*, &c. vol. i. p. 99.

and

and reflecting on the devastations which they spread, human reason will sometimes find itself perplexed and dismayed, may we not by analogy conclude, that the Almighty, uniform in his purposes, is equally wise and benevolent in all his dispensations, though the scale on which he acts is sometimes too large for the span of our confined and feeble comprehension? They who seem best qualified to contemplate the works of the Deity, will most readily acknowledge that it is not for man to unfold the page of Omnipotence! Happy if to conscious ignorance we add humble adoration!

C H A P. II.

Of the Charaibes, or ancient Inhabitants of the Windward Islands.

—*Origin.*—*Difficulties attending on accurate investigation of their character.*—*Such particulars related as are least disputed, concerning their manners and dispositions, persons and dress, habits, education of their children, arts, manufactures and government, religious rites, funeral ceremonies, &c.*—*Some reflections drawn from the whole.*

BOOK
I.

HAVING thus given an account of the climate and seasons, and endeavoured to convey to the reader some faint idea of the beauty and magnificence with which the hand of Nature arrayed the surface of these numerous Islands, I shall now proceed to enquire after those inhabitants to whose support and conveniency they were chiefly found subservient, when they first came to the knowledge of Europe.

It hath been observed in the preceding chapter that Columbus, on his first arrival at Hispaniola, received information of a barbarous and warlike people, a nation of Cannibals, who frequently made depredations on that, and the neighbouring Islands. They were called Caribbees, or Charaibes, and were represented as coming from the East. Columbus, in his second voyage, discovered that they were the inhabitants of the Windward Islands.

THE great difference in language and character between these savages and the inhabitants of Cuba, Hispaniola, Jamaica, and Porto-Rico, hath given birth to an opinion that their origin also, was different. Of this there seems indeed to be but little doubt; but the question from whence each class of Islands was first peopled, is of more difficult solution. Rochefort, who published his account of the Antilles in 1658, pronounces the Charaibes to have been originally a nation of Florida, in North America.—He supposes that a colony of the Apalachian Indians having been driven from that continent, arrived at the Windward Islands, and exterminating the ancient male inhabitants, took possession of their lands, and their women. Of the larger islands he presumes that the natural strength, extent and population affording security to the natives, these happily escaped the destruction which overtook their unfortunate neighbours; and thus arose the distinction observable between the inhabitants of the larger and smaller islands (*a*).

To this account of the origin of the Insular Charaibes, the generality of historians have given their assent; but there are doubts attending it that are not easily solved. If they migrated from Florida, the imperfect state and natural course of their navigation, induce a belief that traces of them would have been found on those islands which are near to the Florida Shore; yet the natives of the Bahamas, when discovered by Columbus, were evidently a similar people to those of His-

(*a*) Rochefort Histoire des Isles Antilles, liv. ii. c. vii. See also, P. Labat nouveau Voyage aux Isles de L'Amerique, tom. iv. c. xv.

BOOK

I.

paniola (*b*). Besides, it is sufficiently known that there existed anciently many numerous and powerful tribes of Charaibes, on the Southern Peninsula, extending from the river Oronoko to Essequebe, and throughout the whole province of Surinam, even to Brasil; some of which still maintain their independency. It was with one of those tribes that our countryman Sir Walter Raleigh formed an alliance, when that commander made his romantic expedition to the coast of Guiana in 1595 (*c*); and by him we are assured that the Charaibes of that part of the Continent, spoke the language of Dominica (*d*). I incline therefore to the opinion of Martyr (*e*), and conclude that the islanders were rather a Colony from the Charaibes of South America, than from any nation of the North. Rochefort admits that their own traditions referred constantly to Guiana (*f*). It does not appear that they entertained the most remote idea of a Northern ancestry.

It may be thought, perhaps, that the Continental Charaibes, were themselves emigrants from the Northern to the Southern Peninsula: but, without attempting to controvert the position, to which recent discoveries seem indeed to have given a full confirmation, namely, that the Asiatic Continent first fur-

(*b*) Herrera, lib. ix. chap. ii. (*c*) Bancroft's History of Guiana, p. 259.

(*d*) Hakluyt, vol. iii. p. 668. (*e*) P. Martyr, Decad. 2. lib. i.

(*f*) Rochefort, liv. ii. c. vii. See also, Note 94 to Dr. Robertson's History of America. The people called *Galibis*, mentioned by Dr. R. are the Charaibes of the Continent, the term *Galibis* or *Calibis* (as it is written by Du Tertre) being, as I conceive, corrupted from *Caribbee*. Vide Lafitau, tom. i. p. 297. and Du Tertre, tom. ii. p. 360.

nished inhabitants to the contiguous North-Western parts of America, I conceive the Charaibes to have been a distinct race, widely differing from all the Nations of the New Hemisphere ; and I am even inclined to adopt the opinion of Hornius and other writers, who ascribe to them an oriental ancestry from across the Atlantic (*g*).

ENQUIRIES however into the origin of a remote and unlettered race, can be prosecuted with success only by comparing their ancient manners, laws, language, and religious ceremonies with those of other nations. Unfortunately, in all or most of those particulars respecting the Charaibes, our knowledge is limited within a narrow circle. Of a people engaged in perpetual warfare, hunted from island to island by revenge and rapacity, few opportunities could have offered, even to those who might have been qualified for such researches, of investigating the natural dispositions and habitual customs with minuteness and precision. Neither indeed could a just estimate have been formed of their national character, from the manners of such of them as were at length subjugated to the European yoke ; for they lost, together with their freedom, many of their original characteristics ; and at last even the desire of acting from the impulse of their own minds. We discern, says Rochefort (*b*), a wonderful change in the dispositions and habits of the Charaibes. In some respects we have enlightened, in others (to

(*g*) Some arguments in support of this opinion are subjoined in the Appendix to Book I.

(*b*) Rochefort, liv. ii. ch. ix. p. 436.

BOOK

I.

our shame be it spoken) we have corrupted them. An old Charaibe thus addressed one of our planters on this subject:—

“ Our people, he complained, are become almost as bad as yours.—We are so much altered since you came among us, that we hardly know ourselves, and we think it is owing to so melancholy a change, that hurricanes are more frequent than they were formerly. It is the evil spirit who has done all this,—who has taken our best lands from us, and given us up to the dominion of the Christians (*i*).”

MY present investigation must therefore be necessarily defective. Nevertheless, by selecting and combining such memorials as are least controverted, I shall hope to exhibit a few striking particulars in the character of this ill-fated people, which, if I mistake not, will lead to some important conclusions in the study of human nature.

THEIR fierce spirit and warlike disposition have already been mentioned. Historians have not failed to notice these, among

(*i*) This extract from Rochefort is surely a sufficient answer to the observations of Monsi. de Chanvalon, who wrote so late as 1751, and, judging of all the Charaibes from the few with whom he had any communication, represents them as not possessing any sagacity or foresight beyond mere animal instinct. He makes no allowance for *their* degradation in a state of captivity and servitude, although in another part of his book, speaking of the African blacks in the West Indies, he dwells strongly on this circumstance respecting the latter. “ Peut on connoître (he observes) le vrai génie d’un peuple opprimé, qui voit sans cesse les chatimens levés sur sa tête, et la violence toujours prête à être soutenue par la politique et la sûreté publique ? Peut on juger de la valeur, quand elle est enchainée, et sans armes ? ”—*Voyage a la Martinique*, p. 58.

the most distinguishable of their qualities (*k*).—Restless, enterprising and ardent, it would seem they considered war as the chief end of their creation, and the rest of the human race as their natural prey; for they devoured without remorse the bodies of such of their enemies (the men at least) as fell into their hands.—This custom is so repugnant to our feelings, that for a century past, until the late discoveries of a similar practice in the countries of the Pacifick Ocean, the philosophers of Europe had boldly impeached the veracity of the most eminent ancient voyagers who had first recorded the existence of it. Even Labat, who resided in the West Indies at a period when some of the Islands still remained in possession of the Charaibes, declares it to be his opinion that instances of this abominable practice among them, were at all times extremely rare;—the effect only of a sudden impulse of revenge arising from extraordinary and unprovoked injury; but that they ever made premeditated excursions to the larger islands for the purpose

(*k*) Dr. Robertson, in note 93 to the first vol. of his History of America, quotes from a MS. History of Ferdinand and Isabella, written by Andrew Bernaldes, the cotemporary and friend of Columbus, the following instance of the bravery of the Charaibes. “A canoe with four men, two women, and a boy, unexpectedly fell in with Columbus’s fleet. A Spanish bark with 25 men was sent to take them, and the fleet in the mean time cut off their communication with the shore. Instead of giving way to despair, the Charaibes seized their arms with undaunted resolution, and began the attack, wounding several of the Spaniards although they had targets as well as other defensive armour, and even after the canoe was overset, it was with no little difficulty and danger that some of them were secured, as they continued to defend themselves, and to use their bows with great dexterity while swimming in the sea.”—Herrera has recorded the same anecdote.

BOOK

I.

of devouring any of the inhabitants, or of seizing them to be eaten at a future time, he very confidently denies (*l*).

NEVERTHELESS there is no circumstance in the history of mankind better attested than the universal prevalence of these practices among them. Columbus was not only informed of it by the natives of Hispaniola, as I have already related, but having landed himself at Guadaloupe on its first discovery (*m*), he beheld in several cottages the head and limbs of the human body recently separated, and evidently kept for occasional repasts. He released, at the same time, several of the natives of Porto Rico, who, having been brought captives from thence, were reserved as victims for the same horrid purpose (*n*).

THUS far it must be confessed, the disposition of the Charibes leaves no very favourable impression on the mind of the reader; by whom it is probable they will be considered rather as beasts of prey, than as human beings; and he will think, perhaps, that it was nearly as justifiable to exterminate them from the earth, as it would be to destroy the fiercest monsters of the wilderness; since they who shew no mercy, are entitled to no pity.—

(*l*) Labat. tom. iv. p. 322.

(*m*) November 4, 1493.

(*n*) F. Columbus, cap. xlvi. Peter Martyr, Decad. I. lib. ii. Herrera, lib. ii. cap. vii. See also Bancroft's History of Guiana, p. 259, who is of opinion, that no other tribe of Indians in Guiana eat human flesh but the Charibes. Amongst these, the proof that this practice still subsists is incontestible.

BUT among themselves they were peaceable, and towards each other faithful, friendly and affectionate (*o*). They considered all strangers, indeed, as enemies; and of the people of Europe they formed a right estimation. The antipathy which they manifested towards the unoffending natives of the larger islands appears extraordinary; but it is said to have descended to them from their ancestors of Guiana: they considered those islanders as a colony of Arrowauks, a nation of South America, with whom the Charaibes of that continent are continually at war (*p*). We can assign no cause for such hereditary and irreconcilable hostility.—The custom of eating the bodies of those they had slain in battle excites our abhorrence, yet it may be doubted whether this abhorrence does not arise as much from the bias of our education, as from the spontaneous and original dictates of our nature. It is allowed that with regard to the people of Europe, whenever any of them had acquired their confidence, it was given without reserve. Their friendship was as warm as their enmity was implacable. The Charaibes of Guiana still fondly cherish the tradition of Raleigh's alliance, and to this day preserve the English colours which he left with them at parting (*q*).

OF the loftiness of their sentiments and their abhorrence of slavery, a writer, not very partial towards them, gives the following illustration: “There is not a nation on earth (says Labat) (*r*) more jealous of their independency than the Charaibes. They are impatient under the least infringe-

(*o*) Rochefort, liv. ii. cap. xi. Du Tertre, tom. ii. p. 359.

(*p*) Rochefort, liv. ii. chap. x. p. 449. (*q*) Bancroft, p. 259.

(*r*) Labat, tom. iv. p. 329.

BOOK

I.

“ment of it; and when, at any time, they are witnesses to the
 “respect and deference which the natives of Europe observe to-
 “wards their superiors, they despise us as abject slaves; wonder-
 “ing how any man can be so base as to crouch before his equal.”
 Rochefort, who confirms this account, relates also that when
 kidnapped and carried from their native islands into slavery,
 as they frequently were, the miserable captives commonly sunk
 under a sense of their condition, and finding resistance or escape
 hopeless, sought refuge in death from the calamities of it (*s*).

To this principle of conscious equality and native dignity, must be imputed the contempt which they manifested for the inventions and improvements of civilized life. Of our fire-arms they soon learnt by fatal experience, the superiority to their own weapons, and those therefore they valued: but our arts and manufactures they regarded as we regard the amusements and baubles of children:—hence the propensity to theft, so common among other savage nations, was altogether unknown to the Charaibes.

THE ardour which has been noticed in them for military enterprize, had a powerful influence on their whole conduct. Engaged in continual warfare abroad, they seldom appeared cheerful at home. Reflections on past miscarriage, or anxious schemes of future achievement, seemed to fill up many of their

(*s*) Rochefort, liv. ii. cap. xi. Labat relates that the following sentiment was proverbial among the first French settlers in the Windward Islands:—
“Regarder de travers un Charaibe, c’est le battre, et que de le battre c’est le tuer, et se s’espérer à en être tué.” Labat, tom. ii. p. 71.

hours, and rendered them habitually thoughtful, pensive and silent (*t*). Love itself, which exerts its influence in the frozen deserts of Iceland, maintained but a feeble dominion over the Charaibes (*u*). Their insensibility towards their women, although they allowed a plurality of wives (*x*), has been remarked by many writers; and it must have arisen from extrinsic causes;—from the predominance of passions strong enough to counteract the effects of a climate which powerfully disposes to voluptuousness, and awakens the instincts of nature much sooner than colder regions. The prevailing bias of their minds was distinguishable even in their persons. Though not so tall as the generality of Europeans, their frame was robust and muscular; their limbs flexible and active, and there was a penetrating quickness, and a wildness in their eyes, that seemed an emanation from a fierce and martial spirit (*y*). But, not satisfied with the workmanship of nature, they called in the assistance of art, to make themselves more formidable. They painted their faces and bodies with arnotto so extravagantly, that it was with difficulty their natural complexion, which was nearly that of a Spanish olive, was discoverable under the surface of crimson (*z*). However, as this mode of painting themselves was practised by both sexes, perhaps it was at first

(*t*) Du Tertre, tom. ii.(*u*) Rochefort, c. xi.(*x*) Ibid. c. xxii.

(*y*) Oviedo, lib. iii. This agrees likewise with the Chevalier Pinto's account of the Brazilians in note 42 to vol. i. of Dr. Robertson's History. "At the first aspect a Southern American appears to be mild and innocent, but, on a more attentive view, one discovers in his countenance something wild, distrustful and sullen."

(*z*) Rochefort, liv. ii. c. ix. Hakluyt, vol. iii. p. 539.

BOOK

I.

introduced as a defence against the venomous insects so common in tropical climates, or possibly they considered the brilliancy of the colour as highly ornamental; but the men had other methods of deforming their persons, which mere perversion of taste alone, would not, I think, have induced them to adopt. They disfigured their cheeks with deep incisions and hideous scars, which they stained with black, and they painted white and black circles round their eyes. Some of them perforated the cartilage of the nostrils, and inserted the bone of some fish, a parrot's feather, or a fragment of tortoise-shell (*a*),—a frightful custom, practised also by the natives of New Holland (*b*), and they strung together the teeth of such of their enemies as they had slain in battle, and wore them on their legs and arms, as trophies of successful cruelty (*c*).

To draw the bow with unerring skill, to wield the club with dexterity and strength, to swim with agility and boldness, to catch fish and to build a cottage, were acquirements of indispensable necessity, and the education of their children was well suited to the attainment of them. One method of making their boys skilful, even in infancy, in the exercise of the bow, was to suspend their food on the branch of a tree, compelling the hardy urchins to pierce it with their arrows, before they

(*a*) Rochefort, liv. ii. c. ix. Purchas, vol. iv. p. 1157. Du Tertre, tom. ii. p. 391, 393.

(*b*) Hawkesworth's Voyages, vol. iii. p. 171.

(*c*) Gumilla, tom. i. p. 193.

could obtain permission to eat (*d*). But these were subordinate objects:—The Charaibes instructed their youth, at the same time, in lessons of patience and fortitude; they endeavoured to inspire them with courage in war, and a contempt of danger and death;—above all things, to instil into their minds an hereditary hatred, and implacable thirst of revenge towards the Arrowauks. The means which they adopted for these purposes were in some respects superstitious; in others cruel and detestable.

As soon as a male child was brought into the world, he was sprinkled with some drops of his father's blood. The ceremonies used on this occasion were sufficiently painful to the father, but he submitted without emotion or complaint; fondly believing, that the same degree of courage which he had himself displayed, was by these means transmitted to his son (*e*).

(*d*) See Rochefort, c. xxviii. p. 555, and Gumilla, tom. ii. p. 283. Their arrows were commonly poisoned, except when they made their military excursions by night. On those occasions they converted them into instruments of still greater mischief; for by arming the points with pledgets of cotton dipt into oil, and set on flame, they fired whole villages of their enemies at a distance*. The poison which they used, was a concoction of noxious gums and vegetable juices †, and had the property of being perfectly innocent when received into the stomach, but if communicated immediately to the blood, through the slightest wound, it was generally mortal. The Indians of Guiana still prepare a similar poison. It is supposed however that sugar speedily administered in large quantities, is an antidote. (See *Relation Abrégée d'un Voyage, &c. par Mous. de la Condamine*; and Bancroft's Hist. of Guiana.)

* Rochefort, ch. xx. p. 555.

† Oviedo, lib. iii.

(*e*) Rochefort, liv. ii. c. xxv. p. 552.

BOOK

I.

As the boy grew, he was soon made familiar with scenes of barbarity; he partook of the horrid repasts of his nation, and he was frequently anointed with the fat of a slaughtered Arrow-ank; but he was not allowed to participate in the toils of the warrior, and to share the glories of conquest, until his fortitude had been brought to the test. The dawn of manhood ushered in the hour of severe trial. He was now to exchange the name he had received in his infancy, for one more sounding and significant;—a ceremony of high importance in the life of a Charaibe, but always accompanied by a scene of ferocious festivity and unnatural cruelty (*f*).

THE severities inflicted on such occasions by the hands of fathers on their own children, exhibit a melancholy proof of the influence of superstition in suppressing the most powerful feelings of nature; but the practice was not without example. Plutarch records the prevalence of a similar custom among the Lacedemonians. “At Sparta,” says the Historian, “boys “are whipped for a whole day, oftentimes to death, before “the altar of Diana, and there is a wonderful emulation “among them who best can sustain the greatest number of “stripes.” Nor did the Charaibe youth, yield in fortitude to the Spartan. If the severities he sustained extorted the least symptom of weakness from the young sufferer, he was disgraced for ever; but if he rose superior to pain, and baffled the rage of his persecutors, by perseverance and serenity, he received the

(*f*) Rochefort, liv. ii. c. xxiii. p. 556. Du Tertre, vol. ii. p. 377.

highest applause. He was thenceforth numbered among the defenders of his country, and it was pronounced by his relations and countrymen, *that he was now a man like one of themselves.*

A PENANCE still more severe, and torments more excruciating; stripes, burning and suffocation, constituted a test for him who aspired to the honour of leading forth his countrymen to war (*g*); for in times of peace the Charaibes admitted of no supremacy but that of nature. Having no laws, they needed no magistrates. To their old men indeed they allowed some kind of authority, but it was at best ill-defined, and must at all times have been insufficient to protect the weak against the strong.—In war, however, experience had taught them that subordination was as requisite as courage; they therefore elected their captains in their general assemblies with great solemnity (*h*); but, as hath been observed, they put their pretensions to the proof with circumstances of outrageous barbarity:—of which the recital however is disgusting, and may well be suppressed.

IF it appears strange that where so little was to be gained by preheminance, so much should be endured to obtain it, it must be considered that, in the estimation of the candidate, the reward was doubtless more than adequate to the cost of the

(*g*) Rochefort, liv. ii. cap. xix. p. 519. Purchas, vol. iv. p. 1262. Gumilla, tom. ii. p. 286. Lafitau, tom. i. p. 297, et seq.

(*h*) Rochefort, ch. xxiii. p. 553.

BOOK

I.

purchase. If success attended his measures, the feast and the triumph awaited his return. He exchanged his name a second time; assuming in future that of the most formidable Arrowauk that had fallen by his hand (*i*). He was permitted to appropriate to himself, as many of the captives as he thought fit, and his countrymen presented to his choice the most beautiful of their daughters in reward of his valour (*k*).

It was probably this last mentioned testimony of public esteem and gratitude that gave rise in these Islands to the institution of polygamy, which, as hath been already observed, prevailed universally among them, and still prevails among the Charaibes of South America (*l*);—an institution the more excusable, as their women, from religious motives, carefully avoided the nuptial intercourse after pregnancy (*m*). I am sorry to add, that the condition of these poor creatures was at the same time truly wretched. Though frequently bestowed as the prize of successful courage, the wife, thus honourably obtained, was soon considered of as little value as the captive. Deficient in those qualities which alone were estimable among the Charaibes, the females were treated rather as slaves than companions. They sustained every species of drudgery: they ground the maize, prepared the cassavi, gathered in the cotton and wove the hamack (*n*); nor were they allowed even the

(*i*) Rochefort, ch. xxiii. p. 553.

(*k*) Rochefort, ch. xxii. p. 546.

(*l*) Bancroft, p. 254.

(*m*) Rochefort, ch. xxii. p. 548. Du Tertre, tom. ii. p. 374.

(*n*) Purchas, vol. iv. p. 1272. Labat, tom. ii. p. 40.

privilege of eating in presence of their husbands (*o*): Under all these cruel circumstances, it is not wonderful that they were far less prolific than the women of Europe (*p*). But brutality towards their wives was not peculiar to the Charaibes. It has prevailed in all ages and countries among the uncivilized part of mankind; and the first visible proof that a people is emerging from savage manners, is a display of tenderness towards the female sex (*q*). C H A P.
II.

PERHAPS a more intimate knowledge (not now to be obtained) would have softened many of the shades which thus darken the character of these islanders, and have discovered

(*o*) Labat, tom. ii. p. 15 and 95.

(*p*) Lafitau, tom. i. p. 590.

(*q*) Father Joseph Gumilla, in his account of the nations bordering on the Orinoko, relates (tom. i. p. 207. Fr. translation) that the Charaibes of the Continent punish their women caught in adultery, like the ancient Israelites, “by stoning them to death before an assembly of the people;” but I do not find this fact recorded by any other writer; and as it is evidently brought forward to support the author’s hypothesis that the Americans are originally descended from the Jews, I suspect that it is not well founded:—at least there is no trace that such a custom existed among the insular Charaibes. Rochefort, speaking of the latter, observes, that before they had any intercourse with the Christians they had no established punishment for adultery, because (says he) “the crime itself was unknown.”—He adds, that when this, with other European vices, was introduced among them, the injured husband became his own avenger.—Labat’s reasoning on this head is too curious to be omitted: “Il n’y a que les femmes qui soient obligées à l’obéissance, et dont les hommes soient absolument les maîtres. Ils portent cette supériorité jusqu’à l’excès, et les tuent pour des fautes très légères. Un soupçon d’infidélité, bien ou mal fondé, suffit, sans autre formalité, pour les mettre en droit de leur casser la tête. *Cela est un peu sauvage à la vérité; mais c’est un frein bien propre pour retenir les femmes dans leur devoir.*” Tom. iv. p. 327.

BOOK

I.

some latent properties in their principles and conduct, tending to lessen, though not wholly to remove, the disgust we naturally feel in beholding human nature so debased and degraded; but of many particulars, wherein curiosity would desire to be gratified, we have no account. We know but little, for instance, concerning their domestic œconomy, their arts, manufactures and agriculture; their sense of filial and paternal obligations, or their religious rites and funeral ceremonies. Such further information however, in these and other respects, as authorities the least disputable afford, I have abridged in the following detached observations.

BESIDES the ornaments which we have noticed to have been worn by both sexes, the women, on arriving at the age of puberty, were distinguished also by a sort of buskin or half boot, made of cotton, which surrounded the small of each leg (*r*). A distinction, however, which such of their females as had been taken in the chance of war, dared not aspire to (*s*). In other respects both male and female appeared as naked as our first parents before the fall (*t*). Like them, as they knew no guilt, they knew no shame; nor was clothing thought necessary to personal comfort, where the chill blast of winter was never felt.

(*r*) Rochefort, liv. ii. c. ix. p. 446. Purchas, vol. iv. p. 1159. Labat, tom. ii. p. 12. The same sort of *brodequin*, or buskin, is worn by the female Hot-tentots, and other nations of Africa.

(*s*) Du Tertre, tom. ii. p. 394.

(*t*) Rochefort, liv. ii. c. ix. p. 441. Purchas, vol. iv. p. 1157.

THEIR hair was uniformly of a shining black, strait and coarse; but they dressed it with daily care, and adorned it with great art; the men, in particular, decorating their heads with feathers of various colours. As their hair thus constituted their chief pride, it was an unequivocal proof of the sincerity of their sorrow, when, on the death of a relation or friend, they cut it short (*u*) like their slaves and captives; to whom the privilege of wearing long hair was rigorously denied (*x*). Like most other nations of the New Hemisphere, they eradicated, with great nicety, the incipient beard (*y*), and all superfluous hairs on their bodies;—a circumstance which has given rise to a notion that all the Aborigines of America were naturally beardless. This opinion is indeed countenanced by many respectable writers, but after much enquiry, and some instances of ocular inspection, I am satisfied that it is groundless.

THE circumstance the most remarkable concerning their persons, was their strange practice of altering the natural configuration of the head. On the birth of a child, its tender and flexible skull was confined between two small pieces of wood, which, applied before and behind, and firmly bound together on each side, elevated the forehead, and occasioned it, and the back part of the skull, to resemble two sides of a square (*z*); an uncouth and frightful custom still observed, if I am rightly

(*u*) Rochefort, liv. ii. c. ix. p. 439. Du Tertre, tom. ii. p. 412.

(*x*) Du Tertre, tom. ii. p. 405. (*y*) Du Tertre, tom. ii. p. 392.

(*z*) Oviedo, lib. iii. Rochefort, liv. ii. c. ix.

B O O K I. informed, by the miserable remnant of Charaibes in the Island of St. Vincent (*a*).

THEY resided in villages which resembled an European encampment; for their cabins were built of poles fixed circularly in the ground, and drawn to a point at the top (*b*). They were then covered with leaves of the palm-tree. In the centre of each village was a building of superior magnitude to the rest. It was formed with great labour, and served as a public hall or state house (*c*), wherein we are assured that the men (excluding the women) had their meals in common; “ob-
“serving that law” (saith the Earl of Cumberland, who visited these Islands in 1596) “which in Lycurgus’s mouth was
“thought strange and needless (*d*).” These halls were also the theatres where their youth were animated to emulation, and trained to martial enterprize by the renown of their warriors, and the harangues of their orators.

THEIR arts and manufactures, though few, displayed a degree of ingenuity, which one would have scarcely expected to find amongst a people so little removed from a state of

(*a*) I have been told by anatomists, that the coronal suture of new-born children in the West Indies is commonly more open than that of infants born in colder climates, and the brain more liable to external injury. Perhaps, therefore, the Indian custom of depressing the *os frontis* and the occiput, was originally meant to assist the operation of nature in closing the skull.

(*b*) P. Martyr, decad. i. lib. ii.

(*c*) Ibid. Rochefort, liv. ii. c. xvi. Lafitau, tom. ii. p. 8.

(*d*) Purchas, vol. iv. p. 1159.

mere animal nature, as to reject all dress as superfluous. Columbus observed an abundance of substantial cotton cloth in all the islands which he visited, and the natives possessed the art of staining it with various colours, though the Charaibes delighted chiefly in red (*e*). Of this cloth they made hammocks, or hanging beds, such as are now used at sea;—for Europe has not only copied the pattern, but preserved also the original name (*f*).

THEY possessed likewise the art of making vessels of clay for domestic uses, which they baked in kilns like the potters of Europe. The ruins of many of these kilns were visible not long since in Barbadoes, where specimens of the manufacture are still frequently dug up; and Mr. Hughes, the historian of that island, observes, that they far surpass the earthen ware made by the negroes, in thinness, smoothness and beauty (*g*). Besides those, they invented various other utensils for economical purposes, which are enumerated by Labat. The baskets which they composed of the fibres of the palmeto leaves, were singularly elegant, and we are told that their bows and arrows, and other weapons, displayed a neatness and polish, which the

(*e*) Labat, tom. ii. p. 40.

(*f*) All the early Spanish and French writers expressly assert, that the original Indian name for their swinging beds was *amack*, or *hamack*;—but Dr. Johnson derives the English word *hammock* from the Saxon.

(*g*) Nat. Hist. of Barbadoes, p. 8. Ligon, who visited this island in 1647, declares that some of these vessels, which he saw, even surpassed any earthenware made in England “both” (to use his own words) “in fineness of mettle, and curiosity of turninge.”

BOOK I. most skilful European artist would have found it difficult to have excelled, even with European tools.

OF the nature and extent of their agriculture, the accounts are slender and unsatisfactory. We are told, on good authority, that among the Charaibes of the Continent, there was no division of land, every one cultivating in proportion to his exigencies (*b*). Where no criminal jurisdiction is established, the idea of private property must necessarily be unknown or imperfect; and in these islands where land is scarce, it seems probable that, as among some of the tribes of South America (*i*), cultivation was carried on by the joint labour of each separate community, and their harvests deposited in public granaries, whence each family received its proportion of the public stock.—Rochefort indeed observes, that all their interests were in common.

THEIR food, both vegetable and animal, excepting in the circumstance of their eating human flesh, seems to have been the same, in most respects, as that of the natives of the larger islands, which shall be described hereafter. But although their appetites were voracious (*k*), they rejected many of the best bounties of nature. Of some animals they held the flesh in abhorrence; these were the pecary, or Mexican hog, the manati, or sea cow, and the turtle (*l*). Labat observes, that they

(*b*) Bancroft, p. 254.

(*i*) Gumilla, tom. i. p. 265.

(*k*) Gumilla, tom. ii. p. 12, 70, 237. Lafitau, tom. i. p. 515.

(*l*) Rochefort, liv. ii. c. 16.

scrupled likewise to eat the eel, which the rivers in several of the islands, supply in great plenty (*m*).

C H A P.

II.

THE striking conformity of these, and some other of their prejudices and customs, to the practices of the Jews, has not escaped the notice of historians (*n*).—But whether the Charaibes were actuated by religious motives, in thus abstaining from those things which many nations account very wholesome and delicious food, we are no where sufficiently informed.

IT most probably was, however, the influence of superstition that gave rise to these and other ceremonies equally repugnant to the dictates of nature and common sense;—one of which appears at first extraordinary and incredible, but it is too well attested to be denied. On the birth of his first son the father retired to his bed, and fasted with a strictness that often endangered life (*o*). Lafitau, observing that the same custom was practised by the Tybarenians of Asia, and the Iberians or ancient inhabitants of Spain, and is still in use among the people of Japan, not only urges this circumstance as a proof, among others, that the new world was peopled from the old, but pretends to discover in it also some traces of the doctrine of original sin: he supposes that the severe penance

(*m*) Labat, tom. iv. p. 304.

(*n*) Gumilla; Adair, Du Tertre, and others.

(*o*) Du Tertre, tom. ii. 371, 373. Rochefort, liv. ii. c. xxiii. p. 550. Labat, tom. iv. p. 368. Lafitau, tom. i. p. 49. Nieuhoff relates, that this practice prevails likewise among the natives of Brasil. Churchill's Voyages, vol. ii. p. 133.

BOOK

I.



thus voluntarily submitted to by the father, was at first instituted in the pious view of protecting his issue from the contagion of hereditary guilt, averting the wrath of offended omnipotence at the crime of our first parents, and expiating *their* guilt by *his* sufferings (*p*).

THE ancient Thracians, as we are informed by Herodotus, when a male child was brought into the world, lamented over him in sad vaticination of his destiny, and they rejoiced when he was released by death from those miseries which they considered as his inevitable portion in life: but, whatever might have been the motives that first induced the Charaibes to do penance on such occasions, it would seem that grief and dejection had no great share in it; for the ceremony of fasting was immediately succeeded by rejoicing and triumph, by drunkenness and debauchery. Their lamentations for the dead, seem to have arisen from the more laudable dictates of genuine nature; for, unlike the Thracians on these solemnities, they not only despoiled their hair, as we have before related, but when the master of the family died, the surviving relations, after burying the corpse in the centre of his own dwelling, with many demonstrations of unaffected grief, quitted the house altogether, and erected another in a distant situation (*q*).

(*p*) Lafitau, tom. i. p. 257.

(*q*) Labat, tom. iv. p. 367. They placed the dead body in the grave in a sitting posture, with the knees to the chin. Lafitau, tom. ii. p. 407. Du Tertre, tom ii. p. 402.

UNFORTUNATELY, however, if now and then we distinguish among them some faint traces of rational piety, our satisfaction is of short continuance ;

C H A P.

II.

No light, but rather darkness visible,
Serves only to discover sights of woe: MILTON.

or it is a light that glimmers for a moment, and then sets in blood.

IT is asserted, and I believe with truth, that the expectation of a future state has prevailed amongst all mankind, in all ages and countries of the world. It is certain, that it prevailed among the Charaibes (*r*) ; who not only believed that death was not the final extinction of their being, but pleased themselves also with the fond conceit that their departed relations were secret spectators of their conduct ;—that they still sympathized in their sufferings, and participated in their welfare. To these notions, so flattering to our wishes,—perhaps congenial to our nature,—they added others of a dreadful tendency ; for, considering the soul as susceptible of the same impressions, and obnoxious to the same passions, as when allied to the body, it was thought a religious duty to their deceased heroes, to sacrifice at their funerals some of the captives which had been taken in battle (*s*). Immortality seemed a curse without military glory : they allotted to the virtuous and the brave the enjoyment of supreme felicity, with their wives and their cap-

(*r*) Rochefort, liv. ii. c. 14. 485. Du Tertre, tom. ii. p. 372.

(*s*) Rochefort, c. xix. p. 484. Du Tertre, c. ii. p. 412. Purchas, vol. iv. p. 1274.

BOOK

I.

tives, in a sort of Mahometan paradise. To the degenerate and the cowardly they assigned a far different portion: these they doomed to everlasting banishment beyond the mountains;—to unremitting labour in employments that disgrace manhood;—and this disgrace they supposed would be heightened by the greatest of all afflictions, captivity and servitude among the Arrowauks (*t*).

ONE would imagine that this idea of a state of retribution after death, necessarily flowed from a well-founded belief in the existence of an all-wise and almighty Governor and Judge of the Universe; but we are told, notwithstanding, that the minds of the Charaibes were not elevated to this height. “They admitted,” says Rochefort; “that the earth was their bountiful parent, which yielded them all the good things of life, but they were so lamentably sunk in darkness and brutality, as to have formed no conception of its beneficent Creator, through the continual energy of whose divine influence alone it yields any thing. They had not even a name for the Deity (*u*).” Other writers, however, of equal authority (*x*), and even the same writer elsewhere (*y*), present us with a different representation in this respect, and allow that the Charaibes entertained an awful sense (perplexed indeed and indistinct) of one great universal cause,—of a superior, wise, and invifible Being, of absolute and irresistibile

(*t*) Rochefort, c. xiv. p. 485.

(*u*) Rochefort, c. xiii. p. 469.

(*x*) Du Tertre, tom. ii. p. 364.

(*y*) Rochefort, c. xiv.

power (*z*).—Like the ancient heathens, they admitted also the agency of subordinate divinities.—They even supposed, that each individual person had his peculiar protector or tutelary deity (*a*). Nor is it true, as affirmed by some authors, that they had no notion of practical worship; for, besides the funeral ceremonies above-mentioned, which arose surely from a sense of mistaken piety, they had their lares and penates, gods of their own creating, intended as symbols probably of their invisible deities, to whom they offered sacrifices, similar to those of the ancient Romans in their days of simplicity and virtue (*b*). It was their custom to erect in every cottage a rustic altar, composed of banana leaves and rushes, whereon they occasionally placed the earliest of their fruits, and the choicest of their viands, as humble peace-offerings through the mediation of their inferior deities to incensed Omnipot-

(*z*) The Galibis Indians, or Charaibes of South America, from whom I have supposed the Insular Charaibes to have been immediately descended, named the Supreme Being *Tamoussi*, or *Universal Father*.—Barrere.

(*a*) Rochefort, c. xiii. p. 471.

(*b*) Mr. Hughes, in his History of Barbadoes, makes mention of many fragments of Indian idols dug up in that island, which were composed of the same materials as their earthen vessels above-mentioned.—“I saw the head of one” (continues he) “which alone weighed above sixty pounds. This, before it was broken off, stood upon an oval pedestal about three feet in height. The heads of all the others were very small. These lesser idols were in all probability their *Penates*, made small for the ease and conveniency of being carried with them in their several journeys, as the larger sort were perhaps designed for some stated places of worship.”—

Natural History of Barbadoes, p. 7.

BOOK

I.

tence (*c*); for it is admitted, that their devotions consisted less in the effusions of thankfulness, than in deprecations of wrath;—but herein neither were they distinguishable from the rest of mankind, either in the old world or the new. We can all forget benefits though we implore mercy. Strange however it is, that the same authors who accuse them of atheism, should accuse them likewise, in the same moment, of polytheism and idolatry.

ATHEISTS they certainly were not; and though they did not maintain the doctrine of pure Theism, yet their idolatry was probably founded on circumstances, the moral influence of which has not hitherto, I think, been sufficiently noticed. If their devotion, as we have seen, was the offspring, not of gratitude, but of fear;—if they were less sensible of the goodness, than terrified at the judgments of the Almighty; it should also be remembered, that in these climates the tremendous irregularities of nature are dreadfully frequent;—the hurricane that sweeps nations to the deep, and the earthquake that swallows continents in his bosom.—Let us not then hastily affix the charge of impiety on these simple people, if, when they beheld the elements combine for their destruction, they considered the Divine Being as infinite indeed in power, but severe in his justice, and inexorable in his anger. Under this impression, it is not wonderful that the mind, humbled to the dust in the consciousness of its own imbecility, and scarce

(*c*) Lafitau, tom. i. p. 179. Rochefort, c. xiii. p. 472. Du Tertre, tom. ii. p. 366.

daring to lift up a thought to the Great Cause of all things, should fondly wish for some mild and gracious interpreter; some amiable intermediate agent in whom to repose with confidence, as in a guardian and a friend. This desire encreasing, is at length exalted to belief. The soul, seeking refuge from its own apprehensions, creates imaginary beings, by whose mediation it hopes to render itself less despicable in the sight of the Supreme. To these its devotions are intrusted, and its adorations paid: and while we lament the blindness of these poor savages, and exult in our own superiority in this respect, let us not forget, that in the most cultivated periods of the human understanding, (before the light of revelation was graciously displayed) a similar superstition was practised by all the various nations of the heathen world; of which, not one perhaps had so strong an apology to plead as the Charaibes.

THESE observations, however, extend only to the fair side of their religion, the worship of benevolent deities. A darker superstition likewise prevailed among all the unenlightened inhabitants of these climates; for they not only believed in the existence of demons and evil spirits, but offered to them also by the hands of their *Boyez*, or pretended magicians, sacrifices and worship; wounding themselves, on such solemnities, with an instrument made of the teeth of the agouti; which inflicted horrible gashes; conceiving, perhaps, that the malignant powers delighted in groans and misery, and were to be appeased only by human blood (*d*). I am of opinion, nevertheless,

BOOK

I.

that even this latter species of idolatry originated in reverential piety, and an awful sense of almighty power and infinite perfection. That we receive both good and evil at the hands of God, and that the Supreme Being is equally wise and benevolent in the dispensation of both, are truths which we are taught, as well by cultivated reason, as by holy writ; but they are truths, to the right apprehension of which uncivilized man was perhaps at all times unequal. The savage, indeed, amidst the destructive terrors of the hurricane and the earthquake, might easily conclude that nothing less than Omnipotence itself, "visiting the nations in his wrath," could thus harrow up the world; but the lesser calamities of daily occurrence,—the various appearances of physical and moral evil which hourly embitter life, he dared not ascribe to an all-perfect and merciful Being. To his limited conception, such a conclusion was derogatory from divine justice, and irreconcilable with infinite wisdom. To what then would he impute these terrifying and inexplicable phenomena, but to the malignant influence of impure spirits and aerial demons? The profanations built on such notions certainly throw a light on the Christian religion, if they serve not as a collateral evidence of its divine origin.

A MINUTE detail of the rites and ceremonies which these, and other religious tenets, gave birth to among the Charaibes, most of them unamiable, many of them cruel, together with an illustration of their conformity to the superstitions of the Pagan theology, would lead me too far; nor is such a disquisition necessary. It is sufficient for me to have shewn, that the foundations of true religion, the belief of a Deity, and the ex-

pectation of a future state, (to borrow the expression of an eloquent prelate) “are no less conformable to the first natural apprehensions of the untutored mind, than to the soundest principles of philosophy (*c*).”

CHAP.

II.

I HAVE thus selected and combined, from a mass of discordant materials, a few striking particulars in the character, manners and customs of the ancient inhabitants of the Charaibean Islands. The picture is not pleasing; but as I have elsewhere observed, it may lead to some important conclusions; for, besides correcting many wild and extravagant fancies which are afloat in the world respecting the influence of climate on the powers of the mind, it may tend to demonstrate the absurdity of that hypothesis of some eminent philosophers, which pronounces savage life the genuine source of unpolluted happiness;—falsely deeming it a state conformable to our nature, and constituting the perfection of it. It is indeed no easy task, as Rousseau observes, to discriminate properly between what is originally natural, and what is acquired, in the present constitution of man: yet thus much may be concluded, from the account I have given of the Charaibes, that they derived their furious and sanguinary disposition—not from the dictates of nature—but from the perversion and abuse of some of her noblest endowments. Civilization and science would not only have given them gentler manners, but probably have eradicated also many of their barbarous rites and gloomy superstitions, either by the introduction of a purer religion, or by giving

(*c*) Bishop of Chester's Sermons.

BOOK

I.



energy and effect to those latent important principles, which I have shewn had a foundation among them. But while I admit the necessity and benevolent efficacy of improved manners and social intercourse ; conceiving that man by the cultivation of his reason, and the exercise of his faculties, alone answers the end of his creation ; I am far from concurring with another class of philosophers, who, widely differing from the former, consider a state of pure nature as a state of unrelenting ferocity and reciprocal hostility ; maintaining, that all the soft and tender affections are not originally implanted in us, but are superinduced by education and reflection. A retrospect to what has been related of the Charaibes will shew the fallacy of this opinion. Man, as he comes from the hands of his Creator, is every where constituted a mild and a merciful being. It was by rigid discipline and barbarous example, that the Charaibe nation trained up their youth to suffer with fortitude, and to inflict without pity the utmost exertions of human vengeance. The dictates of nature were as much violated by those enormities of savage life, as they are suppressed by the cold unfeeling apathy of philosophical refinement. Still, however, to the honour of humanity, it is as certain that compassion and kindness are among the earliest propensities of our nature, as that they constitute the chief ornament and the happiness of it. Of this truth our next researches will furnish a pleasing example.

C H A P. III.

Of the Natives of Hispaniola, Cuba, Jamaica, and Porto-Rico.—Their Origin.—Numbers.—Persons.—Genius and Dispositions.—Government and Religion.—Miscellaneous Observations respecting their Arts, Manufactures and Agriculture, Cruelty of the Spaniards, &c.

I AM now to give some account of a mild and comparatively cultivated people, the ancient natives of Hispaniola (*a*), Cuba (*b*), Jamaica, and Porto-Rico (*c*); for there is no doubt that the inhabitants of all those islands were of one common origin,—speaking the same language,—possessing the same institutions, and practising similar superstitions. Columbus himself treats of them as such; and the testimony of many cotemporary historians confirm his opinion. It appears likewise

C H A P.
III.
—

(*a*) *Hispaniola* was called by the natives *Haiti* or *Ayti*, which signifies mountainous; and I conceive the same word has the same meaning in the islands of the south sea.

(*b*) *Cuba* was the Indian name. It was not discovered to be an island until the year 1508, when a captain, named Sebastian, sailed round it by order of Nicholas Ovando. It was first planted by the Spaniards in 1511; in that year Jago Velasquez went thither with 300 men, and settled on the south coast, near to a port which he called by his own name, (a name it still bears) and which for extent and security may be reckoned one of the finest in the world.

(*c*) The Indian name of *Porto-Rico* was *Boriqua*. It was discovered by Columbus, in his second voyage, but first explored by Juan Ponce de Leon, in 1508.

BOOK

I.

from the information of Las Casas, the Bishop of Chiapa, to the Emperor Charles V. that most of the natives of Trinidad (*d*) were of the same nation; the extent and natural strength of that island, as of the others above-mentioned, having protected them, in a great measure, from the depredations of the Charaibes.

I HAVE elsewhere related that they were considered by these Barbarians as descended from a Colony of Arrowauks, a people of Guiana; and there can be no good reason to suppose that the Charaibes were misinformed in this particular.—The evidence of Raleigh, and others who visited both Guiana and Trinidad two centuries ago, might be adduced in support of their opinion. These voyagers pronounce the ancient inhabitants of Trinidad to belong precisely to the Arwacks or Arrowauk nation of the Continent; a race of Indians to whose noble qualities the most honourable testimony is borne by every traveller that has visited them, and recorded his observations. And here, all enquiry concerning the origin of our islanders seems to terminate. It is indeed extremely probable that all the various nations of this part of the new world, except only the Charaibes, emigrated anciently from the great hive of the Mexican empire. Juan de Grijalva, one of the adventurers from Cuba in 1518, found a people who spoke the language

(*d*) Trinidad was discovered by Columbus in his third voyage, and was named by him after the Holy Trinity, because, says Herrera, having been in great danger, in a violent storm, he made a vow to give that name to the first land he should find; soon after which a sailor, in the main-top, saw three points of land, whereby the name fitted every way to his vow.

of that island, on the coast of Jucatan (*c*); but at what period such emigrations were made; whether the Charaibes were previously possessed of the widely extended coast that bounds the Atlantic, or, in posterior ages, accidentally found their way thither by sea, from the ancient Continent—(perhaps by their invasion giving birth to that hereditary and unconquerable hatred which still prevails between them and the other Indian nations)—these are points concerning which, as it is impossible to determine, it is in vain to enquire.

IN estimating the number of our islanders, when first discovered by Columbus, historians widely differ. Las Casas computes them at six millions in the whole; but the natives of Hispaniola were reckoned by Oviedo at one million only, and by Martyr, who wrote on the authority of Columbus, at 1,200,000, and this last account is probably the most correct. Judging of the other islands by that, and supposing the population of each to be nearly the same in proportion to its extent, the whole number will fall greatly short of the computation of Las Casas. Perhaps if we fix on three millions, instead of six, as the total, we shall approach as near the truth as possible, on a question that admits not of minute accuracy. Indeed such are the accounts of the horrible carnage of these poor people by the Spaniards, that we are naturally led to hope their original numbers must have been greatly exaggerated; first by the associates of Columbus, from a fond and excusable propensity to magnify the merit and importance of their disco-

(*c*) P. Martyr, Decad. iii. lib. x.

BOOK

I.

veries, as undoubtedly they were afterwards by the worthy prelate I have quoted, in the warmth of his honest indignation at the bloody proceedings of his countrymen: with whom, indeed, every man of a humane and reflecting mind, must blush to confess himself of the same nature and species!

BUT, not to anticipate observations that will more properly appear hereafter, I shall now proceed to the consideration,—
I. Of their persons and personal endowments: II. Their intellectual faculties and dispositions: III. Their political institutions: IV. Their religious rites. Such subordinate particulars as are not easily reducible to either of those heads, will conclude the present chapter.

I. BOTH men and women wore nothing more than a slight covering of cotton cloth round the waist; but in the women it extended to the knees: the children of both sexes appeared entirely naked. In stature they were taller but less robust than the Charaibes (*f*). Their colour was a clear brown; not deeper, in general, according to Columbus, than that of a Spanish peasant who has been much exposed to the wind and the sun (*g*). Like the Charaibes they altered the natural configuration of the head in infancy; but after a different mode (*b*); and by this practice, says Herrera, the crown was so strengthened that a Spanish broad-sword, instead of cleaving the skull

(*f*) Oviedo, Som.

(*g*) F. Col. c. xxiii.

(*b*) The *sinciput*, or fore-part of the head from the eye-brows to the coronal suture, was depressed, which gave an unnatural thickness and elevation to the *occiput*, or hinder part of the skull.

at a stroke, would frequently break short upon it (*i*); an illustration which gives an admirable idea of the clemency of their conquerors! Their hair was uniformly black, without any tendency to curl; their features were hard and unsightly; the face broad, and the nose flat; but their eyes streamed with good nature, and altogether there was something pleasing and inviting in the countenances of most of them, which proclaimed a frank and gentle disposition. It was an honest face, coarse, but not gloomy; for it was enlivened by confidence, and softened by compassion.

MUCH has been suggested by modern philosophers, concerning a supposed feebleness in their persons and constitutions. They are represented to have been incapable of the smallest degree of labour, incurably indolent, and insensible even to the attractions of beauty, and the influence of love (*k*). This wonderful debility and coldness have been attributed by some writers to a vegetable diet: by others, it is pretended that they derived from nature less appetite for food than the natives of Europe; but nothing can more strongly demonstrate the indolent inattention of historians, than their combining these circumstances in one and the same character. An insensibility, or contemptuous disregard, towards the female sex, was a feature peculiar to the Charaibes; who however, as we have seen, were robust and vigorous in their persons, and insatiably voracious of food. It constituted no part of the disposition

(*i*) Herrera, lib. i. c. xvi. who copies this circumstance from Oviedo.

(*k*) Robertson, Buffon, De Pauw, and others.

BOOK

I.

of our islanders; amongst whom an attachment to the sex was remarkably conspicuous. Love, with this happy people, was not a transient and youthful ardour only; but the source of all their pleasures, and the chief business of life: for not being, like the Charaibes, oppressed by the weight of perpetual solicitude, and tormented by an unquenchable thirst of revenge, they gave full indulgence to the instincts of nature, while the influence of the climate heightened the sensibility of the passions (l).

IN truth, an excessive sensuality was among the greatest defects in their character: and to this cause alone is imputed, by some writers, the origin of that dreadful disease, with the infliction of which they have almost revenged the calamities brought upon them by the avarice of Europe:—if indeed the venereal contagion was first introduced into Spain from these islands; a conclusion to which, notwithstanding all that has been written in support of it, an attentive enquirer will still hesitate to subscribe (m).

THAT

(l) See Oviedo, lib. v. c. iii. We have nearly the same account at this day of the Arrowauks of Guiana. “In their natural disposition” (says Banerost) “they are amorous and wanton;” and Barrere observes, “*ils sont lubriques au suprême degré.*” It is related by Herrera, that a deity similar to the Venus of antiquity, was one of the Divinities of the *Tlascalans*, a people of Mexico.

(m) “The venereal disease” (says Oviedo) “was certainly introduced into Europe from these islands, where the best medicine for the cure of it, the *Guaiacum*, is also found; the Almighty so remembering mercy in judgment that, when our sins provoke punishment, he sends likewise a remedy.—I was acquainted with many persons who accompanied Columbus in his first and second voyages, and suffered of this disease; one of whom was Pedro Margara
“rite,

THAT a people who possessed the means of gratifying every inclination without labour, should sometimes incline to be indolent, is a circumstance not very extraordinary. As the wants

C H A P.

III.

“rite, a man much respected of the King and Queen. In the year 1496 it began to spread in Europe, and the physicians were wholly at a loss in what manner to treat it.—When, after this, Gonzales Fernandes de Cordova was sent with an army by his Catholic Majesty on behalf of Ferdinand the Second King of Naples, some infected persons accompanied that army, and by intercourse with the women, spread the disease among the Italians and the French; both which nations had successively the honour of giving it a name; but in truth it came originally from Hispaniola, where it was very common, as was likewise the remedy.”

This account is sufficiently particular; nevertheless there is reason to believe that the venereal infection was known in Europe many centuries before the discovery of America; although it is possible it might have broke out with renewed violence about the time of Columbus's return from his first expedition.—This was the era of wonder, and probably the infrequency of the contagion before that period, gave colour to a report, perhaps at first maliciously propagated by some who envied the success of Columbus, *that this disease was one of the fruits of his celebrated enterprize*. It is impossible, in the space of a marginal note, to enter deeply into this subject; neither does the full investigation of it come within the design of my work. I therefore refer such of my readers as are desirous of forming a decided opinion on the question, to the *Philos. Transactions*, vol. xxvii. and vol. xxxi. (No. 365 and No. 11) also to two learned treatises on the subject by Mr. Sanches, published at Paris 1772 and 1774, and to the authorities referred to by Mr. Forster in his “*Observations made during a Voyage round the World*,” p. 492. In Stow's *Survey of London*, vol. ii. p. 7. is preserved a copy of the rules or regulations established by Parliament in the eighth year of Henry the Second, for the government of the licensed stews in Southwark, among which I find the following, “No stewholder to keep any woman that hath the perilous infirmity of burning.” This was 330 years before the voyage of Columbus.

of

BOOK

I.

of nature were supplied almost spontaneously, and no covering was absolutely requisite but the shade, that necessity which urges men to action, and, by exercise, invigorates the fibres, was here wholly unknown. It is probable therefore that in muscular strength the natives were inferior to their invaders, and being less accustomed to labour, they might also require less nourishment. These conclusions may be admitted without supposing any degradation of their nature, and with no very unfavourable impression of the climate. Their limbs however were pliant and active, and in their motions they displayed both gracefulness and ease. Their agility was eminently conspicuous in their dances; wherein they delighted and excelled; devoting the cool hours of night to this employment (*n*). It was their custom, says Herrera, to dance from evening to the dawn; and although fifty thousand men and women were frequently assembled together on these occasions, they seemed actuated by one common impulse, keeping time by responsive motions of their hands, feet, and bodies, with an exactness that was wonderful (*o*). These public dances (for they had others highly licentious) were appropriated to particular solemnities, and being accompanied with historical songs, were called *Arietoes*; a singular feature in their political institutions, of which I shall presently speak.

BESIDES the exercise of dancing, another diversion was prevalent among them which they called *Bato*; and it appears

(*n*) P. Martyr, Decad. iii. c. vii.

(*o*) Herrera, lib. ix. c. ii.

from the account given of it by the Spanish historians (*p*), that it had a distant resemblance to the English game of cricket; for the players were divided into two parties, which alternately changed places, and the sport consisted in dexterously throwing and returning from one party to the other, an elastic ball; which however was not caught in the hand, or returned with an instrument; but received on the head, the elbow, or the foot, and the dexterity and force with which it was thence repelled, was astonishing and inimitable.—Such exertions belong not to a people incurably enervated and slothful.

II. THEY are, nevertheless, pronounced by many writers, to have been naturally inferior to the natives of Europe, not only in bodily strength, but likewise in genius and natural endowments. This assertion has I think been advanced with more confidence than proof. That the mind, like the body, acquires strength by employment, is indeed a truth which we all acknowledge, because we all experience it; and it requires no great sagacity to discover, that ingenuity is seldom very powerfully exerted to gratify appetites which do not exist, or to guard against inconveniences which are not felt. If our islanders therefore rose in some respects to a degree of refinement not often observable in savage life, it may justly be presumed that in a state of society productive of new desires and artificial necessities, their capacities would have been susceptible

(*p*) Oviedo, lib. vi. c. ii. Herrera, lib. iii. c. iv.

BOOK

I.

of still further improvement. Their situation alone, without recurring to the various other causes assigned by philosophers, sufficiently accounts for the paucity of their ideas. Men, without anxiety for the future, have little reflection on the past. What they wanted in excited energy of mind, was however abundantly supplied by the softer affections; by sweetness of temper, and native goodness of disposition. All writers who have treated of their character, agree that they were unquestionably the most gentle and benevolent of the human race. Though not blessed with the light of revelation, they practised one of the noblest precepts of Christianity, forgiveness of their enemies: laying all that they possessed at the feet of their oppressors; courting their notice, and preventing their wishes, with such fondness and assiduity, as one would have thought might have disarmed habitual cruelty, and melted bigotry into tenderness (*q*).

AMONG other instances of their generous and compassionate turn of mind, the following is not the least remarkable. Soon after Columbus's first arrival at Hispaniola, one of his ships was wrecked on the coast. The natives, scorning to derive advantage to themselves from the distress of the strangers (unconscious indeed of the calamities which their arrival was soon to bring upon them) beheld the accident with the liveliest emotions of sorrow, and hastened to their relief. A thousand canoes were instantly in motion, busily employed in conveying the seamen and cargo ashore; by which timely assistance,

(*q*) Martyr. Herrera. F. Columbus, c. xxvii. xxxii. &c. &c.

not a life was lost; and of the goods and provisions that were saved from the wreck, not the smallest article was embezzled. Such was their celerity and good will on this occasion, says Martyr, that no friend for friend, or brother for brother, in distress, could have manifested stronger tokens of sympathy and pity (*r*). Other historians still heighten the picture; for they relate that Guacanahari, the sovereign of that part of the country, perceiving that, notwithstanding the efforts of his people, the ship itself, and great part of the cargo were irrecoverably sunk, waited on Columbus to condole with him on the occasion; and while this poor Indian lamented his misfortune in terms which excited surprize and admiration, he offered the Admiral (the tears flowing copiously down his cheeks as he spoke) all that he himself possessed, in reparation of his loss (*s*).

THIS benevolence, unexampled in the history of civilized nations, was soon basely requited by the conduct of a band of robbers, whom Columbus, with no ill intention, left in the island, on his departure for Europe. Guacanahari however was covered with wounds in defending them from his injured countrymen (*t*); to whose just resentment the Spanish rustians at length fell a sacrifice; but their anger was of short duration. On Columbus's return, in his second voyage, their fondness revived; and for a considerable time the Spaniards lived among them in

(*r*) Martyr, Decad. i. lib. i.

(*s*) Fer. Col. c. xxxii. Herrera, Decad. i. lib. i. c. xviii.

(*t*) Herrera, Decad. i. lib. ii. c. ix. Fer. Col. c. xl.

BOOK

I.

perfect security, exploring the interior parts of the country, both in companies and individually, not only without molestation, but invited thereto by the natives. When any of the Spaniards came near to a village, the most ancient and venerable of the Indians, or the Cacique himself, if present, came out to meet them, and gently conducted them into their habitations, seated them on stools of ebony curiously ornamented. These benches seem to have been seats of honour reserved for their guests;—for the Indians threw themselves on the ground, and kissing the hands and feet of the Spaniards, offered them fruits and the choicest of their viands; entreating them to prolong their stay, with such solicitude and reverence as demonstrated that they considered them as beings of a superior nature, whose presence consecrated their dwellings, and brought a blessing with it (*u*).

THE reception which Bartholomew Columbus, who was appointed Lieutenant, or Deputy Governor, in the absence of the Admiral, afterwards met with, in his progress through the island to levy tributes from the several Caciques or Princes, manifested not only kindness and submission, but on many occasions munificence, and even a high degree of politeness. These Caciques had all heard of the wonderful eagerness of the strangers for gold; and such of them as possessed any of this precious metal, willingly presented all that they had to the Deputy Governor. Others, who had not the means of obtaining gold, brought provisions and

(*u*) Herrera, Decad. i. lib. i. c. xiv. F. Col. c. xxvii.

cotton in great abundance (x).—Among the latter, was Behechio, a powerful Cacique, who invited the Lieutenant and his attendants to his dominions; and the entertainment which they received from this hospitable chief is thus described by Martyr. As they approached the king's dwelling, they were met by his wives, to the number of thirty, carrying branches of the palm-tree in their hands; who first saluted the Spaniards with a solemn dance, accompanied with a general song. These matrons were succeeded by a train of virgins, distinguished as such by their appearance; the former wearing aprons of cotton cloth, while the latter were arrayed only in the innocence of pure nature. Their hair was tied simply with a fillet over their foreheads, or suffered to flow gracefully on their shoulders and bosoms. Their limbs were finely proportioned, and their complexions, though brown, were smooth, shining and lovely. The Spaniards were struck with admiration, believing that they beheld the dryads of the woods, and the nymphs of the fountains, realizing ancient fable. The branches which they bore in their hands, they now delivered with lowly obeisance to the Lieutenant, who, entering the palace, found a plentiful, and, according to the Indian mode of living, a splendid repast already provided. As night approached, the Spaniards were conducted to separate cottages, wherein each of them was accommodated with a cotton hammock; and the next morning they were again entertained with dancing and singing. This was followed by matches of wrestling and running for prizes; after which two

(x) P. Martyr, Decad. i. lib. v.

BOOK

I.

great bodies of armed Indians unexpectedly appeared, and a mock engagement ensued; exhibiting their modes of attack and defence in their wars with the Charaibes. For three days were the Spaniards thus royally entertained, and on the fourth, the affectionate Indians regretted their departure.

III. THE submissive and respectful deportment of these placid people towards their superiors, and those they considered as such, was derived probably, in some degree, from the nature of their government; which, contrary to that of the Charaibes under a similar climate, was monarchical and even absolute. The regal authority however, though not circumscribed by positive institutions, was tempered into great mildness, by that constitutional benevolence which predominated throughout every part of their conduct, from the highest to the lowest. The sympathy which they manifested towards the distress of others, proves that they were not wretched themselves; for in a state of absolute slavery and misery, men are commonly devoid both of virtue and pity.

THEIR Kings, as we have seen, were called Caciques, and their power was hereditary:—But there were also subordinate Chieftains, or Princes, who were tributaries to the Sovereign of each district. Thus the territory in Hispaniola, anciently called Xaraguay, extending from the plain of Leogane to the Westernmost part of the island, was the kingdom of the Cacique Behechio, whom I have mentioned above; but it appears from Martyr, that no less than thirty-two inferior chieftains or nobles had jurisdiction

jurisdiction within that space of country, who were accountable to the supreme authority of Behechio (*y*). They seem to have somewhat resembled the ancient barons or feudatories of Europe; holding their possessions by the tenure of service. Oviedo relates, that they were under the obligation of personally attending the Sovereign, both in peace and war, whenever commanded so to do (*z*). It is to be lamented, that the Spanish historians afford very little information concerning this order of nobles, or the nature and extent of their subordinate jurisdiction.

THE whole island of Hispaniola was divided into five great kingdoms (*a*); of two of which, when Columbus first landed, Guacanahari and Behechio were absolute sovereigns.—A third principal Cacique was Cuanaboa, whose history is remarkable: He had been originally a War Captain among a body of Charaibes, who had invaded the dominions of Behechio, and, on condition of preventing the further incursions of his countrymen, had received his sister, the beautiful Anacoana, in marriage; together with an extent of country, which he had converted into a separate kingdom. The establishment of this leader and his followers in Hispaniola, had introduced into this part of the island the Charaibean language, and also the use of the bow and arrow (*b*); a weapon with the practice of which the natives of the larger islands were generally unacquainted. Cuanaboa however still retained his ferocious disposition, and having been accused by Guacanahari before Christopher Columbus,

(*y*) P. Martyr, Decad. i. lib. v.

(*z*) Oviedo, lib. iii. c. iv.

(*a*) Oviedo, lib. iii. c. iv.

(*b*) Oviedo, lib. iii.

BOOK

I.

of murdering some of the Spaniards, was ordered by that commander to be sent to Spain: but the ship perished at sea. The sad fate of his unfortunate widow, the innocent Anacoana, who was most atrociously murdered in 1505, by Ovando, the Governor of Hispaniola, for no cause, that I can discover, but her fond attachment to Bartholomew Columbus, having been related at large in the late American history, need not be repeated here.

THE islands of Cuba and Jamaica were divided, like Hispaniola, into many principalities or kingdoms; but we are told that the whole extent of Porto Rico was subject to one Cacique only (*c*). It has been remarked, that the dignity of these Chieftains was hereditary; but, if Martyr is to be credited, the law of succession among them, was different from that of all other people; for he observes (*d*), that the Caciques bequeathed the supreme authority to the children of their sisters, according to seniority, disinheriting their own offspring; “being certain, adds Martyr, that, by this policy, they preferred the blood royal; which might not happen to be the case, in advancing any of the children of their numerous wives.” The relation of Oviedo is somewhat different, and seems more probable: he remarks, that one of the wives of each Cacique was particularly distinguished above the rest, and appears to have been considered by the people at large as the reigning Queen (*e*); that the children of this lady, according to priority

(*c*) P. Martyr, Decad. i. lib. ii.

(*d*) Decad. iii. c. ix.

(*e*) Oviedo, lib. v. c. iii.

of birth, succeeded to the father's honours; but, in default of issue by the favourite Princess, the sisters of the Cacique, if there were no surviving brothers, took place of the Cacique's own children by his other wives. Thus Anacoana, on the death of Behechio her brother, became Queen of Xaraguay (*f*). It is obvious that this regulation was intended to prevent the mischiefs of a disputed succession, among children whose pretensions were equal.

THE principal Cacique was distinguished by regal ornaments, and numerous attendants. In travelling through his dominions, he was commonly borne on men's shoulders, after a manner very much resembling the use of the palanqueen in the East Indies (*g*). According to Martyr (*b*), he was regarded by all his subjects with such reverence, as even exceeded the bounds of nature and reason; for if he ordered any of them to cast themselves headlong from a high rock, or to drown themselves in the sea, alledging no cause but his sovereign pleasure, he was obeyed without a murmur: opposition to the supreme authority, being considered, not only as unavailing, but impious.

NOR did their veneration terminate with the life of the Prince; it was extended to his memory after death; a proof that his authority, however extravagant, was seldom abused. When a Cacique died, his body was embowelled, and dried in an oven, moderately heated; so that the bones and even the

(*f*) Herrera, lib. vi. c. ii.

(*g*) Herrera, lib. i. c. xvi.

(*b*) Martyr, Decad. i. c. i.

BOOK

I.

skin were preserved entire (*i*). The corpse was then placed in a cave with those of his ancestors, this being (observes Oviedo) among these simple people the only system of heraldry; whereby they intended to render, not the name alone, but the persons also, of their worthies immortal. If a Cacique was slain in battle, and the body could not be recovered, they composed songs in his praise, which they taught to their children; a better and nobler testimony surely, than heaps of dry bones or even monuments of marble; since memorials to the deceased are, or ought to be, intended less in honour of the dead, than as incitements to the living (*k*).

THESE heroic effusions constituted a branch of those solemnities, which, as hath been observed, were called *Arietoës*; consisting of hymns and public dances, accompanied with musical instruments made of shells, and a sort of drum, the sound of which was heard at a vast distance (*l*). These hymns, reciting

(*i*) Herrera, lib. iii. c. iii. F. Columbus, c. lxi.

(*k*) It is related by Martyr, that on the death of a Cacique, the most beloved of his wives was immolated at his funeral. Thus he observes that Anacaona, on the death of her brother King Behechio, ordered a very beautiful woman, whose name was Guanahata Benechina, to be buried alive in the cave where his body (after being dried as above mentioned) was deposited*. But Oviedo, though by no means partial towards the Indian character, denies that this custom was general among them†. Anacaona, who had been married to a Charaibe, probably adopted the practice from the account she had received from her husband of his national customs. And it is not impossible, under a female administration,—among savages,—but that the extraordinary beauty of the unfortunate victim, contributed to her destruction.

* Martyr, Decad. iii. lib. ix.

† Oviedo, lib. v. c. iii.

(*l*) Herrera, lib. iii. c. iv. P. Martyr, Decad. iii. c. vii. F. Columbus.

the great actions of the departed Cacique ; his fame in war, and his gentleness in peace, formed a national history (*m*), which was at once a tribute of gratitude to the deceased monarch, and a lesson to the living. Nor could any thing have been more instructive to the rising generation than this institution, since it comprehended also the antiquities of their country, and the traditions of their ancestors. Expressions of national triumph for victory in war, lamentations in times of public calamity, the voice of festivity, and the language of love, were likewise the subjects of these exhibitions ; the dances, so essential a part of them, being grave or gay as the occasion required. It is pretended that among the traditions thus publicly recited, there was one of a prophetick nature, denouncing ruin and desolation by the arrival of strangers compleatly clad, and armed with the lightning of heaven. The ceremonies which were observed when this awful prediction was repeated, we may well believe were strongly expressive of lamentation and horror (*n*).

IV. LIKE all other unenlightened nations, these poor Indians were indeed the slaves of superstition. Their general theology (for they had an established system, and a priesthood to support it) was a medley of gross folly and childish traditions, the progeny of ignorance and terror. Yet we are sometimes dazzled with a strong ray of sunshine in the midst of surrounding darkness. Historians have preserved a remarkable speech of a venerable old man, a native of Cuba, who, approaching Christopher Columbus with great reverence, and presenting a basket of

(*m*) Oviedo, lib. v. c. iii.

(*n*) Martyr, ut supra, Herrera, lib. ii. c. iv,

BOOK

I.

fruit, addressed him as follows. “ Whether you are divini-
 “ ties,” (he observed) “ or mortal men, we know not. You are
 “ come into these countries with a force, against which, were
 “ we inclined to resist it, resistance would be folly. We are
 “ all therefore at your mercy; but if you are men, subject to
 “ mortality like ourselves, you cannot be unapprized, that after
 “ this life there is another, wherein a very different portion is
 “ allotted to good and bad men. If therefore you expect to
 “ die, and believe, with us, that every one is to be rewarded in
 “ a future state, according to his conduct in the present, you
 “ will do no hurt to those, who do none to you (*o*).”

THEIR notions of future happiness seem however to have been narrow and sensual. They supposed that the spirits of good men were conveyed to a pleasant valley, which they called *Coyaba*; a place of indolent tranquillity, abounding with *guavas* and other delicious fruits, cool shades, and murmuring rivulets (*p*); in a country where drought never rages, and the hurricane is never felt. In this seat of bliss (the Elysium of antiquity) they believed that their greatest enjoyment would arise from the company of their departed ancestors, and of those persons who were dear to them in life (*q*);—a proof at least of

(*o*) This remarkable circumstance happened on the 7th of July 1494, and is attested by Pet. Martyr, Decad. i. lib. iii. and by Herrera, lib. ii. c. xiv. If it be asked how Columbus understood the Cacique, the answer is, that he had carried with him to Spain, in his former voyage, several of the Indians; one of whom, a native of Guanahani, who had remained with him from October 1492, had acquired the Spanish language. This man, whose name was *Dylacus*, served him on this and other occasions, both as a guide and interpreter.

(*p*) Fer. Col. c. lxi.

(*q*) Herrera, lib. iii. c. iii.

their

their filial piety, and of the warmth and tenderness of their affections and dispositions.

C H A P.

III.

THE consciousness in our Indians that they were accountable beings, seems to indicate a greater degree of improvement than we are willing to allow to any of the natives of the New Hemisphere. Although, like the Charaibes, our islanders acknowledged a plurality of Gods, like them too, they believed in the existence of one supreme, invisible, immortal, and omnipotent Creator; whom they named *Jocabuna* (r). But unhappily, with these important truths, these poor people blended the most puerile and extravagant fancies, which were neither founded in rational piety, nor productive of moral obligation. They assigned to the supreme Being, a father and mother, whom they distinguished by a variety of names, and they supposed the sun and moon to be the chief seats of their residence (s). Their system of idol-worship was, at the same time, more lamentable than that of the Charaibes; for it would seem that they paid divine honours to stocks and stones converted into images, which they called *Zemi*; not regarding these idols as symbolical representations only of their subordinate divinities, and useful as sensible objects, to awaken the memory and animate devotion, but ascribing divinity to the material itself, and actually worshipping the rude stone or block which their own hands had fashioned. It may be observed, however, that an equal degree of folly prevailed among people much more enlightened. The Egyptians themselves, the most ancient of

(r) Martyr, Decad. i. lib. ix. F. Columbus.

(s) F. Columbus. P. Martyr. Benzeni.

BOOK

I.

civilized nations, worshipped various kinds of animals, and representations of animals; some of them the most noxious in nature; and even the accomplished philosophers of Greece and Rome, paid divine honours to men to whom they had themselves given an apotheosis.—So nearly allied, in religious researches, is the blindness of untutored nature, to the insufficiency of mere cultivated reason!

It has indeed been asserted (whether justly or not) that “the superstitions of Paganism always wore the appearance of pleasure, and often of virtue (*t*);” but the theology of our poor islanders bore a different aspect. By a lamentable inconsistency in the human mind, they considered the Creator of all things as wholly regardless of the work of his hands; and as having transferred the government of the world to subordinate and malignant beings, who delighted in converting into *evil* that which HE pronounced to be *good*. The effusions of gratitude, the warmth of affection, the confidence of hope, formed no part of their devotions. Their idols were universally hideous and frightful, sometimes representing toads and other odious reptiles; but more frequently the human face horribly distorted;—a proof that they considered them, not as benevolent, but evil, powers;—as objects of terror,—not of admiration and love.

To keep alive this sacred and awful prejudice in the minds of the multitude, and heighten its influence, their *Bobitos* or

Priests, appropriated a consecrated house in each village, wherein the Zemi was invoked and worshipped. Nor was it permitted to the people at large, at all times, to enter, and on unimportant occasions approach the dread object of their adoration. The Bohitos undertook to be their messengers and interpreters, and by the efficacy of their prayers to avert the dangers which they dreaded. The ceremonies exhibited on these solemnities, though grossly ridiculous, were well calculated however to extend the priestly dominion, and confirm the popular subjection. In the same view, the Bohitos added to their holy profession, the practice of physick, and they claimed likewise the privilege of educating the children of the first rank of people (*u*);—a combination of influence which, extending to the nearest and dearest concerns both of this life and the next, rendered their authority irresistible.

WITH such power in the priesthood, it may well be supposed, that the alliance between church and state, was not less intimate in these islands, than in the kingdoms of Europe. As in many other nations, religion was here made the instrument of civil despotism, and the will of the Cacique, if confirmed by the Priest, was impiously pronounced the decree of heaven. Columbus relates that some of his people entering unexpectedly into one of their houses of worship, found the Cacique employed in obtaining responses from the Zemi. By the sound of the voice which came from the idol, they knew that it was hollow, and dashing it to the ground to expose the imposture,

(*u*) Martyr.

they

BOOK

I.

they discovered a tube, which was before covered with leaves, that communicated from the back part of the image to an inner apartment, whence the Priest issued his precepts as through a speaking trumpet ;—but the Cacique earnestly entreated them to say nothing of what they had seen ; declaring that by means of such pious frauds, he collected tributes, and kept his kingdom in subjection.

THE reader, I believe, will readily acquit me for declining to enter into any further detail of the various wild notions, and fantastical rites which were founded on such arts and impostures. Happily for our islanders, however, the general system of their superstition, though not amiable, was not cruel. We find among them but few of those barbarous ceremonies which filled the Mexican temples with pollution, and the spectators with horror. They were even more fortunate in this respect than the otherwise happy inhabitants of the lately discovered islands in the Southern Pacific Ocean ; amongst whom the practice of offering human sacrifices to their deities, is still as dreadfully prevalent, as it anciently was amongst most of the nations of the earth.

HAVING thus mentioned the natives of the South-Sea Islands, I cannot but advert to the wonderful similarity observable in many respects, between our ill-fated West Indians and that placid people. The same frank and affectionate temper, the same chearful simplicity, gentleness and candour ;—a behaviour, devoid of meanness and treachery, of cruelty and revenge, are apparent

parent in the character of both :—and although placed at so great a distance from each other, and divided by the intervention of the American Continent, we may trace a resemblance even in many of their customs and institutions ; such as their national songs and dances, their domestic œconomy, their system of government, and their funeral ceremonies. I pretend not, however, to affirm that this resemblance is so exact, as to create the presumption of a common origin. The affinity perceivable in the dispositions and virtues of these widely separated tribes, arose probably from a similarity in their circumstances and situation, operating on the general principles of human nature. Placed alike in a happy medium between savage life, properly so called, and the refinements of polished society, they are found equally exempt from the sordid corporeal distresses and sanguinary passions of the former state, and from the artificial necessities, the restraints and solitudes of the latter. To a speculative mind, such a situation may appear, for a moment, even superior to our own ; “ but if we admit” (says the elegant historian of the amiable Otaheiteans) “ that they are upon the “ whole happier than we, we must admit that the child is “ happier than the man, and that we are losers by the perfection of our nature, the increase of our knowledge, and “ the enlargement of our views (x).”

IN those inventions and arts which, varying the enjoyments, add considerably to the value of life, I believe the Otaheiteans were in general somewhat behind our islanders : in agriculture

(x) Hawkesworth's Voyages, vol. ii. p. 105.

BOOK

I.

they were particularly so (*y*). The great support of the insular territories of the South-Sea consists of the bread-fruit, and the plantain; both which flourish there spontaneously; and although the inhabitants have likewise plantations of yams and other esculent roots, yet the cultivation of none of them appears to be as extensive, as was that of the maize in the West Indies, or to display equal skill with the preparation of the cassavi-bread from the maniock (*z*). The West Indians, notwithstanding that they possessed

(*y*) Dr. Robertson, in his History of America, vol. i. p. 332, observes, that as the natives of the New World had no tame animals, nor the use of the metals, their agriculture must necessarily have been imperfect. It should however be remembered, that as every family raised corn for their own support, and the islands being (to use the expression of Las Casas) “abounding with inhabitants *as an ant-hill with ants*,” a very small portion of ground allotted to the maintenance of each family, would comprehend in the aggregate an immense space of cultivated country. Thus we find Bartholomew Columbus observing, that the fields about Zababa, a country in the Gulph of Darien, which he viewed in 1503, “were all covered with maize, like the corn fields of Europe, *for above six leagues together*.” Unacquainted with the soil of the West Indies, Dr. Robertson should have delivered his sentiments on this subject with diffidence. That soil which is known in these islands by the name of *brick-mould*, is not only superior to most others in fertility, but requires very little trouble in cultivation. Among our islanders, to whom the use of iron was unknown, instruments were ingeniously formed of stone, and of a certain species of durable wood, which were endued with nearly equal solidity and sharpness. We find them felling large trees, building canoes and houses, and forming domestic utensils of exquisite workmanship. Possessing the tools and materials necessary for these purposes, they could not be destitute of proper implements for the ruder operations of husbandry, on a soil incapable of much resistance.

(*z*) L’Abbe Raynal, in opposition to the testimony of all the early Spanish historians who have treated of the discovery and productions of America (none of whom indeed does he appear to have consulted) asserts that the *maniock plant*.

possessed almost every variety of vegetable nature which grew in the countries I have mentioned, the bread fruit excepted, raised also both the maize and the maniock in great abundance; and they had acquired the skill of watering their lands from distant rivers, in time of drought (*a*). It may likewise be observed, that although the Otaheiteans possess the shrub which produces cotton, they neither improve it by culture, nor have the knowledge of converting its wool into cloth (*b*); but content themselves with a far meaner production as a substitute. Our islanders had not only the skill of making excellent cloth from their cotton, but they practised also the art of dying it with a variety of colours; some of them of the utmost brilliancy and beauty (*c*).

IN the science of ship-building (if the construction of such vessels as either people used, may be distinguished with that

plant was originally introduced into the West Indies from Africa, and that the Indians were first instructed by the negroes in the art of converting the poisonous root into wholesome food. For the satisfaction of such of my readers as are not intimately acquainted with the American History, I think it necessary to observe, that P. Martyr, in his first Decad, which bears date November, 1493, seven months only after the return of Columbus from his first voyage, particularly mentions the maniock, or *jucca*, as furnishing great part of the food of the islanders, and he describes their manner of making the *cassavi* bread from it; observing that the raw juice is as strong a poison as aconite. Negroes were not imported into the islands till many years after this account was published.

(*a*) Martyr. Decad. iii.

(*b*) Forster's Observations.

(*c*) Oviedo. Purchas, vol. iii. p. 985.

BOOK

I.

appellation) the superiority is on the side of Otaheite; yet the *Piraguas* of the West Indians were fully sufficient for the navigation they were employed in, and indeed were by no means contemptible sea-boats. We are told that some of these vessels were navigated with forty oars (*d*); and Herrera relates, that Bartholomew Columbus, in passing through the Gulph of Honduras, fell in with one that was eight feet in breadth, and in length equal to a Spanish galley. Over the middle was an awning, composed of mats and palm-tree leaves; underneath which were disposed the women and children, secured both from rain and the spray of the sea.—It was laden with commodities from Jucatan (*e*).

On the other hand, our islanders far surpassed the people of Otaheite, in the elegance and variety of their domestic utensils and furniture; their earthenware, curiously woven beds, and implements of husbandry. Martyr speaks with admiration of the workmanship of some of the former of these. In the account he gives of a magnificent donation from Anacoana to Bartholomew Columbus, on his first visit to that Princess, he observes that, among other valuables, she presented him with fourteen chairs of ebony beautifully wrought, and no less than sixty vessels of different sorts, for the use of his kitchen and table, all of which were ornamented with figures of various kinds, fantastic forms, and accurate representations of living

(*d*) Martyr, Decad. i.

(*e*) Herrera, Decad. i. lib. v.

animals (*f*). The industry and ingenuity of our Indians therefore must have greatly exceeded the measure of their wants. Having provided for the necessities of their condition, they proceeded to improve and adorn it.

CHAP.
III.

BUT I must now leave them to the miserable fate in which it pleased infinite, but inscrutable, wisdom to permit their merciless invaders to involve them for ever!—It may, I think, be safely affirmed, that the whole story of mankind affords no scene of barbarity equal to that of the cruelties exercised on these innocent and inoffensive people. All the murders and desolations of the most pitiless tyrants that ever diverted themselves with the pangs and convulsions of their fellow-creatures, fall infinitely short of the bloody enormities committed by the Spanish nation in the conquest of the New World;—a conquest, on a low estimate, effected by the murder of ten millions of the species! But although the accounts which are transmitted down to us of this dreadful carnage, are authenticated beyond the possibility of dispute, the mind, shrinking from the contemplation, wishes to resist conviction, and to relieve itself by incredulity.—Such at least is the apology which I would frame for the author of the American History, when I find him attempting, in contradiction to the voice and feelings of all mankind, to palliate such horrible wickedness (*g*). Yet the same author admits, that in the short

(*f*) P. Martyr, Decad. i.

(*g*) Introduction to the History of America, by Dr. Robertson, vol. i. p. 10.
“It is to be hoped” (says this author) “that the Spaniards will at last discover
“cover

BOOK

I.

short interval of fifteen years subsequent to the discovery of the West Indies, the Spaniards had reduced the natives of Hispaniola “from a million to sixty thousand (*b*).” It is in vain that he remarks on the bodily feebleness of these poor Indians, and their natural incapacity for labour. Such a constitutional defect, if it existed, entitled them to greater lenity; but the Spaniards distributed them into lots, and compelled them to dig in the mines, without rest or intermission, until death, their only refuge, put a period to their sufferings. Such as attempted resistance or escape, their merciless tyrants hunted down with dogs, which were fed on their flesh. They disregarded sex and age, and with impious and frantic bigotry even called in religion to sanctify their cruelties! Some, more zealous than the rest, forced their miserable captives into the water, and after administering to them the rite of baptism, cut their throats the next moment, to prevent their apostacy! Others made a vow to hang or burn thirteen every morning, in honour of our Saviour and the twelve Apostles! Nor were these the excesses only of a blind and remorseless fanaticism, which exciting our abhorrence, excites also our pity: The Spaniards were actuated in many instances by such wantonness of malice,

“cover this system of concealment to be no less impolitical than illiberal. “From what I have experienced in the course of my enquiries, I am satisfied, “that upon a more minute scrutiny into their early operations in the New “World, however **REPREHENSIBLE**” (a tender expression) “the actions of “individuals may appear, the conduct of the nation will be placed in a more “favourable light.” This opinion, however, needs no other refutation than that which is to be found in the subsequent pages of the learned Author’s History.

(*b*) History of America, vol. i, book iii, p. 185.

as is wholly unexampled in the wide history of human depravity.—Martyr relates, that it was a frequent practice among them to murder the Indians of Hispaniola in sport, or, as he observes, *to keep their hands in use*. They had an exercise which of them could most dexterously strike off the head of a man at a blow ; and wagers frequently depended on this helms exercise (*i*). To fill up the measure of this iniquity, and demonstrate to the world, that the nation at large participated in the guilt of individuals, the Court of Spain not only neglected to punish these enormities in its subjects, but when rapacity and avarice had nearly defeated their own purposes, by the utter extirpation of the natives of Hispaniola, the King gave permission to seize on the unsuspecting inhabitants of the neighbouring islands, and transport them to perish in the mines of St. Domingo. “ Several
“ vessels” (says Dr. Robertson) “ were fitted out for the Lu-
“ cayos, the commanders of which informed the natives, with
“ whose language they were now well acquainted, that they
“ came from a delicious country, in which their departed an-
“ cestors resided, by whom they were sent to invite them to
“ resort thither, to partake of the bliss which they enjoyed. That
“ simple people listened with wonder and credulity, and fond of
“ visiting their relations and friends in that happy region, fol-
“ lowed the Spaniards with eagerness. By this artifice, above
“ 40,000 were decoyed into Hispaniola, to share in the sufferings
“ which were the lot of the inhabitants of that island, and to
“ mingle their groans and tears with those of that wretched

(i) P. Martyr, Decad. i. lib. vii.

BOOK

I.

“ race of men (*k*).” After reading these accounts, who can help forming an indignant wish that the hand of Heaven, by some miraculous interposition, had swept these European tyrants from the face of the earth, who, like so many beasts of prey, roamed round the world only to desolate and destroy; and, more remorseless than the fiercest savage, thirsted for human blood,

(*k*) History of America, book iii. p. 186. See likewise P. Martyr, Decad. vii. This author relates the following affecting particulars of the poor Lucayans thus fraudulently decoyed from their native countries. “ Many of them in the anguish of despair, obstinately refuse all manner of sustenance, and retiring to desert caves and unfrequented woods, silently give up the ghost. Others, repairing to the sea-coast on the northern side of Hispaniola, cast many a longing look towards that part of the ocean where they suppose their own islands to be situated; and as the sea-breeze rises, they eagerly inhale it; fondly believing, that it has lately visited their own happy vallies, and comes fraught with the breath of those they love, their wives and their children. With this idea, they continue for hours on the coast, until nature becomes utterly exhausted; when stretching out their arms towards the ocean, as if to take a last embrace of their distant country and relations, they sink down, and expire without a groan.” — “ One of the Lucayans” (continues the same author) “ who was more desirous of life, or had greater courage than most of his countrymen, took upon him a bold and difficult piece of work. Having been used to build cottages in his native country, he procured instruments of stone, and cut down a large spongy tree called *jaruma* *, the body of which he dexterously scooped into a canoe. He then provided himself with oars, some Indian corn, and a few gourds of water, and prevailed on another man and a woman to embark with him on a voyage to the Lucayos Islands. Their navigation was prosperous for near 200 miles, and they were almost within sight of their own long-lost shores, when unfortunately they were met by a Spanish ship, which brought them back to slavery and sorrow. The canoe is still preserved in Hispaniola as a singular curiosity, considering the circumstances under which it was made.”

* The *bombax*, or wild cotton tree.

without having the impulse of natural appetite to plead in their defence !

CHAP.

III.

ON the whole, if we consider of how little benefit the acquisition of these islands has since proved to the Spanish nation, and count over the cost of the conquest, we must find it extremely difficult to include such an event as the massacre of ten millions of innocent people (comprehending the butcheries in Mexico and Peru) amongst the number of those partial evils which ultimately terminate in general good: Nor can we possibly reconcile its permission to our limited ideas of infinite wisdom and goodness ! Divines therefore justly conclude, that no stronger proof than that which arises from hence need be given of the existence of a future and better state, wherein the unequal distribution of misery and happiness in this life shall be adjusted ; “ *when the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough places plain (1) !*”

(1) In 1585 Sir Francis Drake made a descent on Hispaniola, and in his account of that island, which is preserved in Hakluyt, vol. iii. he relates that the Spaniards, having utterly exterminated the ancient Indians, (not a single descendant being, I doubt, at that time living) had nevertheless derived so little advantage from their cruelty, as to be obliged to *convert places of labour into misery*;—all the silver, in the attainment of which from the bowels of the earth so many thousands of poor wretches had perished, having long since found its way to Europe, and the inhabitants had no means of getting, and a supply.

It may be proper in this place to observe, that some of the circumstances which I have related above, respecting the cruelties of the Spaniards, are extracted from the writings of Bartholomew De Las Casas, who is accused by Dr. Robertson of exaggeration ;—but Oviedo himself, who endeavours to palliate the monstrous barbarities of his countrymen towards the natives, by asserting that they were addicted to unnatural vices, which rendered them properly obnoxious to punishment (a charge, by the way, which Herrera admits to be groundless)—Oviedo, I say, confesses that in 1535, only forty-three years

BOOK

I.



posterior to the discovery of Hispaniola, and when he was himself on the spot, there were not left alive in that island above five hundred of the original natives, old and young; for he adds, that all the other Indians at that time there, had been forced or decoyed into slavery, from the neighbouring islands*. Las Casas, it is true, when he speaks of numbers in the gross, certainly over-rates the original inhabitants. But it does not appear that he meant to deceive; nor is there any just reason to suspect his veracity when he treats of matters susceptible of precision; more especially in circumstances of which he declares himself to have been an eye-witness. Let the reader judge of Las Casas from the following narrative, in which his falsehood (if the story were false) could have been very easily detected. "I once beheld" (says he) "four or five principal Indians roasted alive at a slow fire; and as the miserable victims poured forth dreadful screams, which disturbed the commanding officer in his afternoon slumbers, he sent word that they should be strangled; but the officer on guard (I KNOW HIS NAME, AND I KNOW HIS RELATIONS IN SEVILLE) would not suffer it; but causing their mouths to be gagged, that their cries might not be heard, he stirred up the fire with his own hands, and roasted them deliberately till they all expired.—I SAW IT MYSELF." !!!

It may be necessary perhaps, on my own account, to add, that I have no other edition of Las Casas, than that which was published at Antwerp, in 1579. From a copy of that edition I have extracted the foregoing horrid relation; my hand trembling as I write, and my heart devoutly wishing it could be proved to be false.

* Oviedo. lib. liii. c. vi.

C H A P. IV.

Land animals used as food.—Fishes and wild fowl.—Indian method of fishing and fowling.—Esculent vegetables, &c.—Conclusion.

IN tracing the several tribes of quadrupeds, properly so called, which anciently existed in the West Indies, it will be found that the Windward or Charaibean Islands, possessed all that were possessed by the larger islands, and some species which the latter were without. It is likewise observable, that all the animals of the former are still found in Guiana, and few or none of them in North America: These are additional proofs that the Windward Islands were anciently peopled from the South. The enumeration of them follows:

C H A P.
IV.

1. The Agouti,
2. The Pecary,
3. The Armadillo,
4. The Opuffum,
5. The Raccoon,
6. The Musk Rat,
7. The Alco,
8. The smaller Monkey of several varieties.

THESE I think are their most general appellations; but, from the variety of Indian languages, or dialects rather of the same language, which anciently prevailed in the Islands and on the

BOOK

I.

neighbouring Continent, some of these animals have been distinguished by so many different names, that, in reading the accounts of them transmittted by the French and Spanish historians, it is often difficult to understand of which in particular they mean to speak.

THE Agouti is sometimes called *couti*, and *coati*. It was corrupted into *uti* and *utia*, by the Spaniards; and at present it is known in some parts of the West Indies by the terms *pucarara* and *Indian coney*. It is the *mus aguti* of Linnæus, and the *cavy* of Pennant and Buffon.

To these writers it is sufficient to refer, for a description of its nature and properties.—I shall briefly observe that, in comparing it with the quadrupeds of Europe, it seems to constitute an intermediate species between the rabbit and the rat; and of the animals which I have enumerated above, this and the last are, I fear, the only ones that have escaped the common fate of all the nobler inhabitants of these unfortunate islands, man himself (as we have seen) not excepted! The agouti is still frequently found in Porto-Rico, Cuba and Hispaniola, and sometimes in the mountains of Jamaica. In most of the islands to Windward, the race, though once common to them all, is now I believe utterly extinct.

THE Pecary, which was known in the Windward Islands only, and the Continent, has been honoured with no less variety of names than the agouti. According to Rochefort it was also called *javari* and *pacquirè*. By Dampier it is named *pelas*. By

Acosta faino and *zaino*. It is the *fus tajacu* of Linnæus, and the *pecary* and *Mexican-musk hog* of our English naturalists.

CHAP.

IV.

OF this animal, a very full and particular account has been given by Monf. Buffon in his Natural History, and by Dr. Tyson in the Philosophical Transactions. I have heard that it still abounds in many of the provinces of Mexico; but in the West Indian islands I believe the breed has been long since exterminated. Those that I have seen were carried thither from the Continent as objects of curiosity; and they appeared to me to differ from the European hog principally in the singular but well-known circumstance of their having a musky discharge from an aperture or gland on the back, erroneously supposed to be the navel; and in the colour of their bristles; the pecary being indeed highly ornamented; for the bristles of those that I beheld, were of pale blue, tipped with white. It is also related of this animal, that it possesses far greater courage than the hog of Europe; and when hunted by dogs, will frequently turn and compel its enemy to retreat. Thus its native bravery bringing it within the reach of fire-arms, contributed doubtless to its final destruction in the Islands.

OF the Armadillo, the species anciently known in these islands was I think that which is called by systematical writers the *nine banded*. It is covered with a jointed shell or scaly armour, and has the faculty of rolling itself up, like the hedge-hog. As food it is said to be very wholesome and delicate. It was once found in all parts of the West Indies.

THE

BOOK

I.

THE Opossum (or *manitou*) is distinguishable from all other animals, by a wonderful property. Under the belly of the female there is a pouch, wherein she receives and shelters her young.—Both this and the former animal are too well known to the curious in natural researches, to render it necessary for me to be more particular. I believe the opossum, like the peccary, was unknown to the larger Islands.

THE Racoon was common in Jamaica in the time of Sloane, who observes that it was eaten by all sorts of people. Its abode was chiefly in hollow trees, from whence, says Sloane, it makes paths to the cane-fields, where it chiefly subsists; a circumstance which, while it indicates that its number was considerable, easily accounts for its destruction.

THE Musk Rat is the *piloris* of naturalists: it burrows in the earth, and smells so strongly of musk, that its retreat is easily discovered. According to the French writers, these abounded anciently in Martinico and the other Windward Islands to a great degree (*m*); and its resemblance to the common rat of Europe, though four times as large, probably proved fatal to the whole race. I am inclined to suspect that this animal is the *agouti* of the larger Islands.

THE Alco was the native dog of the New Hemisphere, nor does it seem to have differed greatly from that of the Old; except that it possessed not the power of barking (*n*). The natives

(*m*) P. Labat, tom. ii. p. 322.

(*n*) F. Col. c. xxiv.

of Hispaniola, like those of Otaheite, fattened them with care, and accounted their flesh a great delicacy. “ In St. Domingo” (says Acosta) “ the dogs of Europe have multiplied so exceedingly, that at this time (1587) they are a nuisance and a terror to the inhabitants, and a price is set on their heads as on wolves in Old Spain. At first there were no dogs in this island, but a small mute creature resembling a dog, with a nose like that of a fox; which the natives called alco. The Indians were so fond of these little animals, that they carried them on their shoulders wherever they went, or nourished them in their bosoms.”

THE Monkey and its varieties require no description.

Thus it appears that out of eight different species of edible quadrupeds, one only was domestick and sequacious. Few indeed are the animals that own allegiance to man in his savage state. Of the beasts of the forest, the strongest dispute his superiority and the weakest avoid his approach. To his convenience therefore they contribute nothing, and towards his nourishment, the supplies that they afford are casual and uncertain. Nature however seems to have displayed towards the inhabitants of these islands, a bounty that almost rendered superfluous the labours of art in procuring them sustenance; for, besides the animals that I have mentioned, and those that are furnished by the rivers and the sea, the woods were peopled with two very extraordinary creatures; both of which anciently were, and still are, not only used as food, but accounted superior delicacies.

BOOK

I.

THESE are the Iguana and the Mountain-crab. The Iguana (or, as it is more commonly written, the *guana*) is a species of Lizard:—a class of animals, about which naturalists are not agreed whether to rank them with quadrupeds, or to degrade them to serpents.—They seem therefore to stand aloof from all established systems, and indeed justly claim a very distinguished place by themselves. From the alligator, the most formidable of the family, measuring sometimes twenty feet in length, the gradation is regular in diminution of size to the small lizard of three inches; the same figure and conformation nearly (though not wholly) prevailing in each. The iguana is one of the intermediate species, and is commonly about three feet long, and proportionably bulky. It lives chiefly among fruit trees, and is perfectly gentle and innoxious. Europeans doubtless learnt to make food of them from the example of the ancient Indians, amongst whom the practice of hunting them was a favourite diversion (*o*); and they are now become generally scarce, except in the islands of the Windward-passage, and such other places between the tropicks as are seldom visited by man. I believe indeed the English, even when they were more plentiful, did not often serve them at elegant tables; but their French and Spanish neighbours, less squeamish, still devour them with exquisite relish: I imagine too they have good reason; for I have been assured by a lady of great beauty and elegance, who spoke from experience, that the iguana is

(*o*) F. Col. c. xxv.

equal in flavour and wholesomeness to the finest green turtle (*p*). CHAP.
IV.

RESPECTING the Mountain Crab, which still survives in the larger of these Islands, though its final extinction is probably at hand, its history is so wonderful, that I choose rather to give it in the language of others, than in any recital of my own. The authors from whom I transcribe, are Du Tertre and Brown. They both wrote from their own knowledge and

(*p*) P. Labat likewise speaks of a fricasseed guana with high approbation. He compares it to chicken, for the whiteness of its flesh and the delicacy of its flavour.—Tom. iii. p. 315. In a subsequent page, he gives a minute account of the manner of catching this animal, and if the reader has no objection to accompany the good Father *à la chasse*, he may participate in the diversion as follows: “We were attended” (says he) “by a negro, who carried a long rod; at one end of which was a piece of whipcord with a running knot. After beating the bushes for some time, the negro discovered our game basking in the sun on the dry limb of a tree. Hereupon he began whistling with all his might, to which the guana was wonderfully attentive, stretching out his neck and turning his head, as if to enjoy it more fully. The negro now approached, still whistling, and advancing his rod gently, began tickling with the end of it the sides and throat of the guana, who seemed mightily pleased with the operation; for he turned on his back, and stretched himself out like a cat before a fire, and at length fairly fell asleep; which the negro perceiving, dexterously slipped the noose over his head, and with a jerk brought him to the ground: and good sport it afforded” (continues the reverend historian) “to see the creature swell like a turkey cock, at finding himself entrapped. We caught others in the same way, and kept one of them alive seven or eight days, but it grieved me to the heart to find that he thereby lost much delicious fat.” These animals are likewise known in the East Indies. Sir Joseph Banks shot one of them at Batavia, and found it good food.

BOOK

I.

personal observation, and the facts which they relate have been repeated to me a thousand times in the West Indies, by persons, who I am sure never knew what has been published on the subject by any author whatever. "These animals" (says Du Tertre) "live not only in a kind of orderly society in their retreats, in the mountains, but regularly once a year march down to the sea-side in a body of some millions at a time. As they multiply in great numbers, they chuse the months of April or May to begin their expedition; and then fall out from the stumps of hollow trees, from the clefts of rocks, and from the holes which they dig for themselves under the surface of the earth. At that time the whole ground is covered with this band of adventurers; there is no setting down one's foot without treading upon them. The sea is their place of destination, and to that they direct their march with right-lined precision. No geometrician could send them to their destined station by a shorter course; they neither turn to the right nor to the left whatever obstacles intervene; and even if they meet with a house, they will attempt to scale the walls to keep the unbroken tenor of their way. But though this be the general order of their route, they, upon other occasions, are compelled to conform to the face of the country, and if it be intersected by rivers, they are seen to wind along the course of the stream. The procession sets forward from the mountains with the regularity of an army under the guidance of an experienced commander. They are commonly divided into battalions, of which the first consists of the strongest and boldest males, that, like pioneers, march forward to clear the route and

“ face the greatest dangers. The night is their chief time
 “ of proceeding, but if it rains by day they do not fail to profit
 “ by the occasion, and they continue to move forward in their
 “ slow uniform manner. When the sun shines and is hot upon
 “ the surface of the ground, they make an universal halt, and
 “ wait till the cool of the evening. When they are terrified,
 “ they march back in a confused disorderly manner, holding up
 “ their nippers, with which they sometimes tear off a piece of
 “ the skin, and leave the weapon where they inflicted the
 “ wound.

“ WHEN, after a fatiguing march, and escaping a thousand
 “ dangers, for they are sometimes three months in getting to
 “ the shore, they have arrived at their destined port, they pre-
 “ pare to cast their spawn. For this purpose the crab has no
 “ sooner reached the shore, than it eagerly goes to the edge
 “ of the water, and lets the waves wash over its body two or
 “ three times to wash off the spawn. The eggs are hatched
 “ under the sand; and soon after, millions at a time of the
 “ new-born crabs, are seen quitting the shore, and slowly tra-
 “ velling up to the mountains.”

So far Du Tertre, as copied by Goldsmith. What follows,
 is from Brown's History of Jamaica. “ The old crabs having
 “ disburthened themselves” (as above) “ generally regain their
 “ habitations in the mountains by the latter end of June.—In
 “ August they begin to fatten, and prepare for moulting; filling
 “ up their burrows with dry grass, leaves, and abundance of
 “ other materials.—When the proper period comes, each

BOOK

I.

“ retires to his hole, shuts up the passage, and remains quite
 “ unactive until he gets rid of his old shell, and is fully provi-
 “ ded with a new one. How long they continue in this state
 “ is uncertain, but the shell is first observed to burst at the
 “ back and the sides, to give a passage to the body, and the
 “ animal extracts its limbs from all the other parts gradually
 “ afterwards. At this time the flesh is in the richest state,
 “ and covered only with a tender membranous skin, variegated
 “ with a multitude of reddish veins, but this hardens gradually,
 “ and soon becomes a perfect shell like the former. It is
 “ however remarkable that, during this change, there are some
 “ stony concretions always formed in the bag, which waste
 “ and dissolve as the creature forms and perfects its new crust.”

To these full and particular accounts I will add, of my own knowledge, that many people, in order to eat of this singular animal in the highest perfection, cause them to be dug out of the earth in the moulting state; but they are usually taken from the time they begin to move of themselves, till they reach the sea as already related. During all this time they are in spawn, and if my testimony can add weight to that of all who have written, and all who have feasted, on the subject, I pronounce them, without doubt, one of the choicest morsels in nature. The observation therefore of Du Tertre, is neither hyperbolical, nor extravagant. Speaking of the various species of this animal, he terms them “ a living and perpetual supply
 “ of manna in the wilderness; equalled only by the miraculous
 “ bounty of Providence to the children of Israel when wander-
 “ ing in the desert. They are a resource,” continues he, “ to
 “ which

“ which the Indians have at all times resort; for when all
 “ other provisions are scarce, this never fails them.”

CHAP.

IV.

SUCH plenty of animal food, had the lavish hand of nature enabled the groves and the forests of these highly favoured islands, to furnish for the use of man. The regions of water and of air were still more copiously gifted. Happily the inhabitants of those elements, less obnoxious to the arts of destruction than the races that I have described, are yet sufficiently numerous to bear witness themselves to the inexhaustible liberality of their almighty Creator.—We may say in the language of Milton,

—————Each creek and bay
 With fry innumerable swarm, and shoals
 Of fish glide under the green wave.——
 —————Part single, or with mate,
 Graze the sea-weed their pasture; and thro' groves
 Of coral stray, or sporting with quick glance,
 Show to the sun their way'd coats dropt with gold.

While the woods and the marshes equally abound with wild fowl of infinite variety, and exquisite flavour (*q*). But of the tribes

(*q*) The most delicious bird in the West Indies is the *Oryzopsis*, or *October-bird*. It is the *emberiza oryzivora* of Linnæus, or rice-bird of South Carolina; of which a description is given by Catesby.—Yet it is remarkable, that they are reckoned birds of passage in North America as well as in the West Indies. Catesby observes, that they arrive in Carolina in infinite numbers in the month of September, to devour the rice: they continue there about three weeks, and retire when the rice begins to grow hard.—He supposes their route to be from Cuba to Carolina; but I believe they are not in the islands till the month of October.—At least it is in that month that they visit Jamaica in prodigious flights, to feed on the:

BOOK

I.

tribes which these islands still abundantly furnish, and from whose nature and properties there is no reason to apprehend an extinction of the race, it is not within my province to treat. The enumeration that I have made has chiefly extended to such, as from their scarcity are seldom noticed by modern naturalists and voyagers, or of which the knowledge and even the names are lost to the present inhabitants:—for it has been justly observed, that what from its antiquity is but little known, has from that circumstance alone the recommendation of novelty. I shall therefore close my account of the animal creation with a description of two very curious methods, known to the antient Indians, of catching fish and wild fowl, with which I believe the reader will be amused.

“ THE Indians of Jamaica and Cuba ” (says Oviedo) “ go a fishing with the *remora*, or sucking-fish, which they employ as falconers employ hawks. This fish, which is not above a span long, is kept for the purpose and regularly fed. The owner on a calm morning carries it out to sea, secured to his canoe by a small but strong line, many fathoms in length; and the moment the creature sees a fish in the water, though

the-seeds of the Guinea grass.—According to Catesby, the *bens* only arrive in Carolina in September. The hen is about the bigness of a lark, and coloured not unlike it in the back; the breast and belly pale yellow, the bill strong and sharp-pointed, and shaped like most others of the granivorous kind.—The cock’s bill is lead colour, the fore part of the head black, the hinder part and the neck of a reddish yellow, the upper part of the wing white, the back next the head black; lower down grey, the rump white, the greatest part of the wing and the whole tail black; the legs and feet brown in both sexes.—Vide the *Yellow Fly-catcher* of Edwards, p. 5.

“ at

“ at a great distance, it starts away with the swiftness of an
 “ arrow, and soon fastens upon it. The Indian, in the mean
 “ time, loosens and lets go the line, which is provided with a
 “ buoy that keeps on the surface of the sea, and serves to
 “ mark the course which the remora has taken, and he pursues
 “ it in his canoe, until he conceives his game to be nearly
 “ exhausted and run down.—He then, taking up the buoy,
 “ gradually draws the line towards the shore; the remora still
 “ adhering with inflexible tenacity to its prey, and it is with
 “ great difficulty that he is made to quit his hold. By this
 “ method ” (adds Oviedo) “ I have known a turtle caught, of
 “ a bulk and weight which no single man could support (*r*).”

THEIR contrivance for catching wild fowl was equally ingenious, though practised I believe by other nations, particularly the Chinese, even at this day. In the ponds to which these birds resort, they used to throw calabashes (a species of gourd)

(*r*) Herrera confirms this account. See also P. Martyr, Decad. i. lib. ii. — Besides the turtle, it is said, that the Indians (the reader may believe it or not) frequently caught the *Manati* in the same manner. This singular animal is now become very scarce on the shores of the West India Islands, but is still sometimes caught there, as I myself can witness. It is the same which the French call *Lamentin*.—By the British seamen it has been named (from a supposed resemblance in the head) the *Sea-Cow*; and its flesh, which tastes somewhat like pork, is thought to be very good, both fresh and salted.—The animal itself is a sort of amphibious creature, neither a quadrupede nor a fish.—It has two legs, and is covered with hair, and suckles its young; yet it never leaves the water, but feeds on grass which grows at the bottom of the sea. It is commonly from ten to fifteen feet long, huge and unwieldy, and weighs from twelve to fifteen hundred weight.

which

BOOK

I.

which float about the water, and which, when accustomed to them, the fowl would approach without fear. Having succeeded thus far, the sportsman puts one of these gourds on his head (first making apertures for the sight and the breath) and very cautiously creeps into the water, either gently swimming, or walking where the stream is shallow, with his head only above the water, until he gets among the fowl, when seizing one at a time by the feet, and dragging it by a sudden jerk under the surface, he fastens it to his girdle, and thus loads himself with as many as he can carry away, without creating the least alarm or disturbance among the rest.

I MIGHT now proceed to an enumeration and account of the esculent vegetables originally produced in these Islands; especially those most valuable ones, the Maize, the manioc (*s*), and the different species of the *dioscorea* or Yam; of which, and the many delicious fruits, the growth of these climates, the natives without doubt composed the chief part of their daily support: but I am here happily anticipated by the voluminous collections of systematical writers; particularly those of Sloane, Brown, and Hughes. Nevertheless it were to be wished, that those authors had more frequently discriminated than they appear to have done, such vegetables as are indigenous, from those which have been transplanted from foreign countries. Nature,

(*s*) A late ingenious writer (Dr. Darwin) has given it as his opinion, that the manioc, or cassava, when made into bread, is rendered mild by the heat it undergoes, rather than by expressing its superfluous juice; and I believe the observation to be just; for Sir Hans Sloane relates, that the juice itself, however acrimonious in its raw state, becomes, when boiled, as innocent and wholesome as whey.

with

with most beneficent intention, has bestowed on distant climates and regions many species peculiar to each. This variety in her works, is one of the greatest incitements to human industry; and the progress of men in spreading abroad the blessings of Providence, adorning and enriching the widely separated regions of the globe with their reciprocal productions, as it is one of the most useful employments of our faculties, so it is a subject which well deserves the notice of the historian, and the contemplation of the philosopher (*t*).

BUT it is now time to quit general description for particular history. Many objects indeed are hereafter to be considered, which, being common to all our West Indian possessions, will be comprehensively discussed;—but in previously treating of the origin and progress of our national establishments in them, it seems proper to discourse of each Island separately;—and, as the most important, I begin with JAMAICA.

(*t*) The West Indies are much indebted, on this account, to the East, but I believe that the first of all fruits, the anana or pine-apple, was carried from the West to the East. It was found by Columbus in all the West India Islands, and P. Martyr, whose Decades were chiefly compiled out of Columbus's Letters to King Ferdinand, writes of it as follows: *Alium fructum se invicissimus rex Ferdinandus comedisset, ab iisdem terris advectum, squammosum, pinus nucamentum adspectu, forma colore æmuletur, sed mollitie par melopeponi, sapore omnem superat hortensem fructum: non enim arbor est, sed herba, cardus persimilis, aut acantho. Huic et rex ipse palmam tribuit. Ex iis ego pomis minimè comedi: quia unum tantum è paucis allatis reperere incorruptum, cæteris ex longa navigatione putrefactis. Qui in nativo solo recentia ederunt illorum cum admiratione suavitatem extollunt.* Who does not lament that King Ferdinand did not leave a slice for his honest Historiographer? The term *Anana* is, I believe, eastern: The West Indian name of this fruit was *fan-polo-mie*.

APPENDIX to BOOK I.

Containing some additional observations concerning the origin of the Charaibes.

BOOK

I.



HAVING ventured, in the second chapter of this book, to adopt the opinion of Hornius (*a*) and other writers, who assign to some of the natives of America an oriental origin, and suppose that they anciently crossed the Atlantick Ocean, I beg the reader's indulgence while I briefly state the evidence whereon I attempt to rebuild a system, which it has become fashionable, among some late philosophers, to reject and deride.

So many volumes have indeed already been written, and so much useless learning exhausted, on the subject of the first peopling America, that I doubt the reader will shrink with disgust from an investigation, which perhaps has given rise to as great a number of idle books, as any question (some disputed points in divinity excepted) that ever distracted the attention of mankind.

It may be necessary therefore to premise, that I mean to apply my argument *to the Charaibe Nation only*; a people whose manners and characteristick features denote, as I con-

(a) De originibus Americanis, lib. ii. c. vi.

ceive, a different ancestry from that of the generality of the American nations.

APPEN-
DIX.

IT is not wonderful that the notion of their transatlantic origin should have been treated with derision.—The advocates for this opinion, like the framers of most other systems, by attempting to prove too much, have gained even less credit than they deserve. In contending that the New World was first planted by adventurers from the Old, they universally take for granted, that some of those adventurers returned, and gave accounts of their discoveries; for they suppose that America was well known to the Ancients; that not only the Phenicians made repeated voyages thither; but that the Egyptians and Carthaginians also, voluntarily crossed the Atlantick, and planted Colonies, at different periods, in various parts of the New Hemisphere.

IN support of these opinions, quotations have been made from poets, philosophers and historians: But if we reflect on the limited extent of navigation before the discovery of the compass; the prevailing direction of the winds between the tropicks; and various other obstructions, we may I think very confidently determine (notwithstanding the traditions preserved by Plato; the poetical reveries of Seneca the tragedian, and many other passages in ancient writers, which admit of various interpretations, and therefore prove nothing) *that no vessel ever returned from any part of America before that of Columbus*.—This conclusion however does by no means warrant us in pronouncing that no vessel ever sailed thither from the ancient continent, either by accident or design, anterior to that period. That

BOOK

I.

such instances did actually happen, and by what means, I shall now endeavour briefly to point out.

THERE is no circumstance in history better attested, than that frequent voyages from the Mediterranean along the African coast, on the Atlantick Ocean, were made, both by the Phenicians and Egyptians, many hundred years before the Christian era. It is true, that almost all the accounts which have been transmitted to us, in profane history, of those expeditions, are involved in obscurity, and intermixed with absurdity and fable;—but it is the business of philosophy to separate, as much as possible, truth from falsehood; and not hastily to conclude, because some circumstances are extravagant, that *all* are without foundation. We know from indisputable authority, that the Phenicians discovered the Azores, and visited even our own Island before the Trojan war (*b*). That their successors the Carthaginians, were not less distinguished for the spirit of naval enterprize, we may conclude from the celebrated expedition of Hanno (*c*); who, about 250 years before the birth of our Saviour, sailed along the African coast, until he came within

(*b*) Procopius, Secretary to Belisarius in the time of Justinian, mentions in his *Vandalica*, book ii. that there were then standing in Africa Tingitana, (Tangier) two columns erected by the Chananites that fled from Joshua, the son of Nun. Eusebius also writes, that those Chananites which were driven out by the Israelites conducted Colonies to Tripoli, in Africa. (*Bochart in Canaan*, cap. xxiv.)—that they navigated the Western Ocean (*cap.* xxxvi.) and were in Gaul and Britain (*cap.* xlii.) See also Sammes's Phœnician History of Britain.

(*c*) This was published with Stephanus de Urbibus, by Berkley, in 1688, and in the minor geographers at Oxford. I believe it was first published in Greek, by Sigismund Gelenius, who died in 1554.

five degrees of the line. It was the Carthaginians who discovered the Canary Islands, and it appears from the testimony of Pliny (*d*), that they found in those islands, the ruins of great buildings, (*vestigia Edificiorum*) a proof that they had been well inhabited in periods of which history is silent.

APPEN-
DIX.

So far, we have clear historical evidence to guide us in our researches. Not less clear and certain (though less numerous) are the accounts of the Phenician navigation, down the Arabian Gulph, or Red Sea, to distant parts of Asia and Africa, in ages still more remote than those that have been mentioned. In the voyages undertaken by King Solomon, he employed the ships and mariners of that adventurous and commercial people. With their assistance he fitted out fleets from Ezion-geber, a port of the Red sea, supposed to be the Berenice of the Greeks. Of those ships, some were bound for the western coast of the great Indian continent; others, there is reason to believe, turning towards Africa, passed the southern promontory, and returned home by the Mediterranean to the port of Joppa.

IN support of this account of the flourishing state of ancient navigation in the Arabian Gulph, we have, first of all, the highest authority to refer to; that of the scriptures. Next to which, we may rank the testimony of Herodotus, the father of profane history: the truth of whose well-known relation of a Phenician fleet doubling the Cape of Good Hope six hundred years before the birth of Christ, was never disputed, I believe, until our learned countryman, the author of the late American

(*d*) Lib. vi. c. xxxii. *de Fortunatis Insulis.*

BOOK

I.

history, delivered it as his opinion, that “ all the information
 “ we have received from the Greek and Roman authors, of
 “ the Phenician and Carthaginian voyages, excepting only the
 “ short narrative of Hanno’s expedition before mentioned, is
 “ of suspicious authority (*e*).”

I SHALL quote from Herodotus the passage alluded to, that the reader may judge for himself of the veracity of the venerable old Grecian. It is as follows. “ Lybia is every where encircled by the sea, except on that side where it adjoins to Asia.
 “ Pharaoh Neco, King of Egypt (*f*), made this manifest.
 “ After he had desisted from his project of digging a canal from
 “ the Nile to the Arabian Gulph, he furnished a body of Phenicians with ships, commanding them to enter the Northern
 “ Sea by the Pillars of Hercules ; and sail back by that route
 “ to Egypt. The Phenicians therefore sailing from the Red
 “ Sea navigated the Southern Ocean : At the end of autumn
 “ they anchored, and going ashore sowed the ground, *as those*
 “ *who make a Lybian voyage always do*, and staid the harvest.
 “ Having cut the corn, they sailed. Thus two years having
 “ elapsed, they returned to Egypt, passing by the pillars of
 “ Hercules ; and they reported a circumstance which I can

(*e*) Robertson’s History of America, vol. i. p. 9.

(*f*) There were two kings of Egypt of this name. The second, who is generally supposed to have ordered the circumnavigation of Africa, was slain in battle by the Assyrians, I think under the command of Nebuchadnezzar ; but an ambiguous phrase in Herodotus, seems rather to point out the elder Neco, who was contemporary with Solomon.

“ scarcely

“ scarcely credit, though it may gain belief from others, *that sailing round Lybia the sun rose on the right hand (g).*”

APPEN-
DIX.

NOTWITHSTANDING the doubts entertained by Dr. Robertson respecting this account, I perceive in it such evidence of truth, as to my own mind affords entire conviction.—How could it have been known, unless from actual observation, that Africa, towards the South, was encompassed by the sea? The caution with which the venerable historian expresses himself, is remarkable; and the circumstance that the sun rose on the right, is decisive of the main fact;—for it demonstrates that they had then actually doubled the southern promontory, and were steering in a northerly direction; the course they would necessarily pursue.

DR. Robertson has shewn, it is true, that many historians and geographers of antiquity, who lived long after the days of Herodotus, knew nothing concerning the form and state of the southern parts of Africa.—He observes particularly that Ptolemy, the astronomer, supposed that this great continent stretched without interruption to the South Pole. All this however only demonstrates that navigation, like many other branches of science, flourished in one age, and declined in another. Herodotus lived 400 years before the birth of our Saviour, and Ptolemy 140 years after. Ancient history abundantly proves that the Phenicians, and their successors the

(g) Herod. Melpomene 42. It was also the opinion of Eratosthenes that the outer sea flowed round the earth, and that the Western, or Atlantick, and Red Seas, were but one ocean. *Vide* Strabo. B. I. p. 38. See also the same author B. I. p. 28. where it is asserted, that Homer's Menelaus circumnavigated Africa from Gades to India.

Cartha-

BOOK

I.

Carthaginians, possessed far greater skill in naval affairs than the Greeks, Romans, or any other nation that came after them, until the spirit of naval discovery revived, and shone with greater lustre than ever, in the fifteenth century.

FROM this recapitulation which I have thought necessary to make, though the substance of it may be found in a thousand different authors, (commonly blended indeed with much learned absurdity and frivolous conjecture) the reader will clearly perceive that the navigation of the Atlantick Ocean, along the coast of Africa, both from the North and the South, and even at a considerable distance from the land, was well understood and prevailed in very remote ages. Now if we enquire into the nature of the winds and currents on the African coast, and reflect on the various casualties to which ships at sea are liable, even in the most favourable season of the year ; we must admit, that it not only probably happened in some of those ancient expeditions, but even that *it was scarce possible not to happen*, that vessels would be driven by sudden gusts, or carried by adverse currents, within the verge of the trade-wind ; in which case, if they happened to lose their masts, they must necessarily run before the wind, towards Brasil, or the West Indies.

Two remarkable accidents of this nature, precisely in point, are recorded by writers of credit, and doubtless there are many other instances equally well authenticated, that have escaped my research. The first is related by Glasse, in his history of the Canary Islands, who observes that a small bark, bound from Lancerota to Teneriffe, was thus forced out of her course, and obliged to run before the wind, until she came within two days

a subject, the investigation of which he may perhaps deem a mere matter of idle curiosity, neither contributing to the improvement of science, nor the comfort of life.

APPEN-
DIX.

HERE then I conclude: An attempt to trace back the Charaibes of the West Indies to their progenitors, the first emigrants from the ancient hemisphere, in order to point out, with any degree of precision or probability, the era of their migration, were (like the voyages I have been describing) to venture on a vast and unknown ocean without a compass;—and even without one friendly star to guide us through the night of conjecture.

days fail of the coast of Caraccas; where she fortunately met with an English cruiser which relieved her distresses, and directed her to the Port of La Guaira on that coast. The other is told by Gumilla, as follows. "In December 1731," says this author, "while I was at the town of St Joseph, in Trinidad, a small vessel belonging to Teneriffe, with six seamen, was driven into that island, by stress of weather. She was laden with wine; and being bound to one other of the Canary Islands, had provisions for a few days only, which, with their utmost care, had been expended a considerable time; so that the crew lived entirely on wine. They were reduced to the last extremity, and expected death every moment, when they discovered Trinidad, and soon afterwards came to an anchor in that island, to the great astonishment of the inhabitants; who ran in crowds to behold the poor seamen; whose emaciated appearance, would have sufficiently confirmed the truth of their relation, even if the papers and documents which they produced, had not put the matter out of all possible doubt."

To the preceding instances it may be added, that Columbus himself, in his second expedition to the West Indies, found the stern-post of a vessel lying on the shore at Guadaloupe;—a circumstance which affords a strong presumption that a ship had been in the New World before him.

UNDER this head of fortuitous visits to the American continent prior to that of Columbus, may likewise be included the circumstance mentioned by Martyr, that at a place called Quarequa, in the Gulph of Darien, Vasco Nunez met with

BOOK

I.

a colony of negroes (d). The enquiry (if any was made) by what means they came into that region, or how long they had resided in it, and the answers to such questions, are not recorded by the Spanish historians; but from the smallness of their number, it was supposed they had not been long arrived upon that coast. There can be no doubt but that some accidental cause had conducted them thither from Africa, and in *open canoes*, of no better construction than those of the American Indians (*e*).

THE reader will now perhaps conclude, that Dr. Robertson pronounced too hastily, when he observed “that such events,” (as those that I have mentioned) “are barely possible, and *may*

(*d*) Mancipia ibi nigra repererunt ex regione distante à Quarequa, dierum spatio tantum duorum quæ solos gignit nigritas et eos feroces atque admodum truces. — P. Martyr, Decad. iii. c. i.

(*e*) Such accidents in truth are common in all parts of the world. The inhabitants of Java report their origin to have been from China; the tradition among them being that, 850 years ago, their progenitors were driven by a tempest upon that island in a Chinese junk: And we owe the European discovery of Japan to three Portuguese exiles who were shipwrecked there in 1542. I believe that ships bound from Europe to the East Indies, at a certain season of the year generally make for the southern coast of Brasil, in order to fall in with the westerly monsoon, which enables them either to reach the Cape of Good Hope, or pursue their route by Madagascar; for while the eastern monsoon prevails, they are constantly baffled in their attempts to double the Cape, and are driven to leeward towards the coast of South America. In the year 1626, when Sir Dodmore Cotton was sent on an embassy to the Persian Court, the fleet in which he sailed was forced by contrary winds within a few leagues of the island of Trinidad, in the West Indies. Sir Thomas Herbert in his account of this voyage, relates that “on the first of June, when they were by “ observation in 24° 42’ south latitude, they met with many sudden gusts and “ storms which rendered them unable to pursue their course, and drove them “ to leeward 100 leagues upon the coast of Brasil.”

“ have happened ; but that they ever did happen, we have no
 “ evidence, either from the clear testimony of history, or the
 “ obscure intimations of tradition.” This declaration is strange,
 and the more unexpected, as the learned author had a little
 before related the circumstance of the accidental discovery of
 Brasil by the Portuguese, in the year 1500. “ The successful
 “ voyage of Gama to the East Indies” (observes the historian)
 “ having encouraged the King of Portugal to fit out a fleet, so
 “ powerful, as not only to carry on trade, but to attempt con-
 “ quest, he gave the command of it to Pedro Alvarez Cabral.
 “ In order to avoid the coast of Africa, where he was certain of
 “ meeting with variable breezes, or frequent calms, to retard his
 “ voyage, Cabral stood out to sea, and kept so far to the West,
 “ that, to his surprise, he found himself upon the shore of an
 “ unknown country, in the tenth degree beyond the line. He
 “ imagined, at first, that it was some island in the Atlantick
 “ Ocean hitherto unobserved ; but, proceeding along its coasts
 “ for several days, he was led gradually to believe that a coun-
 “ try so extensive formed a part of some great continent. This
 “ latter opinion was well founded. The country with which he
 “ fell in belongs to that province in South America now known
 “ by the name of Brasil. He landed ; and having formed a very
 “ high idea of the fertility of the soil and agreableness of the
 “ climate, he took possession of it for the Crown of Portugal,
 “ and dispatched a ship to Lisbon with an account of this event,
 “ which appeared to be no less important than it was unex-
 “ pected. Columbus’s discovery of the New World was the
 “ effort of an active genius, enlightened by science, guided by
 “ experience, and acting upon a regular plan, executed with no
 “ less courage than perseverance. But from this adventure of

BOOK

I.



“ the Portuguese, it appears that chance might have accom-
 “ plished that great design, which it is now the pride of human
 “ reason to have formed and perfected. If the sagacity of
 “ Columbus had not conducted mankind to America, Cabral,
 “ by a fortunate accident, might have led them, a few years
 “ later, to the knowledge of that extensive continent (*f*).”

AND certainly, by some such accident, in ages long passed, might the ancient Hemisphere have given a beginning to population in the New; or at least have sent thither the progenitors of that separate race of people of which I now treat. It remains for me however to assign my reasons for particularly applying this conclusion to the Charaibes, instead of any other of the numerous tribes which inhabit the eastern side of the immense continent of South-America.

THE migration of any people is best traced by their language; but there is this inconveniency attending this species of evidence, that in reducing a language, merely oral, to writing, different persons even of the same nation, would sometimes represent the same sound by a very different combination of letters;—much more frequently would this happen, should the writers be of distant countries, and consequently habituated to various modes of pronunciation and orthography;—but although I am of opinion therefore that vocabularies preserved by voyagers seldom afford much certainty of information on a comparison with each other; there are, nevertheless, in every language, many words of which the sound is too simple to be easily misunderstood or grossly misrepresented.

(*f*) Hist. America, vol. i. p. 151.

THUS,

THUS, on comparing the Charaibe vocabulary, preserved by Rochefort, with the ancient oriental dialects (*g*), it is scarce possible to doubt that the following words used by the Charaibes, had their origin in the Old Hemisphere, and we may readily believe that many instances of a similar nature might be adduced, but for the cause I have assigned, namely, the different modes which different persons would necessarily adopt, each according to his own perception of the sound, of reducing the same words to writing; thus creating a perplexity which it is now too late to disentangle. To

APPEN-
DIX.

<i>Charaibe.</i>	<i>Meaning in French, according to Rochefort.</i>	<i>Words having the same meaning in the Oriental dialects.</i>	<i>Meaning in English.</i>
Liani	Sa femme	לי הנה [Li Hene]	His wife
Yene-neri	Ma femme	הנה הרה ני [Hene Hera ni]	My wife
Hac yeté	Venez ici	Sam. אָמאָ אַמאָ [Aca ati]	Come hither
Karbet	Maison publique	קיר בית or קרא בית	Qir or Qra } Bit
Encka	Collier	ענק [Onq]	Necklace or collar
Yene kali	Mon Collier	חנק אלי [E'Onq ali]	My necklace
Hue-Hue	Du bois	עא : Oä	Wood
Nora	Ma peau	עור ני [Oür ni]	My skin
Nané-guaete	Je suis malade	נאנחתי [Nanecheti]	I am sick
Halea tibou	Sois le bien venu	יהא לי הטיבו [Yeha li e tibou]	Good be to you
Phoubae	Soufflé	פוח [Phoahe]	To blow
Toubana ora	Couverture de Maison	י בנה עור [Yü Bne Oür]	Roof of a house
Bayou boukaa	Va t'en	בוא בואך [Boua Bouak]	Go thy way
Baka	Mange	בנה [Bge]	Eat
Aka	Manger	אכל [Akl]	To eat
Neshiri	Moa nez	נהר [Neheri]	The nose
Naton baman	Donne moi a boire	נתני ב אמנ [Naton bamen]	Give me nourishment

(*g*) For this illustration, and other assistance in the course of this enquiry, I am indebted to a learned friend; by whom I am informed (being myself unacquainted with

BOOK

I.

To the proofs arising from language, I shall add another.—We have seen from Herodotus, that the Phenicians in their African voyages were accustomed to land on the Arabian and Lybian coasts, and taking possession of a spot of ground fit for their purpose, they proceeded to plough up and sow it with corn, and waited until it came to maturity;—thus providing themselves with food for a long navigation. This practice must doubtless have given rise to disputes and conflicts between the intruders and the inhabitants. Now it is remarkable that the word *Charaibe*, in the Arabic language, signifies, as I am informed, *a robber* or *destroyer*, an appellation which we may believe was frequently bestowed by the natives on the invaders of their country (*b*).

with the oriental languages) that the Samaritan, and old Phenician, the Syriac, Chaldee and Hebrew, are all dialects of one language; differing but little from each other, except in their letters. The Hebrew agrees less with the other dialects than the rest, but is now printed in the same character with the Chaldee. They all form a noun in the same manner except the Hebrew, which prefixes ש (S) to form the genitive case, and את (*at*) to form the accusative; all the others use ד (D) and ית (*it*).

(*b*) Leri, and some others, speak of the *Charaibes* as priests or prophets found in Brasil. Rochefort makes *Charaibe* a national name. These words are oriental, sounding alike, but spelt differently; and of a different meaning: The priests may be called קרב איש as men who offer קרבן *korban* an offering, *κορβαν* is the Greek word for a priest of Cybele, *unde* CORYBANTES. ליהוה לי יקריב מכם קרבן Leviticus i. 2. But if the national name be derived from their warlike and predatory way of life, then we may derive it from חרב the verb Chaldee. Syr. Arab. *to lay waste*. The noun signifies a sword or spear and חרבה Sam. *War*. This explanation was given me by the friend mentioned in the preceding note.

THE testimony arising from a similarity of manners, though far less conclusive than the evidence of language, is surely, in the present case, not without its force. That many of the customs of the eastern nations prevailed among the Charaibes, I have, I think, sufficiently demonstrated, to those at least who are acquainted with oriental history, in the second chapter of this work. Of some of those customs, the resemblance was probably fortuitous, and a similarity of climate and situation, might have given rise to others; but when very singular practices prevail between distant nations, which are neither founded in nature nor climate, nor proceed from situation and rank in the scale of refinement, the coincidence can scarcely be deemed accidental. Thus, among other customs equally remarkable, it has been related that the Charaibes buried their dead in a cowering posture, with the knees to the chin. That this was an ancient practice of some of the eastern nations appears from the authorities of Herodotus and Cicero; the former recording the existence of it among the Nasamones, a people who inhabited the countries between Egypt and Carthage; and the latter relating the same circumstance of the ancient Persians. I am inclined to believe that this practice prevailed also in the country and age of the patriarchs;—for how otherwise are we to understand the scripture phrase OF GATHERING UP THE FEET OF THE DYING? “*And when Jacob had made an end of commanding his sons,*” “HE GATHERED UP HIS FEET INTO THE BED, and” “yielded up the ghost (*i*).”

(i) Gen. c. xlix. v. 33.

BOOK

I.



EQUALLY prevalent among the Charaibes, and many of the ancient nations of the Old Hemisphere, were the superstitious rites of shortening the hair and wounding the flesh, in religious ceremonies and lamentations for the dead. That these practices were usual among the heathens, so early as the days of Moses, is evident from the injunction which the Lord laid on the children of Israel to avoid them. “*Ye shall not round the corners of your head, neither shalt thou mar the corners of thy beard. Ye shall not make any cuttings in your flesh for the dead, nor print any marks upon you (k).*” Again,—“*Ye are the children of the Lord, your God: Ye shall not cut yourselves, nor make any baldness between your eyes for the dead (l).*” Among the heathens however the same ceremonies were still continued; for in Samaria, in the days of Ahab, King of Israel, it is recorded of the prophets of Baal that, in worshipping their idol, “*they cried aloud and cut themselves after their manner with knives and lances till the blood gushed out upon them (m).*”

BUT perhaps the instance the most apposite and illustrative, was the habit among the Charaibes of chewing the *betele*, preparing it with calcined shells precisely after the manner of the Indians in the East;—a circumstance, which, though recorded by P. Martyr (*n*), had escaped my researches, until it was pointed out to me by Mr. Long. Some other resemblances almost equally striking, might be collected; but the reader will probably think that more than enough has already been said on

(l) Levit. c. xix. v. 27.

(m) 1 Kings, c. xviii. v. 28.

(l) Deut. c. xiv. v. 1.

(n) Decad. viii. c. vi.

THE
H I S T O R Y,
CIVIL AND COMMERCIAL,
OF
The British Colonies in the West Indies.

B O O K II.

J A M A I C A (a).

C H A P. I.

Discovery of Jamaica by Columbus.—His return in 1503.—Spirited proceedings of his son Diego, after Columbus's death.—Takes possession of Jamaica in 1509.—Humane conduct of Juan de Esquivel, the first Governor.—Establishment and desertion of the town of Sevilla Nueva.—Destruction of the Indians.—St. Jago de la Vega founded.—Gives the title of Marquis

(a) It may be proper to observe, that the governor of Jamaica is stiled in his commission Captain-general, &c. of Jamaica *and the territories thereon depending in America*. By these DEPENDENCIES were meant the British settlements on

Marquis to Diego's son Lewis, to whom the Island is granted in perpetual sovereignty — Descends to his sister Isabella, who conveys her rights by marriage to the House of Braganza. — Reverts to the crown of Spain, in 1640. — Sir Anthony Shirley invades the Island in 1596, and Col. Jackson in 1638.

BOOK

II.

JAMAICA had the honour of being discovered by Christopher Columbus, in his second expedition to the New World. In his former voyage he had explored the north-eastern part of Cuba, proceeding from thence to Hispaniola; but he had returned to Europe in doubt whether Cuba was an island only, or part of some great continent, of which he had received obscure accounts from the natives. To satisfy himself in this particular, he determined, soon after his arrival a second time at Hispaniola, on another voyage to Cuba, by a south-westerly course, and, in pursuance of this resolution, on the 24th of April, 1494, Columbus sailed from the Port

the Musquito shore, and in the bay of Honduras: But his jurisdiction over those settlements having been imperfectly defined, was seldom acknowledged by the settlers; except when they wished to plead it in bar of the authority claimed by their respective superintendants. On such occasions they admitted superior jurisdiction in the governor of Jamaica, and applied to him for commissions civil and military. As both the settlements were surrendered to the crown of Spain by the Spanish convention signed at London on the 14th of July 1786, it comes not within the plan of my work to enter on a display of their past or present state. I formerly drew up a memorial concerning the settlement on the Musquito-shore, wherein an account was given of the country, its inhabitants and productions, and the question between Great Britain and Spain, as to the territorial right, pretty fully discussed. This memorial having been laid before the House of Commons in 1777 (by Governor Johnstone) was soon afterwards published in Almon's Parliamentary Register. Vol. V.

of Isabella, with one ship and two shallops. On Tuesday the 29th, he anchored in the harbour of St. Nicholas. From thence he crossed over to Cuba, and coasted along the southern side of that Island, surrounded by many thousand canoes filled with Indians, whom curiosity and admiration had brought together. In this navigation, on Saturday the 3d of May, he discovered, for the first time, the high lands of Jamaica on the left, and probably learnt its name (the name which it still retains (*b*) from some of the Indians that followed him. As this was a new discovery, and many of the seamen were willing to believe that it was the place to which they had been formerly directed by the Indians of the Bahama Islands, as the country most abounding in gold, Columbus was easily persuaded to turn his course towards it. He approached it the next day, and, after a slight contest with the natives, which ended however in a cordial reconciliation, he took possession of the country, with the usual formalities.

BUT it was not until the fourth and last voyage of Columbus, a voyage undertaken by this great navigator, after he had suffered a severer trial from the base ingratitude of the Country and Prince in whose service he laboured, than from all his perils, dangers and inquietudes, that he learnt more of Jamaica; which, as it had the honour of being first discovered by him, nine years before, had now the still greater honour of affording him

(*b*) P. Martyr. F. Columbus. The early Spanish historians wrote the word *Xaymaca*. It is said to have signified, in the language of the natives, a *country abounding in springs*. Columbus having at first named the island *St. Jago*, Olinixon, and some other writers, erroneously suppose that *Jamaica* was the augmentative of *James*.

BOOK

II.

shelter from shipwreck. For, on the 24th of June 1503, being on his return to Hispaniola from Veragua, he met with such tempestuous weather as compelled him, after losing two of his ships, to bear away in the utmost distress for this island. With great difficulty, he reached a little harbour on the north side (*c*) where he was forced to run aground the two vessels that were left him, to prevent their foundering. By this disaster, his ships were damaged beyond the possibility of repair, and he had now the melancholy reflection that his miseries and his life would probably terminate together. During the space of twelve months and four days, that he remained in this wretched situation, he had new dangers to surmount, and unaccustomed trials for the exercise of his fortitude. His people revolted, the Indians deserted him, and the Governor of Hispaniola not only refused to relieve, but with monstrous and unexampled barbarity, aggravated his misfortunes by outrage and mockery. All these occurrences however, together with the dexterity with which he availed himself of the superstition of the Indians, by the circumstance of an eclipse, and the means, whereby his deliverance was at length effected, having been recounted by a thousand different historians, need not be repeated by me. The hardships he suffered on this occasion, and his Sovereign's ingratitude together, proved too mighty for his generous spirit: he sunk under them, soon after his return to Spain; leaving however a name not to be extinguished, but with that world whose boundaries he had extended (*d*).

• AFTER

(*c*) Called to this day, *Don Christopher's Cove*.

(*d*) There is preserved among the Journals of the Hon. Council in Jamaica, a very old volume in MS. consisting of diaries and reports of Governors,

AFTER the death of its illustrious discoverer, the transactions of the Spaniards, during a century and a half, in the settlement of Jamaica, have scarcely obtained the notice of history. Happy indeed it would have been for their national character, if the records of many of their more extensive enterprises, during the same period, were veiled in equal darkness,

vernors, which relate chiefly to the proceedings of the army and other transactions in the first settlement of the colony. In this book is to be found the translation of a letter to the King of Spain, said to be written by Columbus during his confinement on this Island. As it appears to me to bear marks of authenticity, I shall present it to my readers. It was written probably about eight months after the departure of his messenger Diego Mendez, who had attempted to reach Hispaniola in an Indian canoe. Hearing nothing from him in that interval, Columbus seems to have relinquished every hope of relief, and to have written this letter in an hour of despondency, not as having any probable means of sending it to Spain, but on the idea that it would be found after his death.—It is as follows :

A Letter from Christopher Columbus, in Jamaica, to King Ferdinand.

“ Jamaica, 1504.

“ Diego Mendes, and the papers I sent by him, will shew your Highness what rich mines of gold I have discovered in Veragua, and how I intended to have left my brother at the river Belin, if the judgments of Heaven and the greatest misfortunes in the world had not prevented it. However it is sufficient that your Highness and your successors will have the glory and advantage of all, and that the full discovery and settlement are reserved for happier persons than the unfortunate Columbus. If God be so merciful to me as to conduct Mendes to Spain, I doubt not but he will convince your Highness and my great mistress that this will not only be a *Castile* and *Leon*, but a discovery of a world of subjects, lands and wealth, greater than man’s unbounded fancy could ever comprehend, or avarice itself covet : but neither he, this paper, nor the tongue of mortal man can express the anguish and afflictions of my body and mind ; nor the misery and dangers of my son, brother and friends ! Already have we been confined ten

darkness, or consigned to everlasting oblivion : happier still, if their splendour had been transmitted to posterity through a purer

months in this place, lodged on the open decks of our ships, that are run on shore and lashed together ; those of my men that were in health have perished under the Porras's of Seville, my friends that were faithful are mostly sick and dying, we have consumed 'the Indians' provisions, so that they abandon us, all therefore are like to perish by hunger, and these miseries are accompanied with so many aggravating circumstances, that render me the most wretched object of misfortune, this world shall ever see ; as if the displeasure of Heaven seconded the envy of Spain, and would punish as criminal those undertakings and discoveries which former ages would have acknowledged as great and meritorious actions ! Good Heaven, and you holy saints that dwell in it, let the King Don Ferdinand and my illustrious mistress Donna Isabella know, that my zeal for their service and interest hath brought me thus low ; for it is impossible to live and have afflictions equal to mine. I see, and with horror apprehend, my own, and, for my sake, my unfortunate and deserving peoples' destruction. Alas, piety and justice have retired to their habitations above, and it is a crime to have undertaken and performed too much ! As my misery makes my life a burthen to myself, so I fear the empty titles of Vice-Roy and Admiral, render me obnoxious to the hatred of the Spanish nation. It is visible that all methods are adopted to cut the thread that is breaking ; for I am in my old age, oppressed with insupportable pains of the gout, and am now languishing and expiring with that and other infirmities, among savages, where I have neither medicines nor provisions for the body, priest nor sacrament for the soul. My men in a state of revolt ; my brother, my son, and those that are faithful, sick, starving and dying ; the Indians have abandoned us, and the Governor of Saint Domingo, has sent rather to see if I am dead, than to succour us, or carry me alive from hence ; for his boat neither delivered a letter, nor spoke with, nor would receive any letter from us ; so I conclude your Highness's officers intend that here my voyages and life should terminate. O blessed mother of God, that compassionates the miserable and oppressed, why did not cruel Bovadilla kill me when he robbed me and my brother of our dearly purchased gold, and sent us to Spain in chains without trial, crime or shadow of misconduct ? These chains are all the treasures I have, and they shall be buried with me, if I chance to have a coffin or grave ; for I would have the remembrance of so unjust an action perish with me, and,

purser medium, and not, as now, serving chiefly to render visible the vices and enormities that surround and debase them!

CHAP.

I.

THE few particulars of their progress which, by diligent selection, aided by traditionary memorials, I have been able to collect, I shall now present to my readers.

and, for the glory of the Spanish name, be eternally forgotten. Let it not bring a further infamy on the Castilian name, nor let ages to come know, there were wretches so vile in this, that think to recommend themselves to your majesty by destroying the unfortunate and miserable Christopher Columbus; not for his crimes, but for his services in discovering and giving Spain a new world. As it was Heaven itself that inspired and conducted me to it, the Heavens will weep for me, and shew pity! Let the earth, and every soul in it, that loves justice and mercy, weep for me! And you, O glorified Saints of God, that know my innocence and see my sufferings here, have mercy! for though this present age is envious or obdurate, surely those that are to come will pity me, when they are told that Christopher Columbus, with his own fortune, ran the hazard of his own and his brother's lives, and, with little or no expence to the Crown of Spain, in ten years, and four voyages, rendered greater services than ever mortal man did to prince or kingdom, yet was left to perish, without being charged with the least crime, in poverty and misery; all but his chains being taken from him; so that he who gave Spain another world, had neither safety in it, nor yet a cottage for himself, nor his wretched family: Yet, should Heaven still persecute me, and seem displeased with what I have done, as if the discovery of this new world may be fatal to the old, and as a punishment bring my life to a period in this miserable place, yet do you, good angels, you that succour the oppressed and innocent, bring this paper to my great mistress. She knows how much I have done, and will believe what I have suffered for her glory and service, and will be so just and pious as not to let the children of him that has brought to Spain such immense riches, and added to it vast and unknown kingdoms and empires, want bread, or subsist only on alms. She, if she lives, will consider that cruelty and ingratitude will bring down the wrath of Heaven, so that the wealth I have discovered, shall be the means of stirring up all mankind to revenge and rapine, and the Spanish nation suffer hereafter, for what envious, malicious and ungrateful people, do now.

BOOK

II.

ABOUT seventeen years had elapsed after the Spaniards had first fixed themselves in Hispaniola, before they seem to have entertained any serious design of sending forth a colony to possess itself of Jamaica. As this island produced neither gold nor silver, it seems to have been neglected as unworthy further notice; and perhaps it might have continued a few years longer the peaceful seat of innocent simplicity, but for the base ingratitude of King Ferdinand, towards the family of Columbus. This great man, after his return to Spain in 1504, was compelled to employ the close of his days in fruitless and irksome solicitation at the court of an unthankful and unfeeling monarch; who meanly suffered him to be cruelly defrauded of the rights and privileges originally granted to him; and which he had so dearly and so nobly earned. His son Diego, the heir of his fortunes, succeeded to the same debasing necessity, till, at length, wearied out with frivolous and unprincipled excuses, he instituted a memorable process against his sovereign before the council of the Indies at Seville; and this court, with a firmness and virtue that cannot be sufficiently applauded, decided in favour of his pretensions. After a minute and solemn investigation of his claims, the council pronounced him hereditary viceroy and high admiral of all the countries and islands discovered by his father. They decreed, that he was invested with a jurisdiction over them similar to that of the high admiral of Castille; that he was entitled to a tenth part of all the gold and silver that might thereafter be found in those territories; and they adjudged him various other privileges and immunities, of vast extent and authority. But the king, notwithstanding this distinguished and

competent recognition of his rights, confirmed to him only the title and authority of governor and admiral of Hispaniola; and even of this diminished command, it is probable he would have been deprived, if he had not fortunately strengthened his interest by an illustrious marriage (*e*). The gallant youth, nevertheless, still boldly persisted in his claim to the full exercise of all the rights and authority, which had been so recently decreed to belong to him; and shortly afterwards, accompanied by a numerous and splendid retinue, embarked for his government, resolved to enforce his pretensions.

HE arrived in Hispaniola in the month of July 1508, but had very soon the mortification to discover that the king had actually invested in two other persons (Alonzo de Ojeda and Diego de Nicuesa) not only two separate and distinct governments, which comprehended all the continent as far as it had been discovered by Christopher Columbus, but had also included the island of Jamaica, as a joint appendage to, and place of refreshment within, the jurisdiction of each. These appointments Diego Columbus considered as a manifest violation of his own rights, and strenuously contended for the exclusive privilege of nominating, in particular, to the governments of Veragua and Jamaica, the prior discovery of both those countries by his father being a circumstance of universal notoriety. To secure his claim to Jamaica, in the month of November 1509, he sent thither Juan de Esquivel, with about seventy men. Esquivel had acquired the reputation of a

(*e*) He married *Mary de Toledo*, daughter to *Ferdinand de Toledo*, grand commander of Leon, who was brother to *Frederick* duke of *Alva*.

BOOK

II.

gallant soldier, and it is still more to his honour, that he was one of the very few Castillians, who, amidst all the horrors of bloodshed and infectious rapine, were distinguished for generosity and humanity. An eminent instance of his greatness of mind is thus recorded by Herrera.—About the time that he sailed from Hispaniola to take possession of his new government of Jamaica, his competitor Ojeda was on his departure to the continent. Ojeda violently opposed the intended expedition of Esquivel, and publicly threatened that if he should find him at Jamaica, on his return from the continent, he would hang him up as a rebel. It happened that Ojeda's voyage was unfortunate in the highest degree; for, after sustaining a series of calamities altogether without example, he was shipwrecked on the Coast of Cuba, and was in danger of miserably perishing for want of food. In his distress he called to mind that Esquivel was in Jamaica, and he was now reduced to the sad extremity of imploring succour from the very man whose destruction he had meditated; but the magnanimous Esquivel was no sooner made acquainted with the sufferings of his enemy, than he forgot all his resentment. He immediately sent over to Cuba, Pedro de Narvez, an officer of rank, to conduct Ojeda to Jamaica. Esquivel received him with the tenderest sympathy, treated him during his stay with every possible mark of distinction and respect, and provided him with the means of a speedy and safe conveyance to Hispaniola. It is pleasing to add, that Ojeda was not ungrateful to his benefactor.

UNDER such a man, it is reasonable to suppose that the yoke of subjection sat light and easy on the natives of Jamaica,

maica, and that the ravages of conquest were restrained within the limits of humanity. Accordingly, the Spanish historians bear the most honourable testimony to his virtuous and gentle administration.—“ The affairs of Jamaica (says Herrera) went “ on prosperously, because Juan de Esquivel having brought “ the natives to submission *without any effusion of blood*, they “ laboured in planting cotton, and raising other commodities which yielded great profit.” This praise is the more valuable because it is almost peculiar to Esquivel, who alone seems to have been sensible of the abominable wickedness of visiting distant lands only to desolate them; and of converting the Indians to Christianity by cutting their throats. How many noble qualities, in some of his contemporaries, were tarnished by cruelty and rapine, or unhappily blended with a misguided and frantic zeal for religion, that rendered their possessors still more remorseless and savage!

ESQUIVEL continued in his office but a few years. He died in his government, and was buried at *Sevilla Nueva*, a town which he had founded. He was probably succeeded by governors of a far different character, who, it is to be feared, soon began to spread among the wretched natives the same horrible carnage that was now desolating Hispaniola. It appears that Francis de Garay held the chief command in 1523, since in that year he fitted out an expedition from this island for the conquest of Panuco, a territory which Cortes, unknown to Garay, had already annexed to the Spanish dominion. In this expedition were employed nine ships and two brigantines,

BOOK

II.

brigantines, and there were embarked in it 850 Spaniards, and a considerable body of Jamaica Indians, and 144 horses. Such a force, if collected chiefly within the island, proves that a great progress had been made in its settlement and population during the thirteen years that the Spaniards had been in possession of it. As Esquivel had established the seat of government near to the spot which had been honoured by the residence of Columbus after his shipwreck in 1503, it may be presumed that the town of Sevilla Nueva was now become of some consideration. This town, as we are informed by Herrera, was founded on the site of an ancient Indian village, called *Maima* (*f*), and near to the port named by Columbus Santa Gloria (now St. Ann's Harbour) and the daily accession of new inhabitants would naturally extend the boundaries of the capital, till the rude village, consisting at first of a few temporary huts, must have increased to a place of importance. Religion too, in all the Spanish territories, very soon forced architecture into her service; for, by a lamentable inconsistency in the human mind, these destroyers of their fellow creatures were wonderfully exact in the observance of all the outward ceremonies of divine worship. With hands yet reeking in the blood of murdered innocence, they could erect temples to the Almighty, and implore that mercy from Heaven, which they had just denied to the miserable victims of

(*f*) *Quasi* MAMEE. There is a bay a little to the eastward, which is called at this hour *Mamee Bay*. The ground on which *Sevilla Nueva* was built, is now chiefly the property of Mr. Heming, who has a large sugar plantation thereon. It is called *Seville Plantation*; and the ruins of the ancient town are still visible in some of the cane-fields. It descended to him from his ancestor Captain Heming, an officer in Cromwell's army.

their

their cruelty and rapine. Among other costly buildings a cathedral and monastery were designed, and the foundations of both were visible not long ago, as many of the ruins are at this day. Peter Martyr of Angleria, the author of the *Decades*, being appointed abbot and chief missionary of the island. A fort was also erected, the remains of which, as well as of the cathedral, were inspected by Sloane in 1688, who relates, that a pavement was discovered at the distance of two miles from the church; a circumstance that may give us some idea of the extent of the city in the days of its prosperity. The west gate of the cathedral stood entire in 1688, and displayed, in the judgment of Sloane, very excellent workmanship; but it was his opinion that the building was never completed; for he observed several arched stones that must have been designed for it, which apparently had never been put up (*g*). He likewise discovered, in the same condition, materials for a capital mansion, probably intended for the palace of the governor. From these circumstances, the tradition which still prevails in the island, that the Spanish inha-

(*g*) " Over the door (of the west gate) was a carving of our Saviour's head with a crown of thorns between two angels; on the right side a small round figure of some saint, *with a knife stuck into his back*. On the left a Virgin Mary or Madona, her arm tied in three places, Spanish fashion. Over the gate, under a coat of arms, this inscription :

Petrus. Martir. Ab. Angleria. Italus. Civis Mediolanensis. Prothon. Apos. Hujus. Insule. Abbas. Senatus. Indici. Consiliarius. Digniss. Primus. Aegem. Hanc. Bis. Igne. Consumptam. Latencio. Et. Quadrato. Lapide. Primus. A. Fundamentis. Etruxit."

SLOANE.

bitants

BOOK

II.

bitants of Seville were at some period, in their wars with the natives, entirely and suddenly cut off, is probably founded in truth. Sloane, indeed, relates that some of the Spanish planters, who had retired to Cuba, assigned very different reasons for the desertion of this part of the country, alledging, that a visitation of innumerable ants had destroyed all their provision grounds, and that the situation of the capital was ill adapted for the purposes of their commerce. These reasons might possibly have operated against the re-establishment of the place; but were not, I think, of sufficient efficacy to induce a whole body of people, the inhabitants of a growing capital, suddenly to remove their families and effects, and voluntarily submit to the labour of building an entire new town, in a very distant and wholly uncultivated part of the country. It is certain, that the town of Seville was not suffered to fall gradually to decay; but was depopulated while it was yet in an unfinished state, many years before the conquest of the Island by the English (*b*). Neither (if this tradition of its catastrophe were true) could a just account be expected from the descendants of men, who deservedly brought destruction on themselves; since the recital of their fate would again have brought the deeds also of their ancestors to remembrance, and they were deeds of darkness, too mournful to contemplate; too dreadful to be told!

(*b*) See the account of Jamaica transmitted to Cromwell by general Venables, preserved in Thurloe's state papers, vol. iii. p. 545, wherein he speaks of Seville as a town that had existed *in times past*. And Sloane relates that when the English took the island, the ruins of this city were overgrown with wood and turned black with age. He saw timber-trees growing within the walls of the cathedral, upwards of sixty feet in height. Sloane Hist. Jamaica, vol. i. p. 66.

BOTH ancient tradition, and recent discoveries, give too much room to believe that the work of destruction proceeded not less rapidly in this Island, after Esquivel's death, than in Hispaniola; for to this day caves are frequently discovered in the mountains, wherein the ground is covered, almost entirely, with human bones; the miserable remains, without all doubt, of some of the unfortunate aborigines, who, immured in those recesses, were probably reduced to the sad alternative of perishing with hunger, or of bleeding under the swords of their merciless invaders (*g*)! When therefore we are told of the fate of the Spanish inhabitants of Seville, it is impossible to feel any other emotion than an indignant wish that the story were better authenticated, and that Heaven in mercy had permitted the poor Indians in the same moment to have extirpated their oppressors altogether! But unhappily this faint glimmering of returning light to the wretched natives, was soon lost in everlasting darkness, since it pleased the Almighty, for reasons inscrutable to finite wisdom, to permit the total destruction of this devoted people; who, to the number of 60,000, on the most moderate estimate, were at length wholly cut off and exterminated by the Spaniards, not a single descendant of either sex, being alive when the English took the island in 1655, nor, I believe, for a century before (*h*).

(*g*) It is discovered by the skulls, which are preternaturally compressed, that these are the skeletons of the Indians.

(*h*) There is said to exist on the south side of the island of Cuba, at this day, a small remnant of the ancient Indians. They reside in a little town near St. Jago de Cuba, called *Iwanee*, and have adopted the manners and language of the Spaniards.

BOOK

II.

THE loss of Seville was followed by that of Melilla, a small village situated about eleven leagues to the eastward, (at the harbour now called Port Maria) and the catastrophe which attended these places is supposed to have caused the establishment of the capital of St. Jago de la Vega, or, as it is now called, Spanish Town.

OF the precise æra of these events, it is now perhaps useless to inquire; but if conjecture may be allowed, I should fix on the year 1523, immediately after the departure of the force under Garay; and if the new capital was really founded by Diego Columbus, as tradition reports, and which there seems no good reason to dispute, the conjecture is strongly confirmed; for he embarked for Spain in discontent in 1517, returned to his government with fuller powers in 1520, and died in his native country in the latter end of 1525, or the beginning of 1526; and it was certainly after his arrival the last time in Hispaniola, that he laid, or caused to be laid, the foundation of St. Jago de la Vega (*i*).

THE new city encreased rapidly, and in 1545 (twenty years after the death of its founder) it had the honour of giving the title of Marquis to his son and heir, who received at the same time from the emperor Charles V. a grant of the whole island

(*i*) Since this was written I have discovered, by a re-perusal of Oviedo, that there was a general revolt of the Indians of St. Domingo in December 1522, which Diego Columbus suppressed, and immediately afterwards repaired to Jamaica to take on himself the government in the room of Garay. It seems probable, from hence, that the revolt extended to both islands.

in perpetual sovereignty, as an hereditary fief of the crown of Castile.

CHAP.

I.

As this is an important circumstance in the history of this island, and seems not to have been perfectly understood by any of the English historians who have treated of the affairs of Jamaica, I presume that a more copious deduction and explanation of it, will not be unacceptable.

DIEGO COLUMBUS left issue three sons and two daughters. His eldest son, Don Lewis, succeeded to his father's honours and extensive claims. Of the daughters, the eldest, Isabella, afterwards intermarried with the count de Gelvez, a Portuguese nobleman of the house of Braganza. Lewis Columbus was an infant of six years of age on the death of his father; but was generally considered as hereditary vice-roy, and high admiral of the West Indies. The emperor, however, though he treated him with singular distinction, and considerably augmented his revenues, as he grew to manhood, absolutely refused to admit his claim to such extensive authority, and Lewis, as his minority expired, instituted, after his father's example, a legal process for the recovery of his birthright. It does not appear that his suit ever came to a legal issue; for, in the year 1545, he found it prudent to accede to a compromise with the emperor, whereby he transferred all his hereditary rights to the crown, for a grant of the province of Veragua and the island of Jamaica, with the title of duke de Veragua and marquis de la Vega. What might have been the precise extent and nature of this grant, we have not information

BOOK

II.

sufficient to enable us to judge. Whatever it was, he left no issue to enjoy it; and his brothers also dying without male issue, his sister Isabella, wife of the count de Gelvez, became sole heiress of the Columbus family, and conveyed by her marriage all her rights to the house of Braganza, where they continued, I believe, till the year 1640, and then reverted back by forfeiture to the crown of Spain, in consequence of the revolution which placed John duke of Braganza on the throne of Portugal.

SIR Hans Sloane therefore, in asserting that a duke de Vera-gua enjoyed a yearly revenue from Jamaica, at the time the island surrendered to the English in 1655, must have been misinformed; as he clearly is in supposing that the family of Columbus were at that time proprietors of the island, and had so continued from the days of Ferdinand and Isabella.

BUT there is a circumstance recorded by Blome, and confirmed by the state papers of Thurloe, for which the relation I have given sufficiently accounts. I mean the establishment in Jamaica of many Portuguese families. The transfer of Isabella's inheritance to the house of Braganza, might have encouraged many of the Portuguese to fix their fortunes in the newly-acquired colony, and it is equally probable that the same event would excite jealousy in the old Spanish settlers towards their new visitors. Blome adds, that the Portuguese were abhorred.

SUCH mutual distrust, and irreconcilable aversion among the inhabitants towards each other, was perhaps the cause that

Sir

Sir Anthony Shirley met with so little resistance when he invaded the island in 1596, and plundered the capital. About forty years afterwards it was again invaded by a force from the Windward Islands under colonel Jackson. It is said, however, that on this occasion the inhabitants behaved with great gallantry in a pitched battle at Passage Fort; but being overpowered, Jackson, after losing forty men, entered St. Jago de la Vega sword in hand, and, having pillaged it of every thing valuable, received a considerable ransom for sparing the houses. He then retreated to his ships, and carried off his booty without interruption.

FROM this period, until the capture of the island by the English in 1655, during the usurpation of Cromwell, I know nothing of its concerns, nor perhaps were they productive of any event deserving remembrance. I shall therefore proceed, in the next chapter, to the consideration of the Protector's motives for attacking the territories of Spain at a time when treaties of peace subsisted between the two nations; which I conceive have hitherto been greatly misunderstood, or wilfully misrepresented, by historians in general.

C H A P. II.

*Cromwell vindicated for attacking the Spaniards in 1655.—
 Their cruelties in the West Indies, in contravention of the treaty
 of 1630.—Proposals offered by Modyford and Gage.—Verbal
 arguments of the latter.—Secretary Thurloe's account of a con-
 ference with the Spanish Ambassador.—Cromwell's demand of
 satisfaction rejected.—State of Jamaica on its capture.*

BOOK
 II.

THERE is no portion of the English annals, in the perusal of which greater caution is requisite, than the history of the administration of the protector Cromwell. The prejudices of party, which in common cases are lost in the current of time, have floated down to us in full strength against this prosperous usurper; and his actions, from the period that he reached the summit of power, are still scrutinized with industrious malignity, as if it were impossible that authority irregularly acquired, could be exercised with justice.

It is not strange therefore that the vigorous proceedings of the protector against the Spanish nation, in 1655, should have been obnoxious to censure, or that writers of very opposite political principles should concur in misrepresenting his conduct on that occasion. The celebrated female republican (a) terms it “dishonourable and piratical,” and the courtly

(a) Mrs. Macaulay's History of England.

and elegant apologist of the Stewart family (*b*), pronounces it a most unwarrantable violation of treaty.

C H A P.

II.

THE publication of the state papers of Thurloc (the Secretary) ought, however, to have mitigated this weight of censure. In truth, it will be found that nothing but a most disingenuous concealment of the hostile proceedings of the Spaniards, too gross to be palliated, towards the subjects of England, can give even the colour of plausibility to the charge which has been brought against Cromwell, of having commenced an unjust and ruinous war, against a friend and ally, contrary to the interest of the nation, and in violation of the faith of treaties. If the power which is vested in the executive magistrate, by whatever name he be distinguished, be held for the protection and security of the religion, liberties and properties of the people under his government, the measures adopted by the Protector on that occasion were not merely justifiable; they were highly necessary, and even meritorious; for the conduct of Spain, especially in America, was the declaration and exercise of war against the whole human race. I shall adduce a few remarkable facts to support this assertion. The subject is curious in itself, and, in some respects, will be new to the reader.

THE latest treaty which had been made between England and Spain, previous to the assumption of the protectorate by Cromwell, was concluded in the year 1630; by the first article of which it was stipulated, that there should be peace, amity, and friendship between the two crowns and their re-

(*b*) David Hume—History of Great Britain.

BOOK

II.

spective subjects *in all parts of the world*. Before this period, the sovereigns of Spain had not only encouraged, but openly avowed, the exercise of perpetual hostility on the ships and subjects of all the nations of Europe, that were or might be found in any part of the new hemisphere; arrogantly assuming to themselves a right not only to all the territories which their own subjects had discovered there, but claiming also the sole and exclusive privilege of navigating the American seas (*c*).

PRETENSIONS so exorbitant, which violated alike the laws of nature and nations, were resisted by every maritime state

(*c*) In the reign of James I. within two years after the conclusion of a peace between England and Spain, which saved the Spanish monarchy from absolute destruction, Sir Charles Cornwallis, in a letter dated from Madrid in May 1606, informs the Earl of Salisbury, that Don Lewis Firardo, a Spanish admiral, having met with certain English ships laden with corn and bound to Seville, “took the masters, and first set their necks in the stocks. He afterwards removed them into his own ship, and there, with his own hands, did as much to their legs; reviling them, and calling them heretics, Lutheran dogs, and enemies of Christ, threatening to hang them; and in conclusion robbed them of what he thought fit.” See Winwood, vol. ii. p. 143.—It appears by subsequent letters preserved in the same collection, that Cornwallis, complaining to the Duke of Lerma, the minister of Spain, of Firardo’s conduct, particularly in sending to the galleys some English mariners whom he had made prisoners in the West Indies, was told by that minister “that Firardo should be called to account, not (adds the Duke) for sending the men to the galleys, but *for not having hanged them up, as he ought to have done.*” Sir Walter Raleigh, some time afterwards, in a letter to King James, speaks of it as a well-known fact, that the Spaniards, in another instance, had murdered twenty-six Englishmen, tying them back to back and then cutting their throats, even after they had traded with them a whole month, and when the English went ashore in full confidence, and without so much as one sword among them. See Raleigh’s Works by Birch, vol. ii. p. 376.

that felt itself concerned in the issue: by the English particularly, who had already planted colonies in Virginia, Bermudas, St. Christopher's and Barbadoes; territories some of which Spain had not even discovered, and none of which had she ever occupied. Thus actual war, and war in all its horrors, prevailed between the subjects of Spain in the new world, and those of the several other nations who ventured thither, while, at the same time, peace apparently subsisted between the parent states in Europe.

To secure to the English an uninterrupted intercourse with their settlements above mentioned, was one great object of the treaty of 1630. It seems indeed to have been more immediately founded on a remarkable instance of Spanish perfidy, which had recently happened in the island of St. Christopher; for the court of Spain having, towards the latter end of the year 1629, fitted out a fleet of twenty-four ships of force, and fifteen frigates, under the command of Don Frederic de Toledo, ostensibly to attack the Dutch settlement in Brasil, secretly ordered the admiral to proceed in the first place to the island I have mentioned (which, although the Spaniards had indeed first discovered it 130 years before, they had never once occupied) and rout out from thence both the English and French, who at that time held a joint and peaceable possession.

NEITHER the French, nor English, nor both together, were strong enough to oppose such an enemy. The French planters took refuge in the neighbouring island of Antego, and the English fled to the mountains; from whence they sent

BOOK

II.

deputies to treat for a surrender; but the haughty Spaniard required and obtained unconditional submission; and, having selected out of the English settlers six hundred of the ablest men, whom he condemned to the mines, he ordered all the rest (consisting chiefly of women and children) instantly to quit the island, in some English vessels which he had seized at Nevis, under pain of death. He then laid waste all the settlements within his reach, and having reduced the country to a desert, proceeded on his voyage.

It might be supposed that the treaty of 1630, prevented such enormities in future; but, in violation of all that is solemn and sacred among Christian states, and to the disgrace of human nature, the Spaniards, eight years only after the affair of St. Christopher's, attacked a small English colony which had taken possession of the little unoccupied Island of Tortuga, and put every man, woman, and child to the sword: they even hanged up such as came in and surrendered themselves, on the promise of mercy, after the first attack.

THE unhappy monarch at that time on the throne of England, was too deeply engaged in contests with his subjects at home, to be able to afford protection to his colonists abroad; and those contests terminating at length in a civil war, the Spaniards proceeded in the same career with impunity; treating all the British subjects, whom they found in the West Indies, as intruders and pirates. In the year 1635, the English and Dutch had jointly taken possession of Santa Cruz, which at that time was wholly unpeopled and deserted. Disputes arising

between the new settlers, the English took arms and became sole masters of the Island. In 1650 the Spaniards landed there, and, without the smallest provocation, exterminated every inhabitant that fell into their hands, murdering, as at Tortuga, even the women and children. As usual with this revengeful nation, they conquered but to desolate; for, having destroyed all the people they could seize, they laid waste and then deserted the Island, and, when some of the Dutch nation, in consequence of such desertion, took possession a second time, the Spaniards returned and treated them as they had treated the English.

Of their cruelties towards the subjects of foreign states, even such as were forced on their coasts in distress, the instances were without number. Their treatment of the sailors was as barbarous and inhuman, as their pretences for seizing them were commonly groundless and unjust. The very mercies of the Spaniards were cruel; for if, in some few instances, they forbore to inflict immediate death on their prisoners, they sentenced them to a worse punishment; condemning them to work in the mines of Mexico for life (*d*).

It

(*d*) The Spaniards, after the death of Cromwell, revived these practices, and continued them to our own times. About the year 1680, they landed on the Island of Providence, one of the Bahamas, and totally destroyed the English settlement there. The governor (Mr. Clark) they took with them to Cuba, in irons, and put him to death by torture. Oldmixon, who wrote "The British empire in America," was informed by Mr. Trott, one of Governor Clark's successors, that the Spaniards roasted Clark on a spit. The insolence and brutality of the commanders of the Spanish guarda-costas, in the days of Walpole, are remembered by many persons now living; and perhaps there are those alive who were present when Captain Jenkins gave that remarkable evidence to the house of commons,

BOOK

II.

It is evident, from the schemes and proposals for attacking the Spaniards, which were presented to Cromwell on his elevation to the protectorate, that the English, in general, had a deep and just sense of the wrongs which they sustained from the bigotry, avarice, and cruelty of the Spanish nation.—We may surely conclude, that applications of such a nature could not have been made to the supreme executive magistrate, without any pretence of injury received. To suppose that a body of the subjects of any civilized state, or that even any individual of sound mind, would intrude into the national councils, and presume to solicit a violation of the public faith, and the commencement of hostilities towards a powerful state and an ally, without any provocation, is to suppose a case which I believe never did occur in history, and which indeed it seems next to impossible should happen. Among other persons who presented memorials on this occasion, we find the names of Colonel Modyford and Thomas Gage. The former was one of the earliest and most enterprising planters of Barbadoes; and Gage had resided twelve years in New Spain in priest's orders. He was brother of Sir Henry Gage, one of

which it would be thought might have animated every British heart to insist on exemplary vengeance. The case was this:—A Spanish commander, after ransacking this man's vessel for what he called contraband goods, without finding any, put Jenkins to the torture, and afterwards, without the smallest provocation, cut off one of his ears, telling him to carry it to the king of England his master. Jenkins had preserved the ear in a bottle, which he displayed to the House of Commons. Being asked by one of the members, what he thought or expected while in the hands of such a barbarian? "I recommended (he replied) my soul to God, and my cause to my country."

See Torbuck's Parliamentary Debates, vol. ix. p. 414.

the Generals under Charles I. (*e*) and appears to have been a man of capacity and extensive observation.

CHAP.
II.

IN his memorial, which is preserved among the state papers of Thurloe, he enters fully into a justification of the measures which he recommends. "None in conscience (he observes) may better attempt such an expulsion of the Spaniards from those parts, than the English, who have been often expelled by them from our plantations; as from St. Christopher's, St. Martin's, from Providence and from Tortugas, where the English were inhumanly and most barbarously treated by the Spaniards, who to this day watch for their best advantage to cast us out of all our plantations, and say that all the islands as well as the main belong to them. And in conscience it is lawful to cast that enemy or troublesome neighbour out of his dominions, that would, and hath attempted to cast us out of ours."—He then proceeds to demonstrate, that it is not a work of difficulty to dislodge the Spaniards from some of their most valuable possessions, and recommends the first attack to be made on Hispaniola or Cuba; the former, he observes, "was the Spaniards' first plantation, and therefore it would be to them a bad omen to begin to lose that, which they first enjoyed." "This island (he adds) is not one quarter of it inhabited, and so the more easy to take."—Gage, some years before, had published a book, which is now before me; entitled "A new survey of the West Indies." It contains much curious information respecting the state of Spanish America, at the time that he

(*e*) This Sir Henry Gage was killed at the battle of Culham-Bridge, in 1644. He was ancestor of the late General Gage,* by whom I was favoured with this account of Thomas Gage.

BOOK

II.

resided there. In the dedication to Fairfax, General of the parliament's forces, he combats, with great strength of reasoning, the pretensions of the Spanish Crown to an exclusive right to the countries of the New World: "I know of no title," he observes, "that the Spaniard hath (the Pope's donation excepted) but force, which, by the same title may be repelled.—And, as to the *first discovery*, to me it seems as little reason, that the sailing of a Spanish ship upon the coast of India, should entitle the king of Spain to that country, as the sailing of an Indian or English ship upon the coast of Spain, should entitle either the Indians or English unto the dominion thereof. No question but the just right or title to those countries, appertains to the natives themselves; who, if they should willingly and freely invite the English to their protection, what title soever they have in them, no doubt but they may legally transfer to others. But, to end all disputes of this nature, since God hath given the earth to the sons of men to inhabit, and that there are many vast countries in those parts not yet inhabited, either by Spaniard or Indian, why should my countrymen, the English, be debarred from making use of that, which God, from all beginning, did ordain for the benefit of mankind?"

THESE, or similar arguments, and a long list of Spanish depredations on the subjects of England, made without doubt a deep impression on the mind of Cromwell. It appears indeed that the court of Spain, conscious of having merited the severest vengeance, foresaw an impending storm, and endeavoured to avert it. We are told by Thurloe, that Cardenas the ambassador, in a private audience, congratulated the Protector on his

his elevation to the government, “ assuring him of the true and constant friendship of his master, either in the condition he then stood, or that if he would go a step further, and take upon him the crown, his master would venture the crown of Spain to defend him in it.” These general discourses came afterwards to particular propositions; which Cromwell received with a coldness that alarmed the ambassador; who then desired that former treaties of alliance between the two kingdoms might be renewed, as the first step towards a nearer union. It does not appear that Cromwell had any objection to this proposition. That he sought to involve the nation in an unprovoked and unnecessary war with Spain, or, as Ludlow expresses it, that “ he meant to engage those men in distant services, who otherwise were ready to join in any party against him at home,” though it has been confidently asserted, has been asserted against clear and substantial evidence. . He demanded, it is true, satisfaction for past, and security against future injuries; and he appointed commissioners to treat with the Spanish ambassador thereupon; with whom several conferences were held, chiefly, says Thurloe, on the right interpretation of the treaty of 1630.—The result of those conferences, which I shall give in Thurloe’s own words, affords so full and clear a justification of the Protector’s subsequent proceedings, that no excuse can be offered for those historians by whom this evidence has been wilfully suppressed.

THE chief difficulties (observes Thurloe) were the following, “ 1st. touching the West Indies, the debate whereof was “ occasioned upon the first article of the aforesaid treaty of 1630, “ whereby it is agreed, that there should be peace, amity, and
“ friendship,

BOOK

II.

“ friendship between the two kings and their respective subjects in all parts of the world, as well in Europe as elsewhere. Upon this it was shewn, that in contravention of this article, the English were treated by the Spaniards as enemies, wherever they were met in America, though sailing to and from their own plantations, and insisted that satisfaction was to be given in this, and a good foundation of friendship laid in those parts for the future, between their respective subjects (the English there being very considerable, and whose safety and interest the government here ought to provide for) or else there could be no solid and lasting peace between the two states in Europe.

“ THE second difference was touching the inquisition, &c.— To these two, Don Alonso was pleased to answer; that to ask a liberty from the inquisition, and *free sailing in the West Indies*, was to ask his master's two eyes; and that *nothing could be done in those points, but according to the practice of former times.*

“ THEN it came into debate, before Oliver and his council, with which of these crowns (France or Spain) an alliance was to be chosen. Oliver himself was for a war with Spain, *at least in the West Indies, if satisfaction were not given for the past damages, and things well settled for the future. And most of the council went the same way.*”

FROM the facts and recital which I have thus given, it is apparent that the Spaniards not only were the first aggressors, but had proceeded to those hostilities against the subjects of England, which are unjustifiable even in a state of actual war; and, although the outrages complained of, were such as the most insignificant state in the world would not have

tamely submitted to, from the most powerful; yet did Cromwell, in seeking redress, display his regard to justice by his moderation and temper. He demanded, it is true, reparation for past injuries, and security against future; but he did not order reprisals to be made, until his demand was rejected, and until he was plainly told, that the same hostile line of conduct which the Spaniards had hitherto pursued towards the English in America should be persisted in. Now, as Blome well observes, on this occasion, “ *war must needs be justifiable, when peace is not allowable.*”

THE course of my work would now bring me to an illustration of the Protector's measures in consequence of his appeal to force; the equipment of a powerful armament, its miscarriage at Hispaniola, and success at Jamaica; but of all these transactions a very accurate and circumstantial narrative has already been given in the history of Jamaica by Mr. Long; to whose account I cannot hope to add perspicuity or force. Referring the reader, therefore, to that valuable work, for satisfactory information in these particulars, I shall conclude this chapter with an account of the state of Jamaica, its inhabitants and productions, as it was found by the English forces on its capture in May 1655; observing only, and I mention the circumstance with a regret in which I am sure the reader will participate, that Gage, who planned the expedition, embarked with and perished in it!

THE whole number of white inhabitants on the island, including women and children, did not exceed fifteen hundred. Penn, in his examination before the Protector's coun-

BOOK
II.

cil, on the 12th of September 1655, states them at twelve or fourteen hundred only, of which he says about five hundred men were in arms when the English landed. It is remarkable however that Blome, who compiled a short account of Jamaica so early as 1672, avers that the town of St. Jago de la Vega consisted of two thousand houses, two churches, two chapels and an abbey. There must therefore have happened at some period a wonderful diminution in the number of the white inhabitants, and the expulsion of the Portuguese settlers, as related by this author, appears the more probable. Blome perhaps has given an exaggerated account of the number of the houses; but sufficient evidence remained, till within these few years, of the buildings consecrated to divine worship, particularly of the two churches and the abbey.

OF the other principal settlements, the chief appears to have been at Puerto de Caguaya, since named by the English Port Royal; but though it was next in consequence to St. Jago, it was probably nothing more than an inconsiderable hamlet, established for the purpose of some small traffick with the ships bound from Hispaniola to the continent. Its subsequent rise and extensive prosperity, its deplorable wickedness and fatal catastrophe, are circumstances too well known to be repeated (*f*).

To

(*f*) The following singular inscription appears on a tomb-stone, at Green-Bay, adjoining the Apostles' Battery.

“DIEU SUR TOUT.

“Here lies the body of Lewis Galdy, Esq. who departed this life, at Port Royal, the 22d December 1736, aged eighty. He was born at Montpellier, in France, but left that country for his religion, and came to settle in this island, where

TO the westward of Caguaya was the port of Esquivel (Puerta de Esquivella) so called, I presume, in honour of the governor of that name. This port seems indeed to have been almost deserted at the time of the conquest in 1655, the Spaniards giving the preference to Caguaya; but it was still resorted to by the galleons, as a place of shelter during the hurricane months, and, from its ancient reputation, the English named it *Old Harbour*.

FROM Old Harbour to Punto Negrillo, the western point of the island, the sea-coast was chiefly in savanna, abounding in horned cattle; but there does not appear to have been any settlement in all that great extent of country, except a small hamlet called Oristan, of which however the accounts are obscure and contradictory.

RETURNING eastward, to the north of Port Caguaya was the Hato de Liguany; presenting to the harbour an extensive plain or *savanna*, covered with cedar and other excellent timber. This part of the country was also abundantly stored with horned cattle and horses, which ran wild in great numbers; and the first employment of the English troops was hunting and slaughtering the cattle, for the sake of the hides and tallow, which soon became an article of export. It was supposed by Sedgewicke, that the soldiers had killed 20,000

where he was swallowed up in the great earthquake, in the year 1692, and by the providence of God, was by another shock thrown into the sea, and miraculously saved by swimming, until a boat took him up. He lived many years after, in great reputation, beloved by all who knew him, and much lamented at his death."

BOOK

II.

in the course of the first four months after their arrival; and as to horses, "they were in such plenty (says Goodson) *that* " *we accounted them the vermin of the country (g).*"

EASTWARD of Liguany was the Hato, by some called *Ayala*, by others *Yalos*, and now wrote *Yallabs*; a place, saith Venables "which hath much commodity of planting or erecting of sugar engines of water, by reason of two convenient rivers running through it fit for that purpose." Next to *Ayala* was the Hato called *Morante*. This *Morante* (saith Venables) "is a large and plentiful Hato, being four leagues in length, consisting of many small savannas, and has wild cattle and hogs in very great plenty, and ends at the Mine, which is at the Cape or Point of *Morante* itself, by which toward the north is the port Antonio."

SUCH is the account of Jamaica as transmitted in General Venable's letter to Secretary Thurloe, dated 13th June 1655. The reader will perceive that no mention is made of the north side of the island; which gives room to conclude, as was undoubtedly the fact, that it was one entire desert, from east to west, totally uncultivated and uninhabited.

OF the inland parts, it appears from Sloane, that Guanaboa was famous for its cacao-trees, and the low lands of Clarendon for plantations of tobacco.

(g) "Colonel Barry's house all galleried round (now called Cavaliers) was formerly, when the Spaniards possessed the island, the only place in Liguany inhabited; a rich widow had here a sugar-work, and abundance of cattle in the savannas, near 40,000." (Sloane, vol. i. Introd. p. 73.)—The mountains of Liguany were supposed also to contain mines both of gold and copper.

UPON.

UPON the whole, although the Spaniards had possessed the island a century and a half, not one hundredth part of the plantable land was in cultivation when the English made themselves masters of it. Yet the Spanish settlers had no sooner exterminated, in the manner we have seen, the original proprietors, than they had recourse, with their neighbours of Hispaniola, to the introduction of slaves from Africa. We are told that the number of negroes in the island, at the time of its capture, nearly equalled that of the Whites. It is not easy to discover to what useful purpose the labour of these Blacks was applied. The sloth and penury of the Spanish planters, when the English landed, were extreme. Of the many valuable commodities which Jamaica has since produced in so great abundance, some were altogether unknown, and of the rest the inhabitants cultivated no more than were sufficient for their own expenditure. Their principal export, besides cocoa, consisted of hogs-lard and hides. The sale of these articles, and supplying the few ships that touched at their ports with provisions, in barter for European manufactures, constituted the whole of their commerce; a commerce which the savages of Madagascar conduct with equal ability and success. They possessed nothing of the elegancies of life, nor were they acquainted even with many of those gratifications which, in civilized states, are considered as necessary to the comfort and conveniency of it. They were neither polished by social intercourse, nor improved by education; but passed their days in gloomy languor, enfeebled by sloth and depressed by poverty. Having at the same time but little or no connection with Europe, nor the means of sending their children thither for education

BOOK

II.

education (a circumstance that might have introduced among them, from time to time, some portion of civility and science) they had been for many years in a state of progressive degeneracy, and would probably, in a short time, have expiated the guilt of their ancestors, by falling victims themselves to the vengeance of their slaves. Time indeed had wrought a wonderful change in the manners and dispositions of all the Spanish Americans. It must however be acknowledged, that if they possessed not the abilities of their forefathers, they were unstained with their crimes. If we find among them no traces of that enterprising genius; that unconquerable perseverance, that contempt of toil, danger, and death, which so wonderfully distinguished the great adventurers, who first explored and added a new hemisphere to the Spanish dominion; we must own at the same time that they were happily free from their guilty ambition; their remorseless fanaticism, and frantic cruelty. But, whatever was their character, it is impossible to justify the hard terms imposed by the English commanders on the poor settlers in Jamaica, in requiring them to deliver up their slaves and effects, and quit the country altogether. They pleaded that they were born in the island, and had neither relations, friends, nor country elsewhere, and they declared that they were resolved to perish in the woods, rather than beg their bread in a foreign soil. This was their final answer to the propositions of Venables, the English General, nor could they be brought again to enter into any treaty. The resistance they afterwards made against the efforts of our troops to expel them from the island, may furnish this important lesson to conquerors—that even victory has its limits,

limits, and that injustice and tyranny frequently defeat their own purposes (*b*).

C H A P.

II.

(*b*) The articles of capitulation first agreed on, which may be seen in Burchet's Naval History, are sufficiently liberal. By these all the inhabitants (some few individuals excepted) had their lives and effects granted them, and permission to remain in the country; but on the 4th of June, Venables informs the Lord Protector, that the inhabitants having broken their promises and engagements, he had seized the Governor and other chief persons, and compelled them to subscribe new articles.—What those were he does not say. It appears, however, that it was stipulated by one of them, that the Spanish part of the inhabitants should leave the Island; and it seems probable that this measure was promoted by the intrigues of the Portuguese; for, in a subsequent letter, Venables writes thus: "The Portuguese we hope to make good subjects of. The Spaniards we shall remove." The particulars related in the text, concerning the effect of this determination on the minds of those poor people, are given on the authority of a paper signed, J. Daniel, dated Jamaica 3d of June, and preserved among Thurloe's State Papers, vol. iii. p. 504.

C H A P. III.

Proceedings of the English in Jamaica after its capture.—Col. D'Oyley declared president.—Discontents and mortality among the army.—Vigorous exertions of the Protector.—Col. Brayne appointed commander in chief.—His death.—D'Oyley reassumes the government.—Defeats the Spanish forces, which had invaded the island from Cuba.—His wise and steady administration.—Bucaniers.—Conciliating conduct of Charles II. on his restoration.—First establishment of a regular government in Jamaica.—Lord Windsor's appointment.—Royal proclamation.—American treaty in 1670.—Change of measures on the part of the crown.—New constitution devised for Jamaica.—Earl of Carlisle appointed chief governor for the purpose of enforcing the new system.—Successful opposition of the assembly.—Subsequent disputes respecting the confirmation of their laws.—Terminated by the revenue act of 1728.

BOOK
II.



AFTER the capture of the island, until the restoration of Charles II. the English in Jamaica remained under military jurisdiction. Cromwell had nominated Winslow, Serle and Butler to act as commissioners, with Penn and Venables, intending, I presume, to constitute by this arrangement a council of state, whose authority might mitigate the rigour of the law-martial; but the two generals, with commissioner Butler, returning to England without leave, the sole command of the army devolved on Major General Fortescue, and of the fleet

fleet on Admiral Goodson. Nevertheless it was the intention of Cromwell to have established a civil government in the island on very liberal principles. Soon after he received the account of its capture, he issued a proclamation declaratory of that purpose, and on the return to England of Commissioner Butler, he sent over Major Sedgewicke to supply his place. Sedgewicke arrived in Jamaica in October, but Winflow and Serle having in the mean time fallen victims to the climate, he was unwilling to act under the Protector's commission without further assistance. An instrument of government was thereupon framed, and subscribed, on the eighth of October 1655, by Sedgewicke and the principal officers, who thereby constituted themselves a supreme executive council for managing the general affairs of the island; of which Fortescue was declared president, and he dying soon afterwards, Colonel Edward D'Oyley, the next in command, was chosen to preside in his room. But the situation of the troops required martial array, and strict discipline; for the dispossessed Spaniards and fugitive negroes continued to harass the soldiers with perpetual alarms. Men were daily killed by enemies in ambush. The Spanish blacks had separated themselves from their late masters, and murdered, without mercy, such of the English as rambling about the country fell into their hands. They were even so audacious as to venture by night to attack the English troops in their quarters, and to set fire to some of the houses in which they were lodged, in the town of St. Jago de la Vega, the capital.

BUT the Protector was determined to maintain his conquest, and seemed anxiously bent on peopling the island. While

BOOK

II.

recruits were raising in England, he directed the governors of Barbadoes, and the other British colonies to windward (which at that time were exceedingly populous) to encourage some of their planters to remove to Jamaica, on the assurance of their having lands assigned them there. He dispatched an agent to New England on a similar errand, as well as to engage the people of the northern provinces to furnish provisions to the newly-acquired territory. He gave instructions to his son Henry Cromwell, who was Major General of the forces in Ireland, to engage two or three thousand young persons of both sexes from thence, to become settlers in Jamaica; and he advised with the lord Broghill, who commanded at Edinburgh, on the best means of inducing as great a number to emigrate for the same purpose from Scotland.

IN the mean while the old soldiers within the Island, disliking their situation, and conceiving from the preparations of the government at home, that the Protector had thoughts of confining them to Jamaica for life, became dissatisfied and seditious. Other causes indeed concurred to awaken among them such a spirit of discontent as approached nearly to mutiny. Having at first found, in the country, cattle and swine in great abundance, they had destroyed them with such improvidence and wantonness of profusion, as to occasion a scarcity of fresh provisions in a place which had been represented as abounding in the highest degree. The chief commanders apprehending this event, and finding that the bread and flour which arrived from England were oftentimes spoilt by the length of the voyage and the heat of the climate, had urged

§

the

the soldiers, with great earnestness, to cultivate the soil, and raise, by their own industry, Indian corn, pulse and cassavi, sufficient for their maintenance. They endeavoured to make them sensible that supplies from England must necessarily be casual and uncertain; and, persuasion failing, they would have compelled them by force to plant the ground; but the subaltern officers concurred with the private men, absolutely refusing to contribute in the smallest degree to their own preservation by the means recommended. They were possessed of a passionate longing to return to England, and fondly imagined that the continual great expence of maintaining so large a body of troops at so great a distance, would induce the Protector to relinquish his conquest. They even rooted up the provisions which had been planted and left by the Spaniards. "Our soldiers (writes Sedgewicke) have destroyed all sorts of provisions and cattle. Nothing but ruin attends them wheresoever they go. Dig or plant, they neither will nor can, but are determined rather to starve than work." A scarcity, approaching to a famine, was at length the consequence of such misconduct, and it was accompanied with its usual attendants, disease and contagion. Perhaps there are but few descriptions in history wherein a greater variety of horrors are accumulated than in the letters addressed on this occasion by Sedgewicke and the other principal officers, to the government at home, which are preserved among Thurloe's state papers. Such was the want of food, that snakes, lizards and other vermin, were eagerly eaten, together with unripe fruits and noxious vegetables. This unwholesome diet concurred with other circum-

BOOK

II.

stances to produce an epidemic dysentery, which raged like the plague. For a considerable time 140 men died weekly, and Sedgewicke himself at length perished in the general carnage.

THE Protector, as soon as he had received information of the distracted and calamitous state of the colony, exerted himself, with his usual vigour, to afford it relief. Provisions and necessaries of all kinds were shipped without delay; and Cromwell, distrustful it is said of D'Oyly's attachment, superseded him, by granting a commission of commander in chief of Jamaica, to Col. Brayne, governor of Lochabar in Scotland. This gentleman, with a fleet of transports, and a reinforcement of one thousand recruits, sailed from Port Patrick, the beginning of October 1656, and arrived at Jamaica in December following. Col. Humphreys with his regiment, consisting of 830 men, had landed, some time before, from England; and Stokes, governor of Nevis, with 1500 persons collected in the Windward Islands, had reached Jamaica, and begun an establishment near to the Port of Morant, where some of Stokes's descendants, of the same name, possess at this day considerable property. Another regiment, commanded by Col. Moore, arrived in the beginning of 1657 from Ireland, and some industrious planters followed soon afterwards from New England and Bermudas.

BRAYNE's first accounts are very discouraging. He complains that he found all things in the utmost confusion; that
violent

violent animosities subsisted among the troops; and, above all, that there was a great want of men *cordial to the business*; such is his expression. He desires a remittance of £. 5000, to enable him to erect fortifications, and a further supply of provisions for six months; strenuously recommending, at the same time, a general liberty of trade between the island and all nations in amity with England; an indulgence which he thinks would speedily encourage planters enough to settle in, and improve, the country.

BUT Brayne, though a man of sagacity and penetration, wanted firmness and fortitude. The troops still continued unhealthy, and sickness spreading rapidly amongst the new comers, Brayne, alarmed for his own safety, became as little cordial to the business of settling as the rest. He prayed most earnestly for permission to return to England. In the mean while, by way (as he writes) of precaution against a fever, he weakened himself to a great degree by copious blood-letting; a practice which probably proved fatal to him; for he died at the end of ten months after his arrival. A few days before his death, finding himself in imminent danger, he sent to D'Oyley, and formally transferred his authority to that officer. D'Oyley happily possessed all those qualifications in which Brayne was deficient; yet he entered on his charge with reluctance; for, having already been roughly superseded by the Protector, he expected perhaps such another dismissal. In the letters which he addressed to Cromwell and Fleetwood, on the event of Brayne's decease, he expresses himself with propriety and dignity. "Your highness," he observes

BOOK

II.

to Cromwell, “ is not to be told how difficult it is to command an army without pay, and I tremble to think of the discontents I am to struggle withal, until the return of your commands; though I bless God I have the affection of the people here, beyond any that ever yet commanded them; and a spirit of my own not to sink under the weight of unreasonable discontents.” To Fleetwood he writes, “ I would have refused to accept of this command, if I could have quitted with honour and faithfulness to my country; but I am now resolved to go through, until I receive further orders from his highness, or a discharge from him, which I humbly desire your lordship to effect for me. Honours and riches are not the things I aim at. I bless God I have a soul much above them. Pray, my lord, decline your greatness, and command your secretary to give me an answer; for if I were disrobed of all my titles of honour and great command, yet you know that I am a gentleman, and a faithful friend to my country.”

It was fortunate for his country that his resignation was not accepted, and that the Protector, sensible at length of the ability and merit of this brave man, confirmed him in his command. To the exertions of D'Oyley, seconded and supported by the affection which his soldiers, under all their difficulties and distresses, manifested on every occasion towards him, we owe at this day the possession of Jamaica; the recapture whereof by the Spaniards, towards the end of the year 1657, became to them an object of great national concern. Its defenceless state, the dissatisfaction of the English troops, and the exertions making by Cromwell to afford them relief, as well as

to augment their numbers, led the governor of Cuba to believe, that the juncture was then arrived for retrieving the honour of his country, by the restoration of this island to its dominion. Having communicated to the viceroy of Mexico, a scheme built on this idea, and received the sanction and support of that officer, he made preparations for a formidable invasion, and appointed Don Christopher Sali Arnoldo, who had been governor of Jamaica at the time of its capture, to take the conduct and command of the enterprize.

ON the eighth of May 1658, thirty companies of Spanish infantry landed at Rio Nuevo, a small harbour on the north side of the island. They were provided with eight months provisions, ordnance and ammunition of all kinds, and they brought engineers and artificers for erecting extensive fortifications. Twelve days had elapsed before D'Oyley knew of their landing, and six weeks more intervened by the time that he was able to approach them by sea. During this interval, the Spaniards had established themselves in great force; but D'Oyley at length reaching Rio Nuevo, with seven hundred and fifty of his best-disciplined soldiers, attacked them in their entrenchments; carried by assault a strong fortress which they had erected on an eminence over the harbour; and compelled the late unfortunate governor to get back as he could to Cuba, after the loss of all his stores, ordnance, ammunition and colours, and of one half the forces which he had brought with him. Few victories have been more decisive; nor does history furnish many instances of greater military skill and intrepidity, than those which were displayed by the English on this occasion.

BOOK

II.

AFTER so signal a defeat, the Spaniards made no effort of consequence to reclaim Jamaica. A party of the ancient Spanish inhabitants, however, still lurked in the woods, and Sasi, their governor, had returned to share their fortunes; but a body of their fugitive negroes having surrendered to D'Oyley on the promise of freedom, these wretches informed him where their late masters were sheltered; and joined some troops that were sent in pursuit of them: thus the poor Spaniards were entirely routed, and the few that survived, by escaping to Cuba, took their last farewell of a country, their fond attachment to which, it is not possible to reflect on, without emotions of pity.

By the wise, steady and provident administration of D'Oyley, the affairs of the island began at length to wear a more promising aspect. The army was now become tolerably healthy. Some successful efforts in raising Indian corn, cassavi, tobacco, and cacao, had given encouragement to a spirit of planting. The arrival of several merchant ships, for the purpose of traffic, contributed still further to the promotion of industry, and, on the whole, the dawn of future prosperity began to be visible.

BUT, as hath been truly observed by a well-informed author (*a*), nothing contributed so much to the settlement and opulence of this island in early times, as the resort to it of those men called Bucaniers; the wealth which they acquired having been speedily transferred to people whose industry

(*a*) European Settlements.

was employed in cultivation or commerce. Of that singular association of adventurers it were to be wished that a more accurate account could be obtained than has hitherto been given: I will just observe in this place, that such of them as belonged to Jamaica were not those piratical plunderers and publick robbers which they are commonly represented. A Spanish war, commenced on the justest grounds on the part of the English, still prevailing in the West Indies, they were furnished with regular letters of marque and reprisal. After the restoration of Charles II. the king ordered that they should receive every encouragement and protection; nor, if we may believe Sir William Beeston, (*b*) did his majesty disdain to become a partner in the bucaniering business. It is indeed related, that he continued to exact and receive a share of the booty, even after he had publickly issued orders for the suppression of this species of hostility (*c*).

PEOPLE of all professions, and from all parts of the British empire, now resorted to Jamaica. The confusions which

(*b*) MS. Journal *penes me*.

(*c*) The favour extended by the king to Henry Morgan, the most celebrated of the English Bucaniers (a man indeed of an elevated mind and invincible courage) arose doubtless, in a great measure, from the *good understanding* that prevailed between them in the copartnership that I have mentioned. When the Earl of Carlisle returned from Jamaica, Morgan was appointed deputy-governor and lieutenant-general in his absence; and, proceeding himself, at a subsequent period, to England, he was received very graciously, and had the honour of knighthood conferred on him by his sovereign. I hope, therefore, and indeed have good reason to believe, that all or most of the heavy accusations which have been brought against this gallant commander, of outrageous cruelty towards his Spanish captives, had no foundation in truth.

BOOK

II.



overspread England after the death of Cromwell, impelled many to seek for safety and quiet in the Plantations. Some of those men who had distinguished themselves by their activity, in bringing their unhappy monarch to the scaffold, considered this island as a sure place of refuge. Foreseeing, from the temper which began to prevail amongst all ranks of people in England, especially towards the beginning of the year 1660, that the nation was united in its wishes for the re-establishment of the ancient frame of government, they hoped to find that safety in a colony composed of Cromwell's adherents, which they were apprehensive would shortly be denied them at home (*d*).

BUT altho' men of this stamp were silently permitted to fix themselves in the island, the general body both of the army and

(*d*) Some of those men who had sat as judges at the trial of Charles I. are said to have become peaceable settlers here, and to have remained after the Restoration unnoticed and unmolested. Waite and Blagrove are reckoned of the number, and General Harrison was earnestly pressed to follow their example; but, suitably to his character, he gloried in the ignominious death that awaited him. After his execution, his children fixed their fortunes in this island, where some of his descendants, in the female line, are still living, in good credit, in the parish of St. Andrew. It is reported also, that the remains of President Bradshaw were interred in Jamaica; and I observe in a splendid book, entitled *Memoirs of Thomas Hollis*, an epitaph which is said to have been inscribed on a cannon that was placed on the President's grave; but it is, to my own knowledge, a modern composition. President Bradshaw died in London, in November 1659, and had a magnificent funeral in Westminster abbey. A son of Scott, the Regicide, fixed himself in this island, and settled the plantation called Y S in St. Elizabeth. From a daughter of this man was descended the late alderman Beckford.

people caught the reviving flame of loyalty, and sincerely participated in the national triumph on the king's return. The restored monarch, on his part, not only overlooked their past transgressions, but prudently forbore also to awaken their jealousy, by enquiring after any of those obnoxious characters to whom they had afforded protection. To conciliate the affections of the colonists, whose valour had annexed so important an appendage to his dominions, the king even confirmed their favourite General in his command; appointing D'Oyley, by a commission which bore date the thirteenth of February 1661, chief governor of the island. He was ordered, at the same time, to release the army from military subordination, to erect courts of judicature, and, with the advice of a council, *to be elected by the inhabitants*, to pass laws suitable to the exigencies of the colony.

THIS memorable appointment of General D'Oyley, with a council elected by the people, may be considered as the first establishment of a regular civil government in Jamaica, after the English had become masters of it; but, in order to create full confidence of security in the minds of the inhabitants, further measures were necessary on the part of the sovereign; and they were readily adopted. D'Oyley desiring to be recalled, the Lord Windsor was nominated in his room, and directed to publish, on his arrival, a royal and gracious proclamation, wherein, for the purpose of encouraging the settlement of the country, allotments of land were offered under such terms as were usual in other plantations, with such farther convenient and suitable privileges and immunities, as the grantees should reasonably

Z 2

require.

BOOK

II.

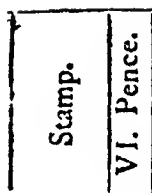
require. The proclamation then proceeds in the words following:—" And we do further publish and declare, that all the
 " children of our natural-born subjects of England, to be born
 " in Jamaica, SHALL, FROM THEIR RESPECTIVE BIRTHS,
 " BE REPUTED TO BE, AND SHALL BE, FREE DENIZENS OF
 " ENGLAND, AND SHALL HAVE THE SAME PRIVILEGES, TO
 " ALL INTENTS AND PURPOSES, AS OUR FREE-BORN SUB-
 " JECTS OF ENGLAND; and that all free persons shall have
 " liberty, without interruption, to transport themselves and their
 " families, and any of their goods (except only coin and bullion)
 " from any of our dominions and territories to the said island
 " of Jamaica, &c (*e*)."—These important declarations have
 always

(*e*) As the reader may be desirous of seeing this proclamation at large, it is here inserted *verbatim*.

" *Decima Septima Pars Patentium de Anno Regni Regis Caroli Secundi Tertio decimo. Car. 2di. 13tio.*

A PROCLAMACON, for the encouraging of Planters in his Majesty's island of Jamaica in the West-Indies.

5. WE being fully satisfied that our island of Jamaica, being a pleasant and most fertile soyle, and scituate comodiously for trade and commerce, is likely, through God's blessing, to bee a greate benefitt and advantage to this, and other our kingdomes and dominions, have thought fitt, for encourageing of our subjects as well such as are already upon the said island, as all others that shall transport themselves thither, and reside and plant there, to declare and publish, and wee doe hereby declare and publish, that thirtie acres of improveable lands shall bee granted and allotted, to every such person, male or female, being twelve years old, or upwards, who now resides, or within two years next ensuing, shall reside upon the said island, and that the same shall bee assigned and sett out by the governor and councill, within six weekes next after notice shall bee given, in writing, subscribed by such planter or planters, or some of them in behalfe of the



always been justly considered, by the inhabitants of Jamaica, as a solemn recognition and confirmation by the crown, of those rights which are inherent in, and unalienable from, the person of a subject of England, and of which, so long as he preserves

CHAP.

III.

Stamp.	VI. Pence
--------	-----------

the rest, to the governor or such officer as hee shall appoint in that behalfe, signifying their resolutions to plant there, and when they intend to bee on the place; and in case they doe not goe thither, with in six months then next ensuing, the said allotment shall be void, and free to bee assigned to any other planter, and that every person and persons to whom such assignment shall bee made, shall hold and enjoy the said lands, soe to bee assigned, and all houses, edifices, buildings and inclosures thereupon to bee built or made, to them and their heirs for ever, by and under such tenures as is usual in other plantations subject to us. Nevertheless they are to bee obliged to serve in armies upon any insurrection, mutiny, or forraigne invasion, and that the said assignments and allotments shall be made and confirmed under the publique seal of the said island, with power to create any mannor or manners, and with such convenient and suitable priveledges and imunities as the grantee shall reasonably desire and require, and a draught of such assignment shall bee prepared by our learned counsell in the lawe, and delivered to the governor to that purpose, and that all fishings and pischaries, and all copper, lead, tin, iron, coales and all other mines (except gold and silver) within such respective allotments shall bee enjoyed by the grantees thereof, reserving only a twentieth part of the product of the said mines to our use. And wee doe further publish and declare, that all children of any of our naturall-borne subjects of *England*, to bee borne in *Jamaica*, shall from their respective births, bee reputed to bee, and shall bee, free Denizens of *England*; and shall have the same priveledges, to all intents and purposes, as our free-borne subjects of *England*, and that all free persons shall have libertie without interruption, to transport themselves, and their families and any their goods (except onley coyne and bullion) from any our dominions and territories to the said island of *Jamaica*. And wee doe strictly charge and command all planters, soldiers and others, upon the said island, to yield obedience to the lawfull commands of our right trusty and welbeloved Thomas Lord *Windfor*, now our governor of our said island, and to every

BOOK

II.

serves his allegiance, emigration for the benefit of the state cannot, and surely ought not, to divest him. Pursuant to, and in the spirit of the proclamation, the governor was instructed to call an assembly, to be indifferently chosen by the people at large, that they might pass laws for their own internal regulation and government; a privilege, which being enjoyed by such of their fellow subjects as remained within the realm, it is presumed they had an undoubted right to exercise, with this limitation only, that the laws which they should pass, were not subversive of their dependance on the parent state (*f*).

To these several testimonies of royal justice and favour towards the new colonists, may be added the additional security obtained for them by the American treaty, concluded and signed at Madrid in the month of June 1670. For, after the restoration, doubts were raised by the partizans of royalty, whether,

every other governor thereof for the tyme being, under paine of our displeasure and such penalties as may bee inflicted thereupon. *Given at our court at Whitehall, the fourteenth day of December.* P^r. ipm^r. Regem.

This is a true copy of the original record remaining in the Chapple of the Rolls, having been examined by me Henry Rooke, Cl^r of the Rolls.
VERA-COPIA.

(*f*) His Majesty was likewise pleased to favour the island with a broad seal with the following arms, viz. a cross gules charged with five pine-apples in a field argent; *supporters*, two Indians plum'd and condaled; *crest*, an alligator vivant. The inscription in the orb,

Ecce alium Ramos porrexit in orbem
Nec sterilis est crux.

as the elevation of Cromwell was adjudged an usurpation, the conquests which had been made under the sanction of his authority, could be rightfully maintained by a kingly government? Although nothing could well be more futile than these suggestions, it was nevertheless thought necessary to guard against the conclusions which Spain might deduce from them. This precaution partly gave rise to the seventh article of the treaty above referred to, which is conceived in the words following, viz. “ The King of Great Britain, his heirs and
 “ successors, shall have, hold and possess, for ever, with full
 “ right of sovereign dominion, property and possession, all lands,
 “ countries, islands, colonies and dominions whatever, situated
 “ in the West Indies, or any part of America, which the said
 “ king of Great Britain and his subjects, do, at this present,
 “ hold and possess; so that in regard thereof, or upon any
 “ colour or pretence whatever, nothing may or ought ever
 “ to be urged, nor any question or controversy moved concern-
 “ ing the same hereafter (g).”

HITHERTO, it must be admitted that the sovereign authority was properly exerted in defence of the just rights of the crown, and in securing to its distant subjects the enjoyment of their possessions; but unhappily Charles II. had neither steadiness nor integrity. About the period

(g) From this recital may be seen the folly of the very prevalent notion, that the sovereigns of Spain, or some of their subjects, still keep up pretensions to Jamaica, or claim property therein, as not having been formally ceded to the crown of England.

BOOK

II.

of the American treaty, a scheme having been formed by him, or his ministry, for subverting the liberties of the people at home, it is the less wonderful, that the privileges enjoyed by the colonists abroad, should have been regarded by the king with a jealousy, which, encreasing with the encrease of their numbers, broke out at length into acts of open hostility and violence towards them.

IN the beginning of 1678, the storm fell on Jamaica. A new system of legislation was adopted for this island, founded nearly on the model of the Irish constitution under Poynings's act; and the Earl of Carlisle was appointed chief governor for the purpose of enforcing it. A body of laws was prepared by the privy council of England, among the rest a bill for settling a perpetual revenue on the crown, which his lordship was directed to offer to the assembly, requiring them to adopt the whole code, without amendment or alteration. In future the heads of all bills (money bills excepted) were to be suggested in the first instance by the governor and council, and transmitted to his majesty to be approved or rejected at home; on obtaining the royal confirmation, they were to be returned under the great seal in the shape of laws, and passed by the general assembly; which was to be convened for no other purpose than that, and the business of voting the usual supplies; unless in consequence of special orders from England.

IF we reflect only on the distance of Jamaica from Great Britain, we may pronounce, without hesitation, that it was impossible for the colony to exist under such a constitution

and system of government. What misconduct on the part of the inhabitants, or what secret expectation on the part of the crown, originally gave birth to this project, it is now difficult to determine. The most probable opinion is this.—In the year 1663, the assembly of Barbadoes were prevailed on, by very unjustifiable means, as will hereafter be shewn, to grant an internal revenue to the crown, of $4\frac{1}{2}$ per cent. on the gross exported produce of that island for ever. It is not unlikely that the steady refusal of the Jamaica planters to burthen themselves and their posterity with a similar imposition, exciting the resentment of the king, first suggested the idea of depriving them of those constitutional franchises which alone could give security and value to their possessions. Happily for the present inhabitants, neither secret intrigue nor undisguised violence were successful. Their gallant ancestors transmitted to their posterity their estates unincumbered with such a tax, and their political rights unimpaired by the system of government attempted to be forced on them. “The assembly (says Mr. Long) rejected the new constitution with indignation. No threats could frighten, no bribes could corrupt, nor arts nor arguments persuade them to consent to laws that would enslave their posterity.” Let me add, as a tribute of just acknowledgment to the noble efforts of this gentleman’s great ancestor, Col. Long, that it was to *him*, Jamaica was principally indebted for its deliverance. As chief judge of the island, and member of the council, he exerted, on this important occasion, the powers with which he was invested, with such ability and fortitude, in defence of the people, as to baffle and finally overpower every effort to enslave them. The governor, after

BOOK

II.

dismissing him from the posts which he had filled with such honour to himself, and advantage to the publick, conveyed him a state prisoner to England. These despotick measures were ultimately productive of good. Col. Long, being heard before the king and privy council, pointed out with such force of argument, the evil tendency of the measures which had been pursued, that the English ministry reluctantly submitted. The assembly had their deliberative powers restored to them, and Sir Thomas Lynch, who had presided in the island as lieutenant-governor from 1670 to 1674, very much to the satisfaction of the inhabitants, was appointed captain-general and chief governor in the room of Lord Carlisle (*b*).

It might have been hoped that all possible cause of future contest with the crown, on the question of political rights, was now happily obviated; but the event proved that this expectation was fallacious. Although the assembly had recovered the inestimable privilege of framing such laws for their internal government as their exigencies might require, of which doubtless themselves alone were competent to judge, and although it was not alledged that the laws which they had passed, as well before, as after the re-establishment of their rights, were repugnant to those of the mother-country, yet the royal confirmation of a great part of them had been con-

(*b*) I have subjoined, as an appendix to this book, “an Historical Account of the Constitution of Jamaica,” by a late Chief Governor of distinguished abilities, wherein the particulars of Lord Carlisle’s administration are detailed at large.— This historical account is now published for the first time, and cannot fail of proving extremely acceptable to the reader.

stantly refused, and still continued to be withheld. It was indeed admitted, that the English who captured the island, carried with them as their birth-right, the law of England as it then stood; but much of the English law was inapplicable to the situation and condition of the new colonists; and it was contended that they had no right to any statute of the British parliament, which had passed subsequent to their emigration, unless its provisions were specially extended to the colony by name. The courts of judicature within the island, had however, from necessity, admitted many such statutes to be pleaded, and grounded several judgments and important determinations upon them; and the assembly had passed bills adopting several of the English statutes which did not otherwise bind the island; but several of those bills, when sent home for the royal confirmation, and those judgments and determinations of the courts of law, when brought by appeal before the king and council, though not disallowed, remained unconfirmed; and in this unsettled state, the affairs of Jamaica were suffered to remain for the space of fifty years.

THE true cause of such inflexibility on the part of the crown, was no other than the old story of revenue. For the purpose, as it was pretended, of defraying the expence of erecting and repairing fortifications, and for answering some other publick contingencies, the ministers of Charles II. had procured, as hath been observed, from the assembly of Barbadoes, and indeed from most of the other British West Indian colonies, the grant of a perpetual internal revenue. The refusal of Jamaica, to concur in a similar establishment, the punishment provided for her

BOOK

11.

contumacy, and the means of her deliverance, have been already stated; but it was found that the lenity of the crown in relinquishing the system of compulsion, was expected to produce the effect which oppression had failed to accomplish. The English government claimed a return from the people of Jamaica, for having dropt an oppressive and pernicious project, as if it had actually conferred upon them a positive and permanent benefit; a claim which all the British ministers, from the restoration of King Charles to the reign of George II. very cordially justified.

THE assembly however remained unconvinced. Among other objections, they pleaded that the money granted by the Island of Barbadoes was notoriously appropriated to purposes widely different from those for which it was expressly given; and they demanded some pledge or security against a similar misapplication; in case they should subject their country to a permanent and irrevocable tax. The ministers refused to give any satisfaction in this particular; and finding the assembly were equally resolute to pass their supply bills from year to year only, as usual, advised the sovereign, from a spirit of vindictive policy, to wave the confirmation of the laws, and to suffer the administration of justice in the island, to remain on the precarious footing that I have described.

SUCH was the actual situation of Jamaica until the year 1728, when a compromise was happily effected. In that year the assembly consented to settle on the crown a standing irrevocable revenue of £.8,000 per annum, on certain conditions, to which the crown agreed, and of which the following are the principal:

1st.

1st. THAT the quit-rents arising within the island (then estimated at £.1,460 per annum) should constitute a part of such revenue. 2dly. That the body of their laws should receive the royal assent. And, 3dly. That “all such laws and statutes of England, as had been at any time esteemed, introduced, used, accepted, or received, as laws in the island, should be and continue laws of Jamaica for ever.” The revenue act, with this important declaration therein, was accordingly passed, and its confirmation by the king, put an end to a contest no less disgraceful to the government at home, than injurious to the people within the island.

I HAVE thus endeavoured, with as much brevity as the subject would admit, to trace the political constitution of Jamaica from infancy to maturity; but although its parentage and principles are British, its outward form has been modified and regulated by many unforeseen events, and local circumstances. In its present appearance, and actual exercise, however, it so nearly resembles the system of government in the other British West India Islands, that one general description (which I reserve for a subsequent part of my work) will comprehend the whole. A minute detail of local occurrences and internal politicks, would not, I presume, be interesting to the general reader.

☞ In the year 1687 Christopher Duke of Albermarle was appointed chief governor of Jamaica. This nobleman was the only surviving son and heir of General Monk, who had restored Charles II. and I mention him principally as exhibiting a striking instance of the instability of human greatness. The father had been gratified with the highest rewards that a sovereign could bestow on a subject;

BOOK

II.

subject; a dukedom, the garter, and a princely fortune; and the son, reduced to beggary by vice and extravagance, was driven to the necessity of imploring bread from James II. The king, to be freed from his importunities, gave him the government of Jamaica; where, dying childless, a short time after his arrival, his honours were extinguished with his life. The noble duke lived long enough however to collect a considerable sum of money for his creditors; for entering into partnership with Sir William Phipps, who had discovered the wreck of a Spanish Plate ship, which had been stranded in 1659, on a shoal to the north-east of Hispaniola, they sent out sloops from Jamaica, provided with skilful divers, to search for the hidden treasure, and are said to have actually recovered twenty-six tons of silver. The conduct of this noble governor, on his arrival, affords many curious instances of the arbitrary principles of the times; among others, the following is not the least remarkable.—Having called an assembly, his grace dissolved them abruptly, because one of the members, in a debate, repeated the old adage, *salus populi suprema lex*. His grace afterwards took the member into custody, and caused him to be fined £. 600 for this offence. With his grace came over Father Thomas Churchill, a Romish pastor, sent out by James II. to convert the island to popery; but his grace's death, and the revolution in 1688, blasted the good father's project. The dutchess accompanied her husband; a circumstance which the speaker of the assembly in his first address expatiated upon in a high strain of eloquence. "It is an honour (said he) which the opulent kingdoms of Mexico and Peru could never arrive at, *and even Columbus's ghost would be appeased for all the indignities he endured of the Spaniards, could he but know that his own beloved soil was hallowed by such footsteps!* Having mentioned this lady, the reader, I am persuaded, will pardon me for adding the following particulars of her history. On the death of the duke, her first husband, his grace's coadjutors in the diving business (many of whom had been bucaniers) complained that they had not received their full share of the prize-money, and her grace who had got possession of the treasure, refusing to part with a shilling, they formed a scheme to seize her person in the king's house in Spanish Town, and carry her off. Luckily she received some intimation of the plot a day or two before it was to have been carried into execution, and communicated her apprehensions

hensions to the House of Assembly, who thereupon appointed a formidable committee of their ablest bodied members to guard her person by day and night, until she was safely embarked in one of the king's ships. She arrived in England, in the Assistance man of war, with all her treasure, the beginning of June 1688, and some years afterwards fell into a state of mental imbecility, in the progress of which she pleased herself with the notion, that the Emperor of China having heard of her immense riches was coming to pay his addresses to her. She even made magnificent preparations for his reception. As she was perfectly gentle and good-humoured in her lunacy, her attendants not only encouraged her in her folly, but contrived also to turn it to good account, by persuading a needy peer (the first duke of Montague) to personate his Chinese majesty, and deceive her into wedlock, which he actually did; and with greater success than honesty, or, I should imagine, even the law would warrant, got possession by this means of her wealth, and then confined her as a lunatick. Cibber, the comedian, who thought it a good jest, introduced the circumstance on the stage, and it forms a scene in his play, called the *Sick Lady Cured*. Her grace survived her husband, the pretended emperor, for many years, and died in 1734, at the great age of 98. Her frenzy remained however to the last, and she was served on the knee as Empress of China to the day of her death.

In the month of June 1692, happened that tremendous earthquake which swallowed up great part of Port Royal. A description of it, dreadfully minute, may be found in the Philosophical Transactions; but it is not generally known that the town was chiefly built on a bank of sand, adhering to a rock in the sea, and that a very slight concussion, aided by the weight of the buildings, would probably have accomplished its destruction. I am inclined therefore to suspect that the description of the shock is much exaggerated. The inhabitants were scarcely recovered from the terrors occasioned by the earthquake, when they were alarmed with an account of an intended invasion by an armament from Hispaniola, commanded by Mons. Du Cassé, the governor of that island, in person. Accordingly, on the 17th of June 1694, a fleet of three men of war and twenty privateers (having on board 1,500 land forces) appeared off Cow Bay, where eight hundred
of

BOOK

II.

of the soldiers were landed, with orders to desolate the country as far as Port Morant. These barbarians obeyed their instructions to the full extent. They not only set fire to every settlement they came to, but tortured their prisoners in the most shocking manner, and murdered great numbers in cold blood, after making them behold the violation of their wives by their own negroes. Such at least is the account transmitted by Sir William Beeston, the governor, to the secretary of state. Unfortunately, the militia of this part of the country had been drawn off to guard the capital; whereby the French continued their ravages without resistance, and having set fire to all the plantations within their reach, and seized about one thousand negroes, Du Cassé sailed to leeward, and anchored in Carlisle Bay, in the parish of Vere. This place had no other fortification than an ill-contrived breast-work, manned by a detachment of two hundred men from the militia of St. Elizabeth and Clarendon, which Du Cassé attacked with all his force. The English made a gallant resistance; but Colonel Cleyborn, Lieutenant Colonel Smart, Captain Vassal, and Lieutenant Dawkins being killed, and many others dangerously wounded, they were compelled to retreat. Happily, at this moment, arrived five companies of militia, which the governor had sent to their assistance from Spanish Town. These, though they had marched thirty miles without refreshment, immediately charged the enemy with such vigour, as entirely to change the fortune of the day. The French retreated to their ships, and Du Cassé soon afterwards returned to Hispaniola with his ill-gotten booty.

The next most important event in the history of this island, was the rebellion of the negroes in 1760, of which I shall probably have occasion to give some account, when I come to treat of negro slavery, and the character and disposition of the newly imported Africans.

CHAP. IV.

Situation.—Climate.—Face of the Country.—Mountains, and advantages derived from them.—Soil.—Lands in Culture.—Lands uncultivated, and observations thereon.—Woods and Timbers.—Rivers and Medicinal Springs.—Ores.—Vegetable Classes.—Grain.—Grasses.—Kitchen-garden produce, and Fruits for the Table, &c. &c.

JAMAICA is situated in the Atlantick Ocean, about four thousand miles south-west of England. It has the island of Hispaniola, at the distance of thirty leagues, to the east: The Island of Cuba, about the same distance, to the north: The Gulph of Honduras to the west; and Carthagena, on the great continent of South America, to the south, distant one hundred and forty-five leagues.

CHAP.
IV.

THE center of Jamaica lies in about $18^{\circ} 12'$, north latitude, and in longitude about $76^{\circ} 45'$ west from London. From these data the geographical reader will perceive that the climate, although tempered and greatly mitigated by various causes, some of which will be presently explained, is extremely hot, with little variation from January to December; that the days and nights are nearly of equal duration; there being little more than two hours difference between the longest day and the shortest; that there is very little twilight; and finally, that when it is twelve o'clock at noon in London, it is about seven in the morning in Jamaica.

BOOK

II.

THE general appearance of the country differs greatly from most parts of Europe; yet the north and south sides of the island, which are separated by a vast chain of mountains extending from east to west, differ at the same time widely from each other. When Columbus first discovered Jamaica, he approached it on the northern side; and beholding that part of the country which now constitutes the parish of St. Anne, was filled with delight and admiration at the novelty, variety, and beauty of the prospect. The whole of the scenery is indeed superlatively fine, nor can words alone (at least any that I can select) convey a just idea of it. A few leading particulars I may perhaps be able to point out, but their combinations are infinitely various, and to be understood must be seen.

THE country at a small distance from the shore rises into hills, which are more remarkable for beauty than boldness; being all of gentle acclivity, and commonly separated from each other by spacious vales and romantick inequalities; but they are seldom craggy, nor is the transition from the hills to the vallies oftentimes abrupt. In general, the hand of nature has rounded every hill towards the top with singular felicity. The most striking circumstances however attending these beautiful swells are the happy disposition of the groves of pimento, with which most of them are spontaneously clothed, and the consummate verdure of the turf underneath, which is discoverable in a thousand openings; presenting a charming contrast to the deeper tints of the pimento. As this tree, which is no less remarkable for fragrancy than beauty, suffers no rival plant to flourish within its shade, these groves are not only clear of underwood,

derwood, but even the grass beneath is seldom luxuriant. The soil in general being a chalky marl, which produces a close and clean turf, as smooth and even as the finest English lawn, and in colour infinitely brighter. Over this beautiful surface the pimento spreads itself in various compartments. In one place, we behold extensive groves; in another, a number of beautiful groups, some of which crown the hills, while others are scattered down the declivities. To enliven the scene, and add perfection to beauty, the bounty of nature has copiously watered the whole district. No part of the West Indies, that I have seen, abounds with so many delicious streams. Every valley has its rivulet, and every hill its cascade. In one point of view, where the rocks overhang the ocean, no less than eight transparent waterfalls are beheld in the same moment. Those only who have been long at sea, can judge of the emotion which is felt by the thirsty voyager at so enchanting a prospect.

SUCH is the foreground of the picture. As the land rises towards the center of the island, the eye, passing over the beauties that I have recounted, is attracted by a boundless amphitheatre of wood,

Insuperable height of loftiest shade,
Cedar; and branching palm:

An immensity of forest; the outline of which melts into the distant blue hills, and these again are lost in the clouds.

ON the southern side of the island, the scenery, as I have before observed, is of a different nature. In the landscape we

BOOK

II.

have treated of, the prevailing characteristics are variety and beauty: in that which remains, the predominant features are grandeur and sublimity. When I first approached this side of the island by sea, and beheld, from afar, such of the stupendous and soaring ridges of the blue mountains, as the clouds here and there disclosed, the imagination (forming an indistinct but awful idea of what was concealed, by what was thus partially displayed) was filled with admiration and wonder. Yet the sensation which I felt was allied rather to terror than delight. Though the prospect before me was in the highest degree magnificent, it seemed a scene of magnificent desolation. The abrupt precipice and inaccessible cliff, had more the aspect of a chaos than a creation; or rather seemed to exhibit the effects of some dreadful convulsion, which had laid nature in ruins. Appearances however improved as we approached; for amidst ten thousand bold features, too hard to be softened by culture, many a spot was soon discovered where the hand of industry had awakened life and fertility. With these pleasing intermixtures, the flowing line of the lower range of mountains (which now began to be visible, crowned with woods of majestic growth) combined to soften and relieve the rude solemnity of the loftier eminences; till at length the savannas at the bottom met the sight. These are vast plains, clothed chiefly with extensive cane-fields; displaying, in all the pride of cultivation, the verdure of spring blended with the exuberance of autumn, and bounded only by the ocean; on whose bosom a new and ever-moving picture strikes the eye; for innumerable vessels are discovered in various directions, some crowding

crowding into, and others bearing away from, the bays and harbours with which the coast is every where indented. Such a prospect of human ingenuity and industry, employed in exchanging the superfluities of the Old World, for the productions of the New, opens another, and, I might add, an almost untrodden field, for contemplation and reflection.

Thus the mountains of the West Indies, if not, in themselves, objects of perfect beauty, contribute greatly towards the beauty of general nature; and surely the inhabitants cannot reflect, but with the deepest sense of gratitude to Divine Providence, on the variety of climate, so conducive to health, serenity and pleasure, which these elevated regions afford them. On this subject I speak from actual experience. In a maritime situation, on the sultry plains of the south side, near the town of Kingston, where I chiefly resided during the space of fourteen years, the general medium of heat during the hottest months (from June to November, both inclusive) was eighty degrees on Fahrenheit's thermometer (*a*). At a villa eight miles distant, in the highlands of Liguanea, the thermometer seldom rose, in the hottest part of the day, above seventy. Here then was a difference of ten degrees in eight miles; and in the morning and evening the difference was

(*a*) In the other months, viz. from December to May, the thermometer ranges from 70 to 80°. The night air in the months of December and January is sometimes surprisingly cool: I have known the thermometer so low at sunrise as 69°, even in the town of Kingston; but in the hottest months, the difference between the temperature of noon-day and midnight is not more than 5 or 6°.

much.

BOOK
II.

much greater. At Cold Spring, the seat of Mr. Wallen, a very high situation six miles further in the country, possessed by a gentleman who has taste to relish its beauties and improve its productions, the general state of the thermometer is from 55 to 65°. It has been observed so low as 44°; so that a fire there, even at noon-day, is not only comfortable but necessary a great part of the year (*b*). It may be supposed, that a sudden transition from the hot atmosphere of the plains, to the chill air of the higher regions, is commonly productive of mischievous effects on the human frame; but this, I believe, is seldom the case, if the traveller, as prudence dictates, sets off at the dawn of the morning (when the pores of the skin

(*b*) Cold Spring is 4,200 feet above the level of the sea. The soil is a black mould on a brown marl; but few or none of the tropical fruits will flourish in so cold a climate. Neither the nesberry, the avocado pear, the star apple, nor the orange, will bear within a considerable height of Mr. Wallen's garden; but many of the English fruits, as the apple, the peach, and the strawberry, flourish there in great perfection, with several other valuable exoticks; among which I observed a great number of very fine plants of the *tea-tree* and other oriental productions. The ground in its native state is almost entirely covered with different sorts of the *fern*, of which Mr. Wallen has reckoned about 400 distinct species. A person visiting Cold Spring for the first time, almost conceives himself transported to a distant part of the world; the air and face of the country so widely differing from that of the regions he has left. Even the birds are all strangers to him. Among others, peculiar to these lofty regions, is a species of the swallow, the plumage of which varies in colour like the neck of a drake; and there is a very fine song-bird called the *fish-eye*, of a blackish brown, with a white ring round the neck. I visited this place in December 1788, the thermometer stood at 57° at sun-rise, and never exceeded 64° in the hottest part of the day. I thought the climate the most delightful that I had ever experienced. On the Blue Mountain peak, which is 7,431 feet from the level of the sea, the thermometer was found to range from 47° at sun-rise to 58° at noon, even in the month of August. See Med. Comment. Eding. 1789.

are in some measure shut) and is clothed somewhat warmer than usual. With these precautions, excursions into the uplands are always found safe, salubrious, and delightful. I will observe too, in the words of an agreeable writer (*c*), that “on the tops of high mountains, where the air is pure and refined, and where there is not that immense weight of gross vapours pressing upon the body, the mind acts with greater freedom, and all the functions, both of soul and body, are performed in a superior manner.” I wish I could add, with the same author, that “the mind at the same time leaves all low and vulgar sentiments behind it, and in approaching the ethereal regions, shakes off its earthly affections, and acquires something of celestial purity (*d*)!”

To

(*c*) Brydone.

(*d*) In describing the rural features of Jamaica, the district called *Pedro Plains*, deserves particular notice. It is a level country on a high bluff called *Pedro Point*, situated on the south-west coast, in the parish of St. Elizabeth. I am indebted to a friend for the following interesting account of this part of the island, which deserves to be better known and better peopled than it seems to be at present.

“Pedro Plains differ from every other *Savanna* of the island, and from any part that I have seen of Cuba. From the district of Fulleriswood, in St. Elizabeth’s parish, it runs eastward along the coast on an easy ascent to the highest ridge, which is called *Tophill*; from whence it stretches inland more than 20 miles in length, and about five in width. It is not altogether unlike the downs in some parts of England, and is most beautifully dotted with clumps of wood, amongst which the aloe, torch thistle, and other plants of that genus, flourish in great luxuriance, from half an acre, to many acres in extent; the boundaries being as neatly defined as if kept so by art. The soil in colour is the deepest red, baked hard on the surface by the action of the sun, but of so porous a nature as to absorb the heaviest rains as fast as they fall. The herbage is in general coarse; nevertheless it maintains many thousands, both of neat cattle and horses, and in no part

BOOK

II.

To these inequalities of its surface, however, it is owing that although the soil in many parts of this island is deep and very fertile,

of the world, I believe, is the latter found nearer to a state of wild nature than here. As the whole of this district is unfurnished with springs, or even ponds of any duration, the stock are compelled to go for water to the wells which are sunk in the lower parts of the country, at which time the hunters have opportunities of catching them; and contrivances are made for that purpose. 'This the master-horse seems to be well apprized of; for he leads into the inclosure with admirable caution, and as soon as his own thirst is allayed, is very impatient to get his family out, which he always drives before him. He admits of no interlopers, nor allows any of his family to stray. The breed is remarkably hardy, but somewhat restive from their wild nature. The air of this country (particularly at Tophill, which approaches to mountainous) is wonderfully salubrious.—As one proof of this, there was living so late as 1780 a negro man, named John Comelatt, who had resided on this spot as a shepherd for upwards of 30 years. He had formerly been the coachman of a Mr. Woodstock, who had given him permission in his old age to go where he pleased. At the time I saw him his woolly hair had become perfectly white, and his body was shrivelled beyond any thing I had ever beheld; but at the same time his muscles were full and firm, and he could run down any sheep in the Savanna; for he had no dog to assist him. We took him as our guide down to the sea: he ran before us, keeping our horses on a hand-gallop, to the beach, and he maintained the same pace on our return (though up-hill) a distance of about 10 miles. Of one family of the name of Ebanks, who lived in these plains, there were threescore persons living, all descended from one man, who was himself living in 1780. The air of this district, though not cold, is wonderfully dry and elastic, and so temperate withal, that even a European sportsman may follow his game the whole day without feeling any oppression from the heat; and he will meet with good sport in pursuing the galena or wild Guinea-fowl, which is found here in great numbers.—The mutton raised here is equal to the finest down mutton in England, and the fruits and vegetables of all kinds are excellent.—The water-melon in particular ranks with the first of fruits. Its coolness, crispness and flavour are rivalled only by the beauty of the rind, which is mottled in shades of green, and bears a gloss like the polish

fertile, yet the quantity of rich productive land is but small, in proportion to the whole. The generality of what has been cultivated is of a middling quality, and requires labour and manure to make it yield liberally. In fine, with every prejudice in its favour, if we compare Jamaica with many other islands of nearly the same extent, (Sicily, for instance, to which it was compared by Columbus) it must be pronounced an unfruitful and laborious country, as the following detail will demonstrate.

JAMAICA is one hundred and fifty miles in length, and on a medium of three measurements at different places, about forty miles in breadth. These data, supposing the island to have been a level country, would give - - - 3,840,000 Acres.

BUT a great part consisting of high mountains, the superficies of which comprise far more land than the base alone, I conceive it is a moderate estimate to allow on that account $\frac{1}{8}$ more, which is - - - 240,000

The Total is - - - 4,080,000 Acres.

OF these, it is found by a return of the clerk of the patents, that no more than 1,907,589, were, in November 1789, located, or taken up, by grants from the crown. Thus it appears that upwards of one half the lands are considered as of no kind

of marble. On the whole, for beauty of prospect,—for purity and dryness of air,—and a climate exempt from either extreme of heat and cold, Pedro Plains may vie with any spot on the habitable globe.

BOOK

II.

of value, the expence of taking out a patent being of no great account; and even of the located lands, I conceive that little more than one million is at present in cultivation.

IN sugar plantations, (including the land reserved in woods, for the purpose of supplying staves, timber, and fire-wood; or appropriated for common pasturage, all which is commonly two-thirds of each plantation) the number of acres may be stated at 639,000; it appearing that the precise number of those estates, according to returns made upon oath to March 1789, was 710, and an allowance of 900 acres to each, on an average of the whole, must be deemed sufficiently liberal.

OF breeding farms (or, as they are commonly called in the island, *pens*) the number is about 400; to each of which I would allow 700 acres, which gives 280,000, and no person who has inspected the country with an inquisitive eye, will allow to all the minor productions, as cotton, coffee, pimento and ginger, &c. including even the provision plantations, more than one half the extent assigned to the pens. The result of the whole is 1,059,000 acres, leaving upwards of three million an unimproved, unproductive wilderness, of which not more than one-fourth part is, I imagine, fit for any kind of profitable cultivation; great part of the interior country being both impracticable and inaccessible.

BUT, notwithstanding that so great a part of this island is wholly unimprovable, yet (such is the powerful influence of great heat and continual moisture) the mountains are in general covered

covered with extensive woods, containing excellent timbers, some of which are of prodigious growth and solidity; such as the *lignum vitæ*, dog-wood, iron-wood, pigeon-wood, green-heart, braziletto, and bully-trees; most of which sink in water, and are of a compactness and impenetrability inconceivable by European workmen. Some of these are necessary in mill-work, and would be highly valuable in the Windward Islands. They are even so, in such parts of Jamaica as, having been long cultivated, are nearly cleared of contiguous woods; but it frequently happens, in the interior parts, that the new settler finds the abundance of them an incumbrance instead of a benefit, and having provided himself with a sufficiency for immediate use, sets fire to the rest, in order to clear his lands; it not answering the expence of conveying them to the sea-coast for the purpose of sending them to a distant market. Of softer kinds, for boards and shingles, the species are innumerable; and there are many beautiful varieties adapted for cabinet-work, among others the bread-nut, the wild-lemon, and the well-known mahogany.

As the country is thus abundantly wooded, so, on the whole, we may assert it to be well watered. There are reckoned throughout its extent above one hundred rivers, which take their rise in the mountains, and run, commonly with great rapidity, to the sea, on both sides of the island. None of them are deep enough to be navigated by marine vessels. Black River in St. Elizabeth, flowing chiefly through a level country, is the deepest and gentlest, and admits flat-bottomed boats and canoes for about thirty miles.

BOOK

II.

OF the springs, which very generally abound, even in the highest mountains, some are medicinal; and are said to be highly efficacious in disorders peculiar to the climate. The most remarkable of these, is found in the eastern parish of St. Thomas, and the fame of it has created a village in its neighbourhood, which is called the Bath. The water flows out of a rocky mountain, about a mile distant, and is too hot to admit a hand being held underneath: a thermometer on Fahrenheit's scale, being immersed in a glass of this water, immediately rose to 123°. It is sulphureous, and has been used with great advantage in that dreadful disease of the climate called the dry-belly-ach. There are other springs, both sulphureous and chalybeate, in different parts of the country; of which however the properties are but little known to the inhabitants in general.

IN many parts of Jamaica there is a great appearance of metals; and it is asserted by Blome, and other early writers, that the Spanish inhabitants had mines both of silver and copper: I believe the fact. But the industry of the present possessors is perhaps more profitably exerted on the surface of the earth, than by digging into its bowels. A lead mine was indeed opened some years ago, near to the Hope estate, in the parish of St. Andrew, and it is said, there was no want of ore, but the high price of labour, or other causes with which I am unacquainted, compelled the proprietors to relinquish their project.

OF the most important of the present natural productions, as sugar, indigo, coffee and cotton, I shall have occasion to

treat at large, when the course of my work shall bring me to the subject of agriculture. It only remains therefore, at present, to subjoin a few observations on the vegetable classes of inferior order: I mean those which, though not of equal commercial importance with the preceding ones, are equally necessary to the comfort and subsistence of the inhabitants. If the reader is inclined to botanical researches, he is referred to the voluminous collections of Sloane and Browne.

THE several species of grain cultivated in this island are, 1st. Maize, or Indian corn, which commonly produces two crops in the year, and sometimes three: it may be planted at any time when there is rain, and it yields according to the soil from fifteen to forty bushels the acre. 2^{dly}. Guiney-corn, which produces but one crop in the year; it is planted in the month of September, and gathered in January following, yielding from thirty to sixty bushels an acre. 3^{dly}. Various kinds of calavances (a species of pea); and lastly rice, but in no great quantity, the situation proper for its growth being deemed unhealthy, and the labour of negroes commonly employed in the cultivation of articles that yield greater profit.

THIS island abounds likewise with different kinds of grass, both native and extraneous, of excellent quality; of the first is made exceeding good hay, but not in great abundance; this method of husbandry being practised only in a few parts of the country; and it is the less necessary as the inhabitants are happily accommodated with two different kinds of artificial grass, both extremely valuable, and yielding great profusion
of

BOOK

II.



of food for cattle. The first is an aquatic plant called *Scot's grass*, which though generally supposed to be an exotic, I have reason to think grows spontaneously in most of the swamps and morasses of the West-Indies. It rises to five or six feet in height, with long succulent joints, and is of very quick vegetation. From a single acre of this plant, five horses may be maintained a whole year, allowing fifty-six pounds of grass a-day to each.

THE other kind, called Guiney-grass, may be considered as next to the sugar-cane, in point of importance; as most of the grazing and breeding farms or pens throughout the island were originally created, and are still supported, chiefly by means of this invaluable herbage. Hence the plenty of horned cattle both for the butcher and planter; which is such that few markets in Europe furnish beef at a cheaper rate, or of better quality, than those of Jamaica (*e*). Perhaps the settlement of most of the north-side parishes is wholly owing to the introduction of this excellent grass, which happened by accident about fifty years ago; the seeds having been brought from the coast of Guiney, as food for some birds which were presented to Mr. Ellis, chief-justice of the island. Fortunately

(*e*) Mutton is also both cheap and good. The sheep of Jamaica, according to Sloane, are from a breed originally African. They have short hair instead of wool, and in general are party-coloured, chiefly black and white. They are small, but very sweet meat. The swine of the West Indies are also considerably smaller than those of Europe, and have short pointed ears. Their flesh is infinitely whiter and sweeter than the pork of Great Britain, and that of the wild sort, of which there are great numbers in the woods, still better.

the birds did not live to consume the whole stock, and the remainder being carelessly thrown into a fence, grew and flourished, and it was not long before the eagerness displayed by the cattle to reach the grass, attracted Mr. Ellis's notice, and induced him to collect and propagate the seeds; which now thrive in some of the most rocky parts of the island; bestowing verdure and fertility on lands which otherwise would not be worth cultivation.

THE several kinds of kitchen-garden produce, as edible roots and pulse, which are known in Europe, thrive also in the mountains of this island; and the markets of Kingston and Spanish-Town are supplied with cabbages, lettuce, carrots, turnips, parsnips, artichokes, kidney-beans, green-peas, asparagus and various sorts of European herbs, in the utmost abundance. Some of them (as the three first) are I think of superior flavour to the same kinds produced in England. To my own taste however, several of the native growths, especially the chocho, ochra, Lima-bean, and Indian-kale, are more agreeable than any of the esculent vegetables of Europe. The other indigenous productions of this class are plantains, bananas, yams of several varieties, calalue (a species of spinnage) eddoes, cassavi, and sweet potatoes. A mixture of these, stewed with salted fish or salted meat of any kind, and highly seasoned with Cayenne-pepper, is a favourite olio among the negroes. For bread, an unripe roasted plantain is an excellent substitute, and universally preferred to it by the negroes and most of the native whites. It may in truth be called the staff of life to the former; many thousand acres being cultivated;

BOOK II. vated in different parts of the country for their daily support (*f*).

Of the more elegant fruits, the variety is equalled only by their excellence. Perhaps no country on earth affords so magnificent a desert; and I conceive that the following were spontaneously bestowed on the island by the bounty of nature;—the annana or pine-apple, tamarind, papaw, guava, sweet-sop of two species, cashew-apple, custard-apple (a species of chimoya (*g*); coco-nut, star-apple, grenadilla, avocado-pear.

(*f*) It is said by Oviedo that this fruit, though introduced into Hispaniola at a very early period, was not originally a native of the West Indies, but was carried thither from the Canary islands by Thomas de Berlanga, a friar, in the year 1516. The banana is a species of the same fruit. Sir Hans Sloane, whose industry is commendable whatever may be thought of his judgment, has, in his History of Jamaica, collected much curious, and some fanciful, information concerning this production; and from some authorities which he cites, it would seem that Oviedo was misinformed, and that every species of the plantain is found growing spontaneously in all the tropical parts of the earth. Among other odd particulars related by Sloane concerning it, he observes, that Alexander the Great forbade his soldiers to eat of this fruit, *because he himself had suffered of the gripes* by indulging with it too freely. “Some (continues Sloane) are of opinion that this was the apple wherewith Eve tempted Adam. Others, that it was the fruit brought by the spies to Moses from the *Holy Land*,” and he declares, with great gravity, that “if any one gathers the fruit before it is ripe, *the branch will turn on him, and give him a blow on the nose!*” History of Jamaica, Vol. II. p. 142.

(*g*) This fruit is the boast of South America, and is reckoned by Ulloa one of the finest in the world. I have been informed that several plants of it are flourishing in Mr. East’s princely garden, at the foot of the Liguanea mountains.

hog-plum and its varieties, pindal-nut, nesbury, mammee, manimee-sapota, Spanish-goosberry, prickly-pear, and perhaps a few others. For the orange, civil and china, the lemon, lime, shaddock and its numerous species, the vine, melon, fig and pomegranate, the West Indian islands were probably indebted to their Spanish invaders. Excepting the peach, the strawberry and a few of the growths of European orchards (which however attain to no great perfection unless in the highest mountains) the rose-apple, genip, and some others of no great value, I do not believe that English industry had added much to the catalogue, until within the last twenty years. About the year 1773, a botanick garden was established under the sanction of the Assembly, but it was not until the year 1782 that it could justly boast of many valuable exoticks. At that period, the fortune of war having thrown into the possession of Lord Rodney, a French ship bound from the island of Bourbon to Cape François in St. Domingo, which was found to have on board some plants of the genuine cinnamon, the mango and other oriental productions, his lordship, from that generous partiality which he always manifested for Jamaica and its inhabitants, presented the plants to his favourite island;—thus nobly ornamenting and enriching the country his valour had protected from conquest. Happily, the present was not ill bestowed. The cinnamon may now be said to be naturalized to the country: several persons are establishing plantations of it, and one gentleman has set out fifty thousand plants. The mango is become almost as common as the orange; but for want of attention runs into a thousand seminal

BOOK

II.



varieties. Some of them, to my taste, are perfectly delicious (*b*).

I SHALL conclude this chapter, with an authentick catalogue of the foreign plants in the publick botanical garden of this island; lamenting, at the same time, that I am not able to gratify the reader with a more copious and extensive display, from the magnificent collection of my late friend Hinton East, Esquire, who had promised to favour me with an *Hortus Eastensis*, to be prepared under his own immediate inspection purposely for this work;—but much greater room have I to lament the cause of my disappointment, and mourn over the severity of that fate which suddenly snatched a most amiable and excellent citizen from his friends and the publick, and hur-

(*b*) The cinnamon tree grows to the height of twenty or thirty feet; it puts out numerous side-branches with a dense foliage from the very bottom of the trunk, which furnishes an opportunity of obtaining plenty of layers, and facilitates the propagation of the tree, as it does not perfect its seeds in any quantity under six or seven years, when it becomes so plentifully loaded, that a single tree is almost sufficient for a colony. When planted from layers, it is of a pretty quick growth, reaching in eight years the height of fifteen or twenty feet, is very spreading, and furnished with numerous branches of a fit size for decoration. The seeds are long in coming up. The small branches of about an inch diameter yield the best cinnamon, which is itself the *limber* or inner bark of the tree, and it requires some dexterity to separate the outer barks, which would vitiate the flavour. Specimens of the inner bark, transmitted by Dr. Dancer, the island botanist, to the Society of Arts, were found fully to possess the *aroma* and taste of the true cinnamon from Ceylon, and indeed to be superior to any cinnamon imported from Holland; and in all other respects to agree perfectly with the description of the oriental cinnamon given by Burman. See their resolutions of the 14th December 1790.

ried him to an untimely grave.—Such is the vanity of hope, and the uncertainty of life ! (i)

CHAP.
IV.

(i) This whole passage stands as it appeared in the first edition ; but a very copious and accurate account of Mr. East's garden being now subjoined in an appendix to this volume, it is thought unnecessary to swell the book with the catalogue first above-mentioned ; more especially as all the plants in the garden on the publick establishment, with a vast variety of others, are comprehended in that of Mr. East, whose death, which happened in January 1792, was a national loss. While I write this I am informed, that the assembly of Jamaica have purchased his garden for the use of the publick.

C H A P. V.

Topographical description.—Towns, villages, and parishes.—Churches, church-livings, and vestries.—Governor or Commander in chief.—Courts of judicature.—Public offices.—Legislature and laws.—Revenues.—Taxes.—Coins, and rate of exchange.—Militia.—Number of inhabitants of all conditions and complexions.—Trade, shipping, exports and imports.—Report of the Lords of Trade in 1734.—Present state of the trade with Spanish America.—Origin and policy of the act for establishing free ports.—Display of the progress of the island in cultivation, by comparative statements of its inhabitants and products at different periods.—Appendix N^o I. N^o II.

BOOK
II.

THE Island of Jamaica is divided into three counties, which are named Middlesex, Surry, and Cornwall. The county of Middlesex is composed of eight parishes, one town, and thirteen villages. The town is that of *St. Jago-de-la-Vega* or *Spanish-Town*, the capital of the island. Most of the villages of this and the other counties, are hamlets of no great account, situated at the different harbours and shipping-places, and supported by the traffick carried on there. *St. Jago-de-la-Vega* is situated on the banks of the river *Cobre*, about six miles from the sea, and contains between five and six hundred

hundred houses, and about five thousand inhabitants, including free people of colour. It is the residence of the governor or commander in chief, who is accommodated with a superb palace; and it is here, that the legislature is convened, and the Court of Chancery, and the Supreme Court of Judicature, are held.

THE county of Surry contains seven parishes, two towns, and eight villages. The towns are those of Kingston and Port-Royal: the former of which is situated on the north-side of a beautiful harbour, and was founded in 1693, when repeated desolations by earthquake and fire had driven the inhabitants from Port-Royal. It contains one thousand six hundred and sixty-five houses, besides negro-huts and warehouses. The number of white inhabitants, in the year 1788, was six thousand five hundred and thirty-nine: of free people of colour three thousand two hundred and eighty: of slaves sixteen thousand six hundred and fifty-nine;—total number of inhabitants, of all complexions and conditions, twenty-six thousand four hundred and seventy-eight. It is a place of great trade and opulence. Many of the houses in the upper part of the town are extremely magnificent; and the markets for butchers' meat, cattle, fish, poultry, fruits and vegetables, &c. are inferior to none. I can add too, from the information of a learned and ingenious friend, who kept comparative registers of mortality, that since the surrounding country is become cleared of wood, this town is found to be as healthful as any in Europe (*a*).

PORT-

(*a*) The number of the white inhabitants in Kingston, had increased in 1791 to about 7,000. In that year the burials were 151 white men (including 45 from

BOOK

II.

PORT-ROYAL, once a place of the greatest wealth and importance in the West Indies, is now reduced, by repeated calamities, to three streets, a few lanes, and about two hundred houses. It contains, however, the royal navy yard, for heaving down and refitting the king's ships; the navy hospital, and barracks for a regiment of soldiers. The fortifications are kept in excellent order, and vie in strength, as I am told, with any fortrefs in the king's dominions.

CORNWALL contains five parishes, three towns, and six villages.—The towns are Savanna-la-Mar on the south side of the island, and Montego Bay and Falmouth on the north. The former was almost entirely destroyed by a dreadful hurricane and inundation of the sea in 1780. It is now partly rebuilt, and may contain from sixty to seventy houses.

MORTEGO-BAY is a flourishing and opulent town: it consists of two hundred and twenty-five houses, thirty-three of which are capital stores or warehouses, and contains about six

the publick hospital) 23 white women, and 20 white children. Total 194. Of the men, the whole number from the hospital, and a great many of the others, were transient persons, chiefly discarded or vagabond seamen; but without making any allowance for extraordinary mortality on that account, if this return, which is taken from the Parochial Register, be compared with the bills of mortality in the manufacturing towns of England, the result will be considerably in favour of Jamaica. In the large and opulent town of Manchester, for instance, the whole number of inhabitants in 1773, comprehending Salford, was 29,151, and the average number of burials (dissenters included) for five preceding years was 958. If the mortality in Manchester had been in no greater proportion than in Kingston, the deaths would not have exceeded 813.

hundred

hundred white inhabitants. The number of top-sail vessels which clear annually at this port are about one hundred and fifty, of which seventy are capital ships; but in this account are included part of those which enter at Kingston.

FALMOUTH, or (as it is more commonly called) *the Point*, is situated on the south-side of Martha-Brae harbour, and, including the adjoining villages of Martha-Brae and the Rock, is composed of two hundred and twenty houses. The rapid increase of this town and neighbourhood within the last sixteen years is astonishing. In 1771, the three villages of Martha-Brae, Falmouth, and the Rock, contained together but eighteen houses; and the vessels which entered annually at the port of Falmouth did not exceed ten. At present it can boast of upwards of thirty capital stationed ships, which load for Great Britain, exclusive of sloops and smaller craft.

EACH parish (or precinct consisting of an union of two or more parishes) is governed by a chief magistrate, styled *Custos Rotulorum*, and a body of justices unlimited by law as to number, by whom sessions of the peace are held every three months, and courts of Common Pleas to try actions arising within the parish or precinct, to an amount not exceeding twenty pounds. In matters of debt not exceeding forty shillings, a single justice is authorized to determine.

THE whole twenty parishes contain eighteen churches and chapels, and each parish is provided with a rector, and other church officers; the rectors livings, the presentation to which

BOOK

II.

rests with the governor or commander in chief, are severally as follows, viz. St. Catherine £. 300 per annum; Kingston, St. Thomas in the East, Clarendon, and Westmoreland, £. 250 per annum; St. David, St. George, and Portland, £. 100 per annum; all the rest £. 200 per annum. These sums are paid in lieu of tythes by the churchwardens of the several parishes respectively, from the amount of taxes levied by the vestries on the inhabitants.

EACH parish builds and repairs a parsonage house, or allows the rector £. 50 per annum in lieu of one; besides which, many of the livings have glebe lands of very considerable value annexed to them, as the parish of St. Andrew, which altogether is valued at one thousand pounds sterling per annum (*b*). The bishop of London is said to claim this island as part of his diocese, but his jurisdiction is renounced and barred by the laws of the country; and the governor or commander in chief, as supreme head of the provincial church, not only inducts into the several rectories, on the requisite testimonials being produced that the candidate has been admitted into priest's orders according to the canons of the church of England, but he is likewise vested with the power of suspending a clergyman of lewd and disorderly life *ab officio*, upon application from his parishioners. A suspension *ab officio* is in fact a suspension *a beneficio*, no minister being entitled to his stipend for any

(*b*) In the year 1788, the assembly passed a law to prohibit the burial of the dead within the walls of the churches; and as by this regulation several of the rectors were deprived of a perquisite, an augmentation of £. 50 per annum was made to most of the livings.

longer time than he shall actually officiate; unless prevented by sickness.

C H A P.

V.

THE vestries are composed of the custos, and two other magistrates; the rector and ten vestrymen; the latter are elected annually by the freeholders. Besides their power of assessing and appropriating taxes, they appoint way-wardens, and allot labourers for the repair of the publick highways. They likewise nominate proper persons, who are called collecting constables, for the collection both of the publick and parochial taxes.

THE supreme court of judicature for the whole island (commonly called the Grand Court, as possessing similar jurisdiction in this country to that of the several courts of King's Bench, Common Pleas, and Exchequer, in Great Britain) is held in the town of St. Jago-de-la-Vega, the capital of the country of Middlesex, on the last Tuesday of each of the months of February, May, August, and November, in every year. In this court, the chief justice of the island presides, whose salary is only £. 120, but the perquisites arising from the office make it worth about £. 3,000 *per annum*. The assistant judges are gentlemen of the island, commonly planters, who receive neither salary nor reward of any kind for their attendance. Three judges must be present to constitute a court; and each term is limited in duration to three weeks. From this court, if the matter in dispute in a civil action be for a sum of £. 300 sterling, or upwards, an appeal lies to the governor and council, as a court of

error ; if sentence of death be passed for felony, the appeal is to the governor alone (*c*).

ASSIZE courts also are held every three months, in Kingston for the county of Surry, and in Savanna-la-Mar for the county of Cornwall. The Surry court begins the last Tuesday in January, April, July, and October. The Cornwall court begins the last Tuesday in March, June, September, and December ; each assize court is limited to a fortnight in duration. Thus have the inhabitants law-courts every month of the year, besides the courts of chancery, ordinary, admiralty, and the several parish courts (*d*). The judges of the assize court act

(*c*) By an early law of this island (passed in 1681) freeholders of known residence are not subject to arrest, and being held to bail in civil process. The mode of proceeding is, to deliver the party a summons (leaving it at his house is deemed good service) together with a copy of the declaration, fourteen days before the court, whereupon the defendant is bound to appear, the very next court, or judgment will pass by default. Twenty-eight days after the first day of each court execution issues ; for which there is but one writ, comprehending both a *feri facias* and a *capias ad satisfaciendum* ; but as no general imparlance is allowed before judgment, it is enacted that the effects levied on, shall remain in the defendant's hands until the next court, to give him an opportunity of disposing of them to the best advantage ; and if he then fails paying over the money, a *venditioni exponas* issues to the marshal, to sell those, or any other goods, or take his person. The modern practice is to make no levy on the execution, whereby the debtor obtains the indulgence of one term, or court, after which both his person and goods are liable under the writ of *venditione exponas*.

(*d*) Soon after this was written an act was passed (I think in 1790) by which the August term in the supreme court was abolished, and a long vacation established as in England, with similar regulations for the assize courts, to the great relief of persons attending as jurors.

without

without salary or reward, as well as the assistant judges of the supreme court, any one of whom, if present, presides in the assize court. No appeal from the latter to the former is allowed, but judgments of the assize immediately following the supreme court, are considered as of one and the same court, and have an equal right in point of priority with those obtained in the grand court.

THE governor or commander in chief is chancellor by his office, and presides solely in that high department, which is administered with great form and solemnity. He is also the sole ordinary for the probate of wills and granting letters of administration. From the first of these offices, he derives extensive authority, and from the latter considerable emolument (*e*).

As

(*e*) The profits and emoluments arising annually from the government of Jamaica may, I think, be stated nearly as follows, viz.

Salary	—	—	—	—	£. 5,000
Fees in Chancery	—	—	—	—	150
Fees of the Court of Ordinary	—	—	—	—	1,400
Share of Custom House Seizures	—	—	—	—	1,000

The assembly have purchased for the governor's use, a farm of about 300 acres, called the Government Penn, and built an elegant villa thereon. Likewise a police or provision settlement in the mountains (which is also provided with a comfortable mansion-house) and stocked both properties with 50 negroes, and a sufficiency of cattle, sheep, &c. From these places (which are exclusive of the king's house in Spanish Town) the governor is, or ought to be, supplied with hay and corn, mutton, milk, poultry, and provisions for his domesticks, creating a saving in his household expences of at least

Total in currency — £. 8,550

BOOK

II.

As appendages of the supreme court, the several great offices, viz. the office of enrollments, or secretary of the island, provost-marshal-general, clerk of the court (or prothonetary, custos-brevium, &c.) are held and situated in Spanish Town. The first is an office of record, in which the laws passed by the legislature are preserved; and copies of them entered into fair volumes. In this office all deeds, wills, sales, and patents, must be registered. It is likewise required that all persons (after six weeks residence) intending to depart this island, do affix their names in this office, twenty-one days before they are entitled to receive a ticket or let-pafs, to enable them to leave the country. In order to enforce this regulation, masters of vessels are obliged, at the time of entry, to give security in the sum of £. 1,000 not to carry off the island any person without such ticket or let-pafs. Trustees, attornies and guardians of orphans, are required to record annually in this office accounts of the produce of estates in their charge; and, by a late act, mortgagees in possession are obliged to register not only accounts of the crops of each year, but also annual accounts current of their receipts and payments. Transcripts of deeds, &c. from the office, properly certified, are evidences in any court of law, and all deeds must be enrolled within three

Being equal to £. 6,100 sterling; and this is altogether exclusive of fees received by his private secretary for militia commissions, &c. &c. &c. *which are not easily ascertained.* It is supposed also that money has sometimes been made by the sale of church livings; and vast sums were formerly raised by escheats.

N. B. A governor of Jamaica may live very honourably for £. 3,000 sterling per annum.

months after date, or they are declared to be void as against any other deed proved and registered within the time limited; but if no second deed is on record, then the same are valid, though registered after the three months. It is presumed that the profits of this office, which is held by patent from the crown, and exercised by deputation, exceed £.6,000 sterling *per annum*.

THE provost-marshal-general is an officer of high rank and great authority.—The name denotes a military origin, and doubtless the office was first instituted in this island before the introduction of civil government, and continued afterwards through necessity. It is now held by patent from the crown, which is usually granted for two lives, and the patentee is permitted to act by deputy, who is commonly the highest bidder. The powers and authorities annexed to this office are various: the acting officer is in fact high-sheriff of the whole island during his continuance in office, and permitted to nominate deputies under him for every parish or precinct. His legal receipts have been known to exceed £.7,000 sterling *per annum*, and it is supposed that some of his deputies make nearly as much.

THE office of clerk of the supreme court is likewise held by patent and exercised by deputation. Evidence was given to the house of assembly some years ago, that its annual value at that time exceeded £.9,000 currency. Of late, I believe it is considerably diminished.

BOOK

II.

OF the other great lucrative offices, the principal are those of the register in chancery, receiver-general and treasurer of the island, naval officer, and collector of the customs for the port of Kingston. All these appointments, whether held by patent or commission, are likewise supposed to afford considerable emolument to persons residing in Great Britain. It is computed on the whole, that not less than £. 30,000 sterling is remitted annually, by the deputies in office within the island, to their principals in the mother-country (*f*).

THE legislature of Jamaica is composed of the captain-general or commander in chief, of a council nominated by the crown, consisting of twelve gentlemen, and a house of assembly containing forty-three members, who are elected by the freeholders, viz. three for the several towns and parishes of St. Jago-de-la-Vega, Kingston, and Port Royal, and two for each of the other parishes. The qualification required in the elector, is a

(*f*) It is not very pleasant to the resident inhabitants to observe, that almost all the patent offices in the colonies are exercised by deputies, who notoriously and avowedly obtain their appointments by purchase. Leases for years of some of them have been sold by auction; and nothing is more common, at the expiration of those leases, than the circumstance of an inferior clerk outbidding his employer (the resident deputy) and stepping into his place. It may be doubted whether both the seller and buyer in such cases are not subject to the penalties of the statute 5 and 6. Edw. VI. against the sale and purchase of offices relating to the administration of Justice. By an excellent law, however, which passed in the administration of the present Marquis of Lansdown then Earl of Shelburne, the grievance will in a great degree be prevented in future, for it is enacted by the 22d Geo. III. c. 75. that from thenceforth no office to be exercised in the plantations shall be granted by patent, for any longer term than during such time as the grantee thereof shall discharge the duty in person.

freehold

freehold of ten pounds per annum in the parish where the election is made; and in the representative, a landed freehold of three hundred pounds per annum, in any part of the island, or a personal estate of three thousand pounds. In the proceedings of the general assembly they copy, as nearly as local circumstances will admit, the legislature of Great Britain; and all their bills (those of a private nature excepted) have the force of laws as soon as the governor's assent is obtained. The power of rejection however is still reserved in the crown; but until the royal disapprobation is signified, the laws are valid.

OF the laws thus passed, the principal relate chiefly to regulations of local policy, to which the law of England is not applicable, as the slave system for instance (*g*); on which, and other cases, the English laws being silent, the colonial legislature has made, and continues to make, such provision therein, as the exigencies of the colony are supposed to require; and on some occasions, where the principle of the English law has been adopted, it has been found necessary to alter and modify its provisions, so as to adapt them to circumstances and situation. Thus, in the mode of setting out emblements, the practice of

(*g*) Thus the evidence of a slave is not admissible against a white person. Again, although by a very early law of this island, slaves are considered as inheritance, and are accordingly subject to the incidents of real property (for as they go to the heir, so may the widow have dower of them, and the surviving husband be tenant by courtesy; and this holds equally whether slaves are possessed in gross, or belong to a plantation) yet in respect of debts, slaves are considered as chattels, and the executor is bound to inventory them like other chattels.

BOOK
II.

fine and recovery, the case of insolvent debtors, the repair of the publick roads, the maintenance of the clergy, and the relief of the poor, very great deviations from the practice of the mother-country have been found indispensably requisite (*b*).

THE

(*b*) An outline of the law of insolvency may not be unacceptable to the reader. —A debtor, after three months continuance in actual confinement, may obtain his liberty under the following conditions: three weeks previous to the next sitting of the supreme court, he is to give notice by publick advertisement, that he means to take the benefit of the act, and to that end, has lodged all his books of account in the hands of the marshal or keeper of the gaol, for inspection by his creditors. He shall then, on the first day of term, be brought by petition before the court, where he is to subscribe and deliver in a schedule of his whole estate and effects, and submit, if any one of his creditors require it, to an examination, *viva voce*, upon oath, in open court. To this schedule he must annex an affidavit, certifying that it contains a just account of all his property, debts, and effects, except clothing, bedding, and working tools, not worth more than 10*l*.; that he has given no preference to any particular creditor, for three months previous to his confinement, nor conveyed away nor concealed any part of his estate or effects. The court thereupon, being satisfied with the prisoner's examination, shall appoint one or more of the creditors to be assignees for the benefit of the whole; and order them possession of the property and effects, and discharge the party from confinement. Gaol fees of those who are unable to pay them, are paid by the publick. There are various regulations for the prevention of fraud, and it is declared, that if any persons claiming the benefit of the act, shall knowingly forswear themselves, and be convicted of perjury in consequence thereof, they shall be adjudged guilty of felony without benefit of clergy, and suffer death accordingly. It is also provided, that no debtor shall have the benefit of the act more than once, and that the future estate and effects of persons discharged under it (but not their persons or apparel) shall still be liable to make up the former deficiency. By a subsequent law, however, which the Author of this work had the honour to propose, as a member of the assembly, a debtor may be discharged a second time on the same conditions, provided he had fully paid his former creditors before his second insolvency; and even if he has not paid

THE revenues of this island may be divided into two branches; the one *perpetual*, by an act of the year 1728, called the revenue law, of the origin of which I have already spoken, and of which the quit-rents constitute a part; the other *annual*, by grants of the legislature. The revenue law may raise about £.12,000 *per annum*, of which £.8,000 is particularly appropriated, as I have elsewhere observed, and the surplus is applicable to the contingent expences of government, in aid of the annual funds. The governor receives £.2,500 *per annum* out of the £.8,000 fund. A further salary of £.2,500 is settled upon him during his residence in the island by a special act of the legislature, passed the beginning of his administration, and is made payable out of some one of the annual funds provided by the assembly. These at this time may amount to £.70,000, of which about £.40,000 is a provision for granting an additional pay to the officers and soldiers of his majesty's forces stationed for the protection of the island. Every commissioned officer being entitled to 20*s.* per week, and every private to 5*s.*: An allowance is also made to the wives and children of the soldiers; which with the British pay enables them to live much more comfortably than the king's troops generally do in Europe.

THE usual ways and means adopted for raising the above taxes are, first, a duty of 20*s.* per head on all negroes imported; secondly, a duty on all rum and other spirits retailed

paid the debts on which he before took the benefit of the act, he shall be discharged, *after an actual confinement of two years*; the court being satisfied that he has fairly surrendered all his estate and effects to the use of his creditors.

BOOK

II.

and consumed within the island; thirdly, the deficiency law: an act which was intended originally to oblige all proprietors of slaves to keep one white person for every thirty blacks; but the penalty, which is sometimes £. 13, at other times £. 26 *per annum*, for each white person deficient of the number required, is become so productive a source of revenue, that the bill is now considered as one of the annual supply bills: fourthly, a poll-tax on all slaves, and stock, and a rate on rents and wheel-carriages. Besides these, occasional tax-bills are passed by the legislature, as necessity may require. I have subjoined in a note the estimate of the contingent charges of the government of this island on the annual funds for the year 1788, and of the ways and means for the payment thereof (i).

THE

(i) *Estimate of the ordinary CONTINGENT CHARGES of the Government of JAMAICA on the annual funds for the year 1788, viz.*

Governor's additional salary	—	—	—	£. 2,500	—	—
Subsistence of the Troops, and Hospital expences				41,300	—	—
Salaries to Officers of the Assembly, Printing, &c.				2,300	—	—
Clerk of the Grand Court	-	-	-	100	—	—
Clerk of the Crown	-	-	-	100	—	—
Clerk to the Commissioners of Forts	-	-	-	150	—	—
Surveyor to the Bath	-	-	-	200	—	—
Port Officers and Waiters	-	-	-	1,600	—	—
Maroon Negro Parties	-	-	-	1,000	—	—
Superintendants residing in the Maroon-Towns	-	-	-	1,300	—	—
To the Engineer and Captain of different Forts	-	-	-	1,000	—	—
For the Support of the Botanick Garden	-	-	-	280	—	—
Salary to the Agent	-	-	-	420	—	—

Carried over - £. 52,250 — —

Tc

THE current coins are Portugal pieces of gold, called the half-johannes, valued in England at 36s. each; these pass here, if of full weight, at 55s. Spanish gold coins current

Brought forward	-	£. 52,250	—	—
To the Officers of the Troops for private Lodgings		1,430	—	—
Supplying the Forts with Water	-	1,089	—	—
To the Commissioners of the Forts	-	5,600	—	—
To the Kingston Hospital	-	500	—	—
Sundry Demands on the Publick for Official Fees, Medical Care and Gaol Fees of Prisoners, Repairs of the Publick Buildings, &c. &c.	-	4,359	7	9
Charges of collecting; viz. Collecting Constable's and Receiver General's Commissions, Reliefs, &c. 15 per cent.	-	9,783	6	—
		£. 75,011	13	9

WAYS and MEANS.

Outstanding Debts	-	£. 25,000	—	—
Negro Duty, computed at	-	6,000	—	—
Rum Duty	-	14,000	—	—
Double Deficiency on Negroes		24,000	—	—
Poll-Tax	-	67,000	—	—
		136,000	—	—
Deduct for prompt Payment 10 per cent.	-	13,600	—	—
		122,400		

☞ The overplus was applied towards discharging the Publick Debt, which was estimated at £. 180,000 currency; but since then, the contingent charges of government, have risen annually to double the amount above stated, owing chiefly to a great augmentation of the British troops; the whole expence of raising and maintaining all which (above the number of 3000) is thrown upon the island. Among these is a regiment of light-dragoons, which is mounted on horses bred in the country.

BOOK
II.

here, are, doubloons at £. 5. 5 s. each, and pistoles at 26 s. 3 d. Silver coins are Spanish milled dollars at 6 s. 8 d. and so in proportion for the smaller parts of this coin; the lowest coin is called a *bitt*, equal to about 5 d. sterling. A guinea passes for 32 s. 6 d. This, however, is considerably more than the usual rate of exchange, by which £. 100 sterling gives £. 140 currency.

FROM the situation of this island amidst potent and envious rivals, and the vast disproportion between the number of white inhabitants and the slaves, it may be supposed that the maintenance of a powerful and well-disciplined militia is among the first objects of the policy of the legislature; and accordingly all persons, from fifteen to sixty years of age, are obliged by law to enlist themselves either in the horse or foot, and to provide at their own expence the necessary accoutrements; but this law, I doubt, is not very rigidly enforced, as the whole militia, which is composed of three regiments of horse and fourteen regiments of foot, does not consist I conceive of more than 7000 effective troops; neither do the usual employments and habits of life, either of the officers or privates, conduce very much to military subordination.—However, in times of actual danger, whether from the revolt of slaves, or the probability of invasion, no troops in the world could have shewn greater promptitude or alacrity in service, than has been displayed by the militia of Jamaica. In such emergencies, the commander in chief, with the advice and consent of a general council of war, (in which the members of the assembly have voices) may proclaim

proclaim martial law. His power is then dictatorial; and all persons are subject to the articles of war (*k*).

CHAP.

V.

FROM the given number of men able to bear arms in any country, it is usual with political writers to estimate the inhabitants at large; but their rule of calculation does not apply to Jamaica, where the bulk of the people consists of men without families. Europeans who come to this island have seldom an idea of settling here for life. Their aim is generally to acquire fortunes to enable them to sit down comfortably in their native country; and, in the meanwhile, they consider a family as an incumbrance. Marriage, therefore, being held in but little estimation, the white women and children do not bear the same proportion to the males, as in European climates. From these, and other causes, I have found it difficult to ascertain with precision the number of the white inhabitants.

(*k*) Soon after the above was written (the Author being at that time in Jamaica) the lieutenant-governor, by the advice of a council of war, proclaimed martial law. This was in December, 1791, and it arose from a notion very generally prevalent in the island, that conspiracies and projects of rebellion were afloat among the negroes, in consequence of the disturbances in St. Domingo. This apprehension induced a very strict observance of the militia laws; and the following was the return of the Cavalry and Infantry to head-quarters on the 13th of January, 1792.

			Total.
County of Surry	336 Cavalry	2,141 Infantry	2,477
Middlesex	375 ———	2,547 ———	3,022
Cornwall	368 ———	2,305 ———	2,673
	Effectives	—	8,172

Free negroes and men of colour included; their number was 1,889. The Maroons are not comprehended.

BOOK

II.

I have been informed, that a late intelligent chief governor (General Campbell) computed them, after diligent research, at 25,000 ; and I am induced to believe, from more than one mode of calculation, that General Campbell's estimate was near the truth.—This computation was made in 1780, since which time I am of opinion, from the many loyal Americans who have fixed themselves in Jamaica, and other causes, this number is considerably increased. Including the troops and sea-faring people, the white population may, I think, be fixed at 30,000.

THE freed negroes and people of colour are computed, in a report of a committee of the house of assembly of the 12th of November, 1788, at 500 in each parish, on an average of the whole ; which makes 10,000, exclusive of the black people called Maroons, who enjoy a limited degree of freedom by treaty. These, by the last returns that I have seen, amount to about 1400 (1).

OF negroes in a state of slavery in this island, the precise number in December, 1787, as ascertained on oath in the rolls

(1) It is generally supposed, and has been very confidently asserted, that these people have decreased ; but the fact is otherwise. The mistake has arisen from the circumstance that some of their towns have been deserted ; which is indeed true, but the cause has been, that the negroes have only removed from one town to another. It is sufficiently known, that they are the descendants of negroes formerly in rebellion, with whom, in the years 1738 and 1739, Governor Trelawney entered into treaty, which the Assembly confirmed, and granted them freedom under certain limitations. The number that surrendered was under 600. In the year 1770 they consisted of 885 men, women, and children. In the year 1773 they were 1,028 ; and they were increased in 1788 to 1,333.

from

from which the poll-tax is levied, was 210,894; and as it may answer more useful purposes hereafter than the mere gratification of curiosity, I shall distinguish the numbers in each parish, which are the following: CHAP. V.

St. Dorothy	—	—	3,129
St. Catherine	—	—	5,304
St. John	—	—	5,880
St. Thomas in the Vale		—	7,459
Vere	—	—	7,487
St. Mary	—	—	17,144
St. Ann	—	—	13,324
Kingston	—	—	6,162
St. Andrew	—	—	9,613
St. David	—	—	2,881
St. Thomas in the East		—	20,492
Portland	—	—	4,537
St. George	—	—	5,050
St. Elizabeth	—	—	13,280
Hanover	—	—	17,612
St. James	—	—	18,546
Trelawney	—	—	19,318
Port-Royal	—	—	2,229
Westmoreland	—	—	16,700
Clarendon	—	—	14,747
Total	—	—	<u>210,894</u>

It appears, however, from the report of a committee of the assembly above cited, that in most of the parishes it is cus-

BOOK

II.

tomary to exempt persons not having more than six negroes, from the payment of taxes on slaves, whereby many of the negroes, especially in the towns (*m*), are not given in to the different vestries, and the returns of a great many others are fraudulently concealed; thus the tax-rolls do not contain the full number of slaves, which, in the opinion of the committee, were at that time 240,000, at the least; and there is not a doubt that upwards of 10,000 have been left in the country from the importations of the last two years, exclusive of decrease. The whole number of inhabitants therefore, of all complexions and conditions, may be stated as follows:

Whites	-	-	-	-	-	-	30,000
Freed negroes, and people of colour							10,000
Maroons	-	-	-	-	-	-	1,400
Negro slaves	-	-	-	-	-	-	250,000
Total							<hr/> 291,400 <hr/>

THE trade of this island will best appear by the quantity of shipping and the number of seamen to which it gives employment, and the nature and quantity of its exports. The following is an account, from the books of the Inspector General of Great Britain, of the number of vessels of all kinds, their registered tonnage and number of men, which cleared from the

(*m*) In Kingston, for instance, the real number is 16,659, instead of 6,162, the number on the tax-rolls. On an average of the whole number of parishes, the negroes not given in or returned may be reckoned at one-seventh part of the whole.

several

several ports of entry in Jamaica in the year 1787, exclusive of coasting sloops, wherries, &c. viz.

CHAP.
V.


	Number of Vessels.	Tonnage.	Mens.
For Great Britain - - -	242	63,471	7,748
Ireland - - - - -	10	1,231	91
American States - -	133	13,041	893
British American Colonies	66	6,133	449
Foreign West Indies -	22	1,903	155
Africa - - - - -	1	109	8
Total -	474	85,888	9,344

It must, however, be observed, that as many of the vessels clearing for America and the foreign West Indies make two or more voyages in the year, it is usual, in computing the real number of those vessels, their tonnage and men, to deduct one-third from the official numbers. With this correction the total to all parts is 400 vessels, containing 78,862 tons, navigated by 8,845 men.

THE exports for the same year are given on the same authority, as follows:—

Inspector-General's Account of the JAMAICA EXPORTS, between the 5th of January 1787 and the 5th of January 1788; with the Value in Sterling Money, according to the Prices then current at the London Market.

To what P A R T S.	Sugar.		Rum.	Melasses.		Piemento.		Coffee.		Cotton Wool.		Indigo.	
	Cwt.	qrs. lbs.		Gallons.	lbs.	Cwt.	qrs. lbs.	Cwt.	qrs. lbs.	lbs.	lbs.		
To Great Britain	824,706	2 25	1,890,540	2,316	606,944	3,706	3 27	1,899,967	27,223				
Ireland	6,829	—	106,700	—	2,800	10	—	5,500	400				
American States	6,167	—	327,325	1,800	6,450	2,566	2	—	—				
Br. Amer. Colonies	2,822	—	207,660	2,300	200	110	3 8	1,000	—				
Foreign W. Indies	24	—	2,200	—	—	2	—	—	—				
Africa	—	—	8,600	—	—	—	—	—	—				
Totals	840,548	2 25	2,543,025	6,416	616,444	6,395	3 9	1,906,467	27,623				

(continued.)

To what P A R T S.	Ginger.		Cacao.		Tobacco.	Mahogany.		Logwood.	Miscellaneous Articles.	Total Value.
	Cwt.	qrs. lbs.	Cwt.	qrs. lbs.	lbs.	Tons.	Cwt.	Tons.	Value.	£. s. d.
To Great Britain	3,553	2 15	82 3 15		18,140	5,783	4	6,701	£. 147,286	3 4 2,022,814
Ireland	918	—	—		—	95	—	—	—	25,778 10 —
American States	339	—	—		—	—	—	—	—	60,095 18 —
Br. Amer. Colonies	4	—	—		—	—	—	—	—	26,538 2 5
Foreign W. Indies	2	—	—		—	—	—	—	—	355 19 —
Africa	—	—	—		—	—	—	—	—	860 — —
Totals	4,816	2 15	82 3 15		18,140	5,878	4	6,701	—	2,136,442 17 3

BUT it must be noted, that a considerable part of the cotton, indigo, tobacco, mahogany, dye-woods, and miscellaneous articles, included in the preceding account, is the produce of the foreign West Indies imported into Jamaica, partly under the free-port law, and partly in small British vessels employed in a contraband traffick with the Spanish American territories, payment of which is made chiefly in British manufactures and negroes; and considerable quantities of bullion, obtained by the same means, are annually remitted to Great Britain, of which no precise accounts can be procured.

THE General Account of IMPORTS into Jamaica will stand nearly as follows, viz.

IMPORTS INTO JAMAICA.

From <i>Great Britain</i> ,	}							
direct, according		£.	s.	d.	£.	s.	d.	
to a return of the		British manufactures -	686,657	2	3			
Inspector-General		Foreign merchandize	72,275	3	1			
for 1787 - -						758,932	5 4	
From <i>Ireland</i> , I allow a moiety of the whole import to the British West Indies, consisting of manufactures and salted provisions to the amount of £. 277,000 - - 138,500 — —								
From <i>Africa</i> , 5,345 negroes (<i>i</i>), at £. 40 sterling each—(This is wholly a British trade carried on in ships from England) 213,800 — —								
From the <i>British Colonies in America</i> (including about 20,000 quintals of salted cod from Newfoundland) - - 30,000 — —								
From the <i>United States</i> , Indian corn, wheat flour, rice, lumber, staves, &c. imported in British ships - - 190,000 — —								
From <i>Madeira</i> and <i>Teneriffe</i> , in ships trading circuitously from Great Britain, 500 pipes of wine (exclusive of wines for re-exportation) at £. 30 sterling the pipe - - 15,000 — —								
From the <i>Foreign West Indies</i> , under the free-port law, &c. calculated on an average of three years (<i>k</i>) - - 150,000 — —								
Total - £. 1,496,232 5 4								

(*i*) Being an average of the whole number imported and retained in the island for ten years, 1778 to 1787, as returned by the Inspector-General. The import of the last three years is much greater.

(*k*) From returns of the Inspector-General. The following are the particulars for the year 1787,

Cotton Wool	-	-	194,000 lbs.
Cacao	-	-	64,750 lbs.
Gattle, viz.			
Asses	-	-	43
Horses	-	-	233
Mules	-	-	585
Oxen	-	-	243
Sheep	-	-	98
			1,202 No.
Dying Woods	-	-	5,077 Tons.
Gum Guaiacum	-	-	79 Barrels.
Hides	-	-	4,537 No.
Indigo	-	-	4,663 lbs.
Mahogany	-	-	9,993 Planks.
Tortoise Shell	-	-	655 lbs.
Dollars	-	-	53,850 No.

SOME part of this estimate, however, is not so perfect as might be wished; inasmuch as in the accounts made up at the Inspector-General's office of goods exported from Great Britain, they reckon only the original cost, whereas the British merchant being commonly the exporter, the whole of his profits, together with the freight, insurance, and factorage commissions in the island, should be taken into the account, because the whole are comprized in one charge against the planter. On the British supply, therefore, I calculate that twenty *per cent.* should be added for those items; which makes the sum total £.1,648,018. 24s. 4d. sterling-money.

AFTER all, it is very possible that some errors may have crept into the calculation, and the balance or surplus arising from the excess of the exports, may be more or less than appears by the statement which I have given; but this is a consideration of little importance in a national view, inasmuch as the final profit arising from the whole system, ultimately rests and centers in Great Britain;—a conclusion which was well illustrated formerly by the lords commissioners for trade and plantations, in a report made by them on the state of the British sugar colonies in the year 1734; an extract from which, as it serves likewise to point out the progress of this island during the last fifty years, I shall present to the reader.

“ THE annual amount (say their Lordships) of our exports to Jamaica, at a medium of four years, from Christmas 1728 to Christmas 1732, as it stands computed in the custom-house books, appears to have been - - £.147,675. 2. 34.

The

BOOK

II.

The medium of our imports (*1*) from Ja-

maica, in the same year, is - £. 539,499. 18. 3½.

So that the annual excess of our imports,

in that period, is no less than - 391,824. 15. 11¼.

“ BUT it must not be imagined, that this excess is a debt upon Great Britain to the island of Jamaica; a part of it must be placed to the account of Negroes, and other goods, sent to the Spanish West Indies, the produce of which is returned to England by way of Jamaica; another part to the debt due to our African traders from the people of Jamaica, for the Negroes which are purchased and remain there for the service of the island; a third proportion must be placed to the account of our Northern Colonies on the continent of America, who discharge part of their balance with Great Britain by consignments from Jamaica, arising from the provisions and lumber with which they supply that island; the remaining part of the excess in our importations from this colony, is a profit made upon our trade, whether immediately from Great Britain, or by way of Africa; and lastly, it is a consideration of great importance in the general trade of Great Britain, that part of the sugar, and other merchandize which we bring from Jamaica, is re-exported from hence, and helps to make good our balance in trade with other countries in Europe.”

HAVING mentioned the trade which is carried on between this island and the Spanish territories in America, some account

(1) The Custom House prices of goods imported, are considerably less than the real or mercantile prices—perhaps, in general, about one-third.

of it in its present state, and of the means which have been adopted by the British parliament to give it support, may not be unacceptable to my readers. It is sufficiently known to have been formerly an intercourse of vast extent, and highly advantageous to Great Britain, having been supposed to give employment, about the beginning of the present century, to 4,000 tons of English shipping, and to create an annual vent of British goods to the amount of one million and a half in value. From the wretched policy of the court of Spain towards its American subjects, by endeavouring to compel them to trust solely to the mother-country, for almost every article of necessary consumption, at the very time that she was incapable of supplying a fiftieth part of their wants, it is not surprising that they had recourse, under all hazards, to those nations of Europe which were able and willing to answer their demands. It was in vain, that the vessels employed in this traffick, by the English and others, were condemned to confiscation, and the mariners to perpetual confinement and slavery; the Spanish Americans supplied the loss by vessels of their own, furnished with seamen so well acquainted with the several creeks and bays, as enabled them to prosecute the contraband with facility and advantage. These vessels received every possible encouragement in our islands; contrary, it must be acknowledged, to the strict letter of our acts of navigation; but the British government, aware that the Spaniards had little to import besides bullion, but horned cattle, mules, and horses, (so necessary to the agriculture of the sugar colonies) connived at the encouragement that was given them. The trade, however,

BOOK

II.

ever, has been, for many years, on the decline. Since the year 1748, a wiser and more liberal policy towards its American dominions, seems to have actuated the court of Madrid; and the contraband traffick has gradually lessened, in proportion as the rigour of the ancient regulations has been relaxed. Nevertheless, the intercourse with this island, in Spanish vessels, was still very considerable so late as the year 1764. About that period, directions were issued by the English ministry to enforce the laws of navigation with the utmost strictness; and custom-house commissions were given to the captains of our men of war, with orders to seize all foreign vessels, without distinction, that should be found in the ports of our West Indian islands; a measure which in truth was converting our navy into *guarda-costas*, for the king of Spain. In consequence of these proceedings, the Spaniards, as might have been expected, were deterred from coming near us, and the exports from Great Britain to Jamaica alone in the year 1765, fell short of the year 1763, £. 168,000 sterling.

A WISER ministry endeavoured to remedy the mischief, by giving orders for the admission of Spanish vessels as usual; but the subject matter being canvassed in the British parliament, the nature and intent of those orders were so fully explained, that the Spanish court, grown wise from experience, took the alarm, and immediately adopted a measure, equally prompt and prudent, for counteracting them. This was, the laying open the trade to the islands of Trinidad, Porto-Rico, Hispaniola, and Cuba, to every province in Spain, and permitting goods of all

kinds to be sent thither, on the payment of moderate duties. Thus the temptation of an illicit commerce with foreign nations, being in a great measure removed, there was reason to believe that the effect would cease with the cause.

SUCH, however, is the superiority of comparative cheapness of British manufactures, that it is probable the trade would have revived to a certain degree, if the British ministry of 1765, after giving orders for the admission of Spanish vessels into our ports in the West Indies, had proceeded no further. But, in the following year, they obtained an act of parliament for opening the chief ports of Jamaica and Dominica, to all foreign vessels of a certain description. The motives which influenced the framers of this law, were undoubtedly laudable; they justly considered the recovery of the Spanish trade as a matter of the utmost consequence, and concluded that the traders would naturally prefer those ports in which their safety was founded on law, to places where their preservation depended only on the precarious tenure of connivance and favour. Other ostensible reasons were assigned in support of the measure; but the jealousy of Spain was awakened, and the endeavours of the British parliament on this occasion, served only to encrease the evil which was meant to be redressed. By an unfortunate oversight, the collectors at the several British free-ports were instructed to keep regular accounts of the entry of all foreign vessels, and of the bullion which they imported, together with the names of the commanders. These accounts having been transmitted to the commissioners of the customs in England, copies of them were, by some means, procured by the court

BOOK

II.

of Spain, and the absolute destruction of many of the poor people who had been concerned in transporting bullion into our islands, was the consequence. This intelligence I received soon afterwards (having at that time the direction of the custom-house in Jamaica) from a very respectable Spanish merchant, who produced to me a letter from Carthagena, containing a recital of the fact, accompanied with many shocking circumstances of unrelenting severity in the Spanish government. Information of this being transmitted to the British ministry, the former instructions were revoked, but the remedy came too late ;—for what else could be expected, than that the Spaniards would naturally shun all intercourse with a people, whom neither the safety of their friends, nor their own evident interest, was sufficient to engage to confidence and secrecy ?

THE little trade, therefore, which now subsists with the subjects of Spain in America, is chiefly carried on by small vessels from Jamaica, which contrive to escape the vigilance of the *guarda-costas*. But although, with regard to the revival of this particular branch of commerce, I am of opinion, that the free-port law has not so fully answered the expectation of its framers, as might have been wished ; its provisions, in other respects, have been very beneficial. It has been urged against it, that it gives occasion to the introduction of French wines, brandies, soap, cambricks, and other prohibited articles from Hispaniola ; and there is no doubt that small vessels from thence frequently claim the benefit of the free-ports, after having smuggled ashore, in the various creeks and harbours of

this island, where no custom-houses are established, large quantities of brandy, to the great prejudice of the rum-market, and other contraband goods. It may be urged too, that the permission given by the act to the importation of certain of the products of the foreign islands, is hurtful to the growers of the same commodities in Jamaica. All this is admitted; but on the other hand, considering the revenues and commerce of the empire at large, as objects of superior concern to local interests, it cannot be denied, that the woollen and cotton manufactories of Great Britain are of too great importance not to be supplied with the valuable materials of indigo and cotton-wool, on the easiest and cheapest terms possible. The quantities of these articles, as well as of woods for the dyer, imported in foreign bottoms into the free-ports, are very considerable. This subject was thoroughly investigated by the British House of Commons in 1774 (when the act would have expired); and it being given in evidence that thirty thousand people about Manchester were employed in the velvet manufactory, for which the St. Domingo cotton was best adapted; and that both French cotton and indigo had been imported from Jamaica at least thirty per cent. cheaper than the same could have been procured at through France—the House, disregarding all colonial opposition, came to a resolution, “that the continuance of free-ports in Jamaica would be highly beneficial to the trade and manufactures of the kingdom.” The act was thereupon renewed, and has since been made perpetual.

BUT the main argument which was originally adduced in defence of the establishment of free-ports in Jamaica, was

BOOK

II.

founded on the idea that those ports would become the great mart for supplying foreigners with negroes. It was said, that in order to have negroes plenty in our own islands, every encouragement must be thrown out to the African merchant, to induce him to augment his importations, and that no encouragement was so great as that of an opportunity of selling part of them to foreigners for ready money; a temptation, it was urged, which would be, as it heretofore had been, the means that a number would be imported sufficient both for the planter's use and for the foreign demand; and it was added, that at all events the French would deal with us, if the Spaniards would not.

WHETHER it be a wise and politick measure at any time to permit British subjects to supply foreigners with African labourers, is a question that may admit of dispute (*m*). I mean, at present, to confine myself only to a recital of facts; and it is certain that the very great demand for negroes in the Ceded Islands, for some years after the act first took place, affected the Jamaica import in a high degree; and in 1773, a circumstance occurred which was thought to render a renewal of the free-port law a measure of indispensable necessity. In that year the Spanish Asiento Company at Porto-Rico

(*m*) The re-export of negroes from the British West Indies, for the last twenty years, for the supply of the French and Spanish plantations, has not, I believe, exceeded one-fifth of the import. It was greater formerly, and during the existence of the Asiento contract, exceeded *one-third*.—Perhaps it would be found on the whole, that Great Britain has, by this means, during the last century, supplied her rivals and enemies with upwards of 500,000 African labourers; a circumstance which sufficiently justifies the doubt that I entertain concerning the wisdom and policy of this branch of the African commerce.

obtained

obtained permission to remove their principal factory to the Havanna, and to purchase slaves in any of the neighbouring islands, transporting them to their own settlements in Spanish vessels. It was easily foreseen, that Jamaica, from its vicinity to the chief colonies of Spain, in which negroes were most in demand, would engage a preference from the purchasers; wherefore, that encouragement might not be wanting, the British parliament not only renewed the free-port law, but also took off the duty of thirty shillings sterling a head, which, in the former act, was exacted on the exportation of negroes, and laid only a duty of two shillings and six-pence, in lieu of it. The result was—that the import for the next ten years, exceeded that of the ten years preceding, by no less than 22,213 negroes: and the export surpassed that of the former period, to the number of 5,952. Such part, therefore, of this increased export, as went to the supply of the Spanish colonies, we may attribute to the free-port law; for it is probable, from the circumstances stated, that the ancient contraband system is nearly at an end. In like manner it may be said of the importation of foreign indigo and cotton, that if it be not made in foreign vessels, it will cease altogether; and thus, instead of infringing the navigation-act, as some persons contend, the measure of opening the ports is strictly consonant to the spirit of that celebrated law; for, by furnishing an augmentation of freights to Great Britain, it tends ultimately to the increase of our shipping.

HAVING now, to the best of my judgment and knowledge, furnished my readers with such particulars as may enable them

to form a tolerably correct idea of the present trade and productions of Jamaica, I shall conclude with a concise display of its progress in cultivation at different periods, for a century past.

By a letter, dated March the 29th, 1673, from the then governor, Sir Thomas Lynch, to Lord Arlington, the Secretary of State, it appears, that the island at that time contained 7,768 whites, and 9,504 negroes; its chief productions were cacao, indigo, and hides. "The weather (observes the governor) has been seasonable, and the success in planting miraculous. Major-General Bannister is now very well, but by the next, *he sends your lordship a pot of sugar, and writes you its story.*" It would seem from hence, that the cultivation of sugar was then but just entered upon, and that Blome, who asserts there were seventy sugar-works in 1670, was misinformed. So late as the year 1722, the island made only eleven thousand hogheads of sugar, of sixteen hundred weight.

FROM that time I have no authentick account until the year 1734, when the island contained 7,644 whites (*n*), 86,546 negroes, and 76,011 head of cattle. The value of the imports from this island to Great Britain, about this period, were stated (as we have seen) by the Commissioners of Trade, at £. 539,499. 18. 3½ sterling. Of the particulars I have no account. In the year 1739, the export of sugar was 33,155 hogheads.

(*n*) The circumstance of the decrease of the white inhabitants for the first sixty years, may appear strange. It was owing, without doubt, to the decline of the privateering trade, which gave full employment to the first adventurers.

In 1744, the numbers were 9,640 whites, 112,428 negroes, and 88,036 head of cattle. The exports at this period, were nearly about 35,000 hogshheads of sugar, and 10,000 puncheons of rum, exclusive of smaller articles. The whole might be worth £.600,000 sterling.

CHAP.

V.

In 1768, the whites were supposed to have been 17,000. The number of negroes on the tax-rolls were 166,914, and the cattle 135,773 head. The exports (the value of which could not be less at that time than 1,400,000 sterling) were these:

EXPORTS FROM JAMAICA, 1768.

	Hhds. of Sugar, of 16 cwt.	Pun ^s of Rum, of 110 gal ^s .	Bags of Pimento, of 100 lbs.	Bags of Ginger, of 70 lbs.	Bags of Cotton, of 200 lbs.	Bags of Coffee, of 100 lbs.	Tons of Futlick and Log wood.
To Great Britain and Ireland	54,181	11,127	13,116	2,551	2,211	1,491	4,035
To North America — —	1,580	4,424	738	620	252	2,712	—
Total —	55,761	15,551	13,854	3,171	2,463	4,203	4,035

(continued.)

	Feet of Mahogany.	Tons of Lig. Vitr.	Tons of Nic. Wood and Ebony.	Gall ^s of Melasses.	Hides.	Mitcella- neous Articles.
To Great Britain and Ireland	443,920	120	26	—	—	£. s. d. Value
To North America — —	424,080	—	—	201,960	2,287	unknown.
Total —	868,000	120	26	201,960	2,287	

BOOK

II.

CULTIVATION, in all parts of Jamaica, was now making a great and rapid progress. In 1774, the exports were considerably increased: The following account of them is extracted from the books of office, kept within the island.

EXPORTS FROM JAMAICA, 1774.

	Hhds. of Sugar, of 16 cwt.	Pun ^s of Rum, of 110 gal ^s .	Bags of Coffee, of 100 lbs.	Barrels of Indigo, of 300 lbs.	Bags of Ginger, of 70 lbs.	Bags of Pimento, of 100 lbs.
To Great Britain and Ireland	76,344	17,348	3,684	437	2,348	13,797
To North America — —	1,960	8,726	2,863	1	579	552
Total —	78,304	26,074	6,547	438	2,927	14,349

(continued.)

	Casks of ditto, of 300 lbs.	Bags of Cotton, of 200 lbs.	Hhds. of Melasses, 60 gall ^s .	Tons of Logwood, and Fustick.	Feet of Mahogany.	Hides.
To Great Britain and Ireland	276	2,022	69	1,286 $\frac{1}{2}$	117,200	656
To North America — —	47	88	951	26 $\frac{1}{2}$	12,080	8,636
Total —	323	2,110	1,020	1,313	129,280	9,292

THE amount of the sum total, according to the prices current, including the same allowance for miscellaneous articles, of which no precise account can be obtained as was allowed by the Inspector-General for the year 1787, may be fairly stated at two millions of pounds sterling.

BUT Jamaica had now nearly attained the meridian of its prosperity (*n*); for early in the following year, the fatal and unnatural war which has terminated in the dismemberment of the empire, began its destructive progress; in the course of which, the blameless inhabitants of this and the rest of the British sugar islands, felt all its effects without having merited the slightest imputation on their conduct. Their sources of supply for plantation necessities were cut off, and protection at sea, if not denied, was not given; so that their produce was seized in its way to Great Britain, and confiscated without interruption or mercy. To fill up the measure of their calamities, the anger of the Almighty was kindled against them;—no less than five destructive hurricanes in the space of seven years, spread ruin and desolation throughout every island! The last

(*n*) The greatest improvement which Jamaica has manifested since 1774, has been in the increased number of its coffee plantations. In that year, the export of coffee, as we have seen, was 654,700 lbs. In 1780, the crop having been shipped before the hurricane happened, the export was 735,392 lbs. For the three last years, of which I have any account, the export was as follows:

1788	—	1,035,368 lbs.
1789	—	1,493,282
1790	—	1,785,740

I have obtained this account from the books of the naval officer kept in the island.

BOOK

II.

of these terrible visitations in Jamaica, happened in 1786. Since that time, however, the seasons have been favourable; and the crops of 1788, 1789 and 1790, were considerable. May the inhabitants be thankful, that it has thus pleased the Divine Providence to remember mercy in judgment; and may past misfortunes teach them those lessons of fortitude, frugality, and foresight, which always alleviate afflictions, and sometimes even convert them into blessings.

Nothing now remains but to state the value of this island, considered as British property; of which the estimate is formed as follows:—250,000 negroes at fifty pounds sterling each, make twelve millions and a half; the landed and personal property to which these negroes are appurtenant (including the buildings) are very fairly and moderately reckoned at double the value of the slaves themselves; making twenty-five millions in addition to the twelve million five hundred thousand pounds I have stated before; and, in further addition, the houses and property in the towns, and the vessels employed in the trade, are valued at one million five hundred thousand pounds more; amounting in the whole to thirty-nine millions of pounds sterling.

APPENDIX TO BOOK II.

APPEN-
DIX.

NUMBER I.

A RETURN of the Number of SUGAR PLANTATIONS, in the
Island of JAMAICA, and the NEGRO SLAVES thereon, on
the 28th March, 1789, distinguishing the several Parishes.

		No. of Sugar Plant.	Negroes thereon.	Plantations.	Total Number of Negroes in each County.	Total of Sugar Plantations.	Total of Negroes employed in the Cultivation of Sugar.
County of Middlesex.	Parish of St. Mary - - - -	63	12,065				
	St. Anne - - - -	30	4,908				
	St. John - - - -	21	3,713				
	St. Dorothy - - - -	12	1,776				
	St. Thomas in the Vale	33	5,327				
	Clarendon - - - -	56	10,150				
	Vere - - - -	26	5,279				
	St. Catharine - - - -	3	408				
	Total in the County of Middlesex - - -			244	43,626		
County of Surry.	Parish of St. Andrew - - - -	24	3,540				
	St. George - - - -	14	2,795				
	Portland - - - -	23	2,968				
	Port Royal - - - -	3	358				
	St. David - - - -	12	1,890				
	St. Thomas in the East	83	15,786				
	Kingston - - - -	Nil.					
	Total in the County of Surry - - -			159	27,337		
County of Cornwall.	Parish of Trelawney - - - -	83	15,692				
	St. James - - - -	67	12,482				
	Hanover - - - -	69	13,330				
	Westmoreland - - - -	62	11,219				
	St. Elizabeth - - - -	26	5,112				
	Total in the County of Cornwall - - -			307	57,835		
	Total in Jamaica - - -					710	128,798

NUMBER II.

An Historical Account of the Constitution of Jamaica; drawn up in 1764, for the information of his Majesty's Ministers, by his Excellency William Henry Lyttelton (a), Governor and Commander in Chief of that Island.

BOOK
II.

IT does not appear that there was any form of civil government established in the island of Jamaica before the Restoration; when Colonel D'Oyley, who had then the chief command under a commission from the lord Protector, was confirmed in that command by a commission from King Charles, dated the 13th of February, 1661.

HIS commission, which recites the king's desire to give all protection and encouragement to the people of Jamaica, and to provide for its security and good government, empowers him to execute his trust according to such powers and authorities as are contained in his commission and the instructions annexed to it, and such as should from time to time be given to him by his majesty, and according to such good, just, and reasonable customs and constitutions as were exercised and settled in other colonies; or such other as should, upon mature advice and consideration, be held necessary and proper for the good government and security of the island, provided they were not repugnant to the laws of England.

(a) Created Lord Westcote, of the kingdom of Ireland, in 1776.

It further empowers him to take unto him a council of twelve persons, *to be elected by the people* according to the manner prescribed in the instructions; and, by the advice of any five or more of them, to constitute civil judicatories, with power to administer oaths; to command all the military forces in the island, and put in force and execute martial law; to grant commissions, with the advice of his council, for the finding out new trades; and to do and perform all other orders which might conduce to the good of the island. The instructions consist of fifteen articles:

The first directs the commission to be published, and the king proclaimed.

The third regulates the manner of electing the council, eleven of which to be chosen indifferently, by as many of the officers of the army, planters, and inhabitants, as could be conveniently admitted to such election, either at one or more places; which said persons, with the secretary of the island, who was thereby appointed always to be one, were established a council, to advise and assist the governor in the execution of his trust, and five were to be a quorum.

The fourth and fifth articles direct the taking the oaths, and settling judicatories for the civil affairs and affairs of the admiralty, for the peace of the island, and determining controversy.

The sixth directs the governor to discountenance vice and debauchery, and to encourage ministers, that Christianity and the protestant religion, according to the church of England, might have due reverence and exercise amongst them.

BOOK

II.

The seventh directs the fortifications at Cagway to be completed, and empowers him to compel, not only soldiers, but planters, to work by turns.

The eighth directs him to encourage the planters, and to assure them of his majesty's protection: and, by the ninth, he is to cause an accurate survey to be made of the island.

By the tenth it is directed, that the secretary shall keep a register of all plantations and the bounds thereof; and that all persons shall be obliged to plant a proportionable part thereof within a limited time.

The eleventh and twelfth direct all encouragements to be given to such negroes and others as shall submit to the government, and to merchants and such as shall bring any trade there, and forbid monopolizing.

The thirteenth directs, that any vessel which can be spared from the defence of the island, shall be employed in fetching settlers from any other colonies, and that no soldiers be allowed to depart without licence.

The fourteenth relates to the keeping of the stores and provisions sent to the island: and the fifteenth directs the governor to transmit, from time to time, a state of the island, and all his proceedings.

In 1662, Lord Windsor was appointed governor of Jamaica, by commission under the great seal; which, besides containing the same powers as those contained in Col. D'Oyley's commission, directs, that, in case of Lord Windsor's dying or leaving the island, the government shall devolve on the council,

or any seven of them, and appoints a salary of two thousand pounds *per ann.* payable out of the exchequer.

APPEN-
DIX.

His instructions consist of twenty-two articles. The first directs the publication of his commission: and the second, the appointment of the council, according to his commission and the instructions. But it must be observed upon this article, that no directions whatever are given, either in the commission, which refers to the instructions, or the instructions themselves, as to the mode in which the council shall be appointed; BUT IT APPEARS, THAT THE GOVERNOR NAMED THEM HIMSELF.

The third, fourth, fifth, sixth, and seventh articles relate to the administering oaths, establishing judicatures, and providing for the security of the adjacent isles.

The eighth directs encouragement to be given to planters to remove to Jamaica from the other colonies.

The ninth directs 100,000 acres of land to be set apart in each of the four quarters of the island as a royal demesne, a survey to be made, and a register kept of all grants, and a militia formed.

The tenth directs the planters to be encouraged, their lands confirmed unto them by grants under the great seal, and appoints 50,000 acres of land to the governor, for his own use.

The eleventh relates to the encouragement of an orthodox ministry: and the twelfth establishes a duty of five *per cent.* upon all exports after the expiration of seven years.

The thirteenth, fourteenth, fifteenth, and sixteenth articles contain general directions as to the liberty and freedom of trade
(except

BOOK

II.



(except with the Spaniards) assistance to the neighbouring plantations, and the security of the island, by obliging planters to reside in bodies together, and in contiguous buildings.

The seventeenth directs, that, as an encouragement to men of ability to go to the island, no offices shall be held by deputy; and gives a power to the governor of suspension or removal, in case of bad behaviour.

The nineteenth empowers the governor to grant royalties and manors, or lordships, to contain less than five hundred acres.

The twentieth empowers the governor, with advice of the council, to call assemblies, to make laws, and, upon imminent necessity, to levy money; such laws to be in force two years, and no longer, unless approved of by the crown.

See the proclamation of the 14th of December, 1661, upon which the people of Jamaica have upon any occasion laid so much stress.

THIS proclamation was published by Lord Windsor upon his arrival; but nothing else material arises out of his short administration worth notice, for he staid but two months, and left the island, and the execution of his commission, to Sir Charles Lyttelton, who had been appointed lieutenant-governor; and who governed with the advice of a council of twelve, appointed by himself, and called an assembly that made a body of laws, amongst which was one for raising a revenue.

Nothing, however, which appears to be material, as to the form of the constitution, occurred during his administration, which

which continued about twenty months ; when he was superseded by the arrival of Sir Thomas Modyford, who was appointed governor in chief by a commission under the great seal, which empowered him either to constitute, by his own authority, a privy-council of twelve persons, or to continue the old one, and to alter, change, or augment it as he thought proper ; to create judicatories ; and make laws, orders, and constitutions, provided they did not extend to take away any right or freehold, or the interest of any person in their rights or freeholds, goods or chattels, and that they were transmitted to his majesty for allowance or disapprobation.

He was further empowered to command and discipline all military forces, to use martial law upon persons in military service, and establish articles of war ; to create courts of admiralty, according to such authority as he should receive from the lord high admiral ; to erect forts and fortifications ; to establish ports, cities, towns, boroughs, and villages ; to create manors and lordships ; to grant charters to hold fairs ; to take surveys, and keep records of all grants of lands, under such moderate quit-rents, services, and acknowledgments as he should think fit ; and to prescribe terms of cultivation ; and grants so made under the seal, and enrolled, were to be good and valid against the crown ; to grant commissions for finding out new trades ; to pardon all offences, except murder and treason, and in those cases to reprieve for twelve months.

He was also empowered, with the advice of the majority of council, to frame a method for establishing general assemblies, and from time to time to call such assemblies together, and with their consent to pass all manner of laws, reserving to him

BOOK

II.

a negative voice ; as also, upon imminent occasions, to levy money. These laws not to extend to taking away any one's freehold, or to the loss of a member, and to be in force only two years, unless approved and confirmed by the crown.

This commission appoints a salary to the governor of one thousand pounds per annum, payable out of the exchequer.

The instructions, which consist of twenty articles, relate to the encouragement to be given to planters to come from the other colonies ; to the allowance settled upon himself and the other officers ; and extend to most of the points contained in Lord Windsor's instructions ; but direct, that the measure of setting out the 400,000 acres, as a royal demesne, shall be suspended ; that no duties shall be laid in the island upon the import or export of any goods for twenty-one years, nor shall any duty be laid here upon the produce of Jamaica for five years.

By these instructions it appears, that the crown allowed two thousand five hundred pounds *per annum* for the support of government ; and what was wanted, over and above, was to be made good by a duty on *stro g* liquors, either made or imported, to be levied by the authority of the governor and council.

IN July, 1664, Sir Thomas Modyford issued writs for electing two assembly-men for each parish ; which assembly met in October following.

It does not appear that this assembly sat above a month or two before they were dissolved ; but, during their sessions, they
passed.

passed a body of laws, which was transmitted to the lord chancellor, to be laid before the crown; but, not being confirmed, they would have expired at the end of two years; but (as I find it asserted by Lord Vaughan) the governor continued them in force to the end of his administration, by an order of council. I cannot, however, find this order upon record, but, after that time a great many ordinances of the governor and council, in the nature and form of laws; in some of which it was declared, that they shall continue in force until another assembly was called, and then to be confirmed, altered, or repealed, as that assembly should see convenient: but no other assembly was called during Sir Thomas Modyford's administration.

IN 1670, Sir Thomas Modyford was recalled, and Sir Thomas Lynch appointed lieutenant-governor and commander in chief, with the same powers as Sir Thomas Modyford had.

On the 1st of December, 1671, he issued writs for calling an assembly, to consist of two persons for each parish; which met on the 8th of January, and sat till June following, when the governor dissolved them, after having passed a body of laws, which were transmitted to England, but were not confirmed.

In May, 1673, Sir Thomas Lynch called another assembly; but, upon their refusing to grant money for the fortifications, he dissolved it after sitting only a few days; and, in January following, upon consideration that two years were almost expired since making the body of laws, and that his majesty had

BOOK

II.

not been pleased to signify his royal consent to them, a new assembly was called, which met the 18th of February, and, on the 14th of March, a new body of laws was passed, which were transmitted to England; but, not being confirmed by the crown, expired at the end of two years.

ON the 3d of December, 1674, Lord Vaughan was appointed governor of Jamaica. A council, consisting of twelve persons, was named in the commission, with power to him to expel or suspend any of them, and, in case of vacancies, to fill up the council to nine. He was also empowered to call assemblies, according to the usage of the island; and, with the council and assembly, to pass laws, which laws were to be in force for two years, unless the crown's pleasure was in the mean time signified to the contrary, and no longer, except they were approved and confirmed within that time. In the passing of these laws, the governor was to have a negative voice, and to dissolve any assembly, as he should think proper.

Upon Lord Vaughan's arrival in his government, he called an assembly, which met on the 26th of April, 1675, and passed a new body of laws.

It does not appear when this assembly was dissolved; but in March, 1676-7, writs were issued for a new assembly, which met on the 26th of that month; and, having passed several other laws, they were dissolved on the 26th of July: and the laws passed by both assemblies having been transmitted to England, the council took them into their consideration, and, after frequent deliberations upon them, and many alterations proposed,

proposed, they were referred, with the council's observations upon them, to the attorney-general to consider thereof, and to form a new body of laws for the good government of this island.

With these laws, the council took into consideration the state and constitution of Jamaica, and made the reports upon it hereunto annexed, *vide Documents, No. 1, 2.*

These reports having been confirmed, a commission passed the great seal, constituting Lord Carlisle governor of Jamaica, by which, and by the instructions annexed thereto, *vide No. 3, 4.* the form of government proposed in the council's report was adopted and established.

Upon Lord Carlisle's arrival in his government, he found the people very much dissatisfied with and averse to this new form of government; as will better appear by his letters, *vide No. 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10.*

These letters and papers being taken into consideration by the council, as also a report thereon by the committee, the council, on the 4th of April, 1679, made the order *No. 11*; and, on the 28th of May following, the annexed report, *No. 12*, was presented to his majesty, and, being approved, was transmitted to the Earl of Carlisle, with the annexed letter, *No. 13.*

Upon receipt of these papers, the Lord Carlisle communicated them to the assembly, who presented an address in answer to the report of the 28th of May; which address was transmitted to the council by Lord Carlisle. *Vide No. 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20.*

On the 5th of March, 1679-80, the council took into consideration the letters received from the Earl of Carlisle; and the

BOOK

II.

the annexed extracts (*No. 21 to 38, inclusive*) of their proceedings will shew their several resolutions and directions in consequence thereof.

It is impossible, at this distance of time, to judge what motives could have induced the council, after they had shewn so much firmness and resolution to support the rights of the crown, by establishing in Jamaica the Irish constitution, to give the point up, as it appears they did by the annexed explanatory commission to Lord Carlisle, *No. 39*, which contains the same power of making laws in assembly as is now given to the governor of Jamaica, and which, from that time, has been minutely the same; excepting only, that, in 1716, the governor was directed, by instructions, not to pass any laws that should repeal a law confirmed by the crown, without a clause of suspension, or first transmitting the draft of a bill; and, in 1734, this limitation was extended to all laws for repealing others, though such repealed law should not have been confirmed by the crown (*b*).

(*b*) Neither of these orders are enforced, except in the case of private bills, the assembly having constantly refused to admit suspending clauses in any publick act, and the crown has long since given up the point.

It is impossible to quit this Historical Account, without lamenting that its able and accomplished author should have committed himself as he has done in the concluding paragraph. The wicked attempt to introduce an arbitrary form of government, he terms *supporting the just rights of the crown*, and seems very seriously to lament that the privy-council had not firmness and resolution to persist in their project.

DOCUMENTS

ANNEXED TO THE

HISTORICAL ACCOUNT.

NUMBER I.

The Right honourable the Lords of the Committee for Trade and Plantations having this day presented to the Board the ensuing Report; viz.

MAY IT PLEASE YOUR MAJESTY,

WE having, according to the trust reposed in us in reference to your majesty's plantations, taken in consideration the present state and government of the island of Jamaica, particularly such matters as, from the nature of affairs as they now stand there, we have judged necessary to be recommended to the Right honourable the Earl of Carlisle, whom your majesty has been pleased to nominate and constitute governor of the said island; and having, after several meetings, agreed upon the following particulars, we most humbly crave leave to lay them before your majesty, for your royal determination.

The first point that did occur most worthy to be considered by us was, the power and manner of enacting laws for the civil, military, and ecclesiastical government; and, upon taking a view of what has been practised since your majesty's happy restoration in the legislative, we find, that the methods and authorities for the framing and ordaining the said laws have been only such as were directed by your royal commission unto your majesty's several governors, or prescribed by the instructions given them

APPENDIX.

BOOK

II.

them from time to time ; and that as the constitution and exigency of affairs have often changed, so your majesty has thought fit variously to adapt your royal orders thereunto ; and, by the last commission, given unto the Lord Vaughan, your majesty was pleased to empower his lordship, with the advice of your majesty's council, from time to time to summon general assemblies of freeholders, who have authority, with the advice and consent of the governor and council, to make and ordain laws for the government of the island ; which laws are to be in force for the space of two years, except in the mean time your majesty's pleasure be signified to the contrary, and no longer, unless they be confirmed by your majesty within that time. Having, therefore, directed our thoughts towards the consequences and effects which have been produced, or may arise, from this authority derived unto the said freeholders and planters, which we observe to have received a daily increase by the resolutions they have taken, less agreeable to your majesty's intention, we do most humbly offer our opinions, that the laws transmitted by the Lord Vaughan, which are now under consideration in order to be enacted by your majesty, may be entrusted in the hands of the Earl of Carlisle, who, upon his arrival in the island, may offer them unto the next assembly, that they may be consented unto as laws originally coming from your majesty ; and that, for the future, no legislative assembly be called without your majesty's special directions ; but that, upon emergencies, the governor do acquaint your majesty by letters with the necessity of calling such an assembly, and pray your majesty's consent and directions for their meeting ; and, at the same time, do present unto your majesty a scheme of such acts as he shall think fit and necessary, that your majesty may take the same into consideration, and return them in the form wherein your majesty shall think fit that they be enacted ; that the governor, upon receipt of your majesty's commands, shall then summon an assembly, and propose the said laws for their consent, so that the same method in legislative matters be made use of in Jamaica as in Ireland, according to the form prescribed by Poyning's law ; and that, therefore, the present style of enacting laws, *By the governor, council, and representatives of the commons assembled*, be converted into the style of, *Be it enacted*

enacted by the king's most excellent majesty, by and with the consent of the general assembly. APPENDIX.

We are further of opinion, that no escheats, fines, forfeitures, or penalties, be mentioned in the said laws to be applied to the publick use of the island; and that your majesty do instruct your governor to dispose thereof for the support of the government. It is also our opinion, that in all laws for levying of money, and raising a publick revenue, the clauses whereby the said levies are appropriated unto the publick use of the island, without any mention made of your majesty, or unto your majesty for the said publick use, are so far derogatory to your majesty's right of sovereignty, that they ought to be, for the future, altered and made agreeable to the style of England.

We do likewise offer it unto your majesty as necessary, that no minister be received in Jamaica without licence from the right reverend the lord bishop of London; and that none having his lordship's licence be rejected, without sufficient cause alledged; as also, that in the direction of all church affairs, the minister be admitted into the respective vestries.

And whereas it has upon some occasions proved inconvenient, that the members of the council have been constituted by your majesty's commission; we are of opinion, that, for the future, they be only named in the instructions of the governor; for the strengthening of whose authority under your majesty we do offer, that he may have power to suspend any of the said members, if he see just cause, without receiving the advice and consent of the council; and also, that none of the said so suspended, or by your majesty's order displaced, from that trust, may be permitted to be received into the general assembly.

And whereas nothing can contribute more to the welfare of your majesty's island, than that all means be found out for the increase of trade; we do offer, for the encouragement thereof, that a mint be allowed in Jamaica, in such manner that no prejudice do arise unto your majesty's other dominions, or that what bullion is brought from thence may be coined here in England; provided that all such coins may bear your

BOOK

II.

{

majesty's royal superscription, and not be imposed in payment elsewhere.

All which, &c.

FINCH,
DANBY,
WORCESTER,
ESSEX,
FAUCONBERRY,
CRAVEN,
H. COVENTRY.

Tho. Dolman.

His majesty, taking the same in consideration, was pleased to approve thereof; and did order, that the Right honourable Mr. Secretary Coventry do prepare a commission and instructions for his majesty's royal signature, for the Earl of Carlisle, according to the tenor of the said report.

NUMBER II.

At the Court at Whitehall, the 15th of February, 1677-8.

PRESENT, the King's Most Excellent Majesty in Council.

Upon reading this at the board, a report from the Right honourable the Lords of the Committee for Trade and Plantations, in the words following :

May it please your Majesty,

HAVING received, on the 12th of January last past, from the Right honourable Mr. Secretary Coventry, a draft of a commission and instructions

instructions for the Earl of Carlisle, whom your majesty has appointed to be your governor of Jamaica; and having, after several additions and alterations, remitted the same unto Mr. Secretary Coventry, on the 2d inst. we crave leave to offer to your majesty the most material points which did occur unto us upon perusal of the said draft; which are as followeth:

1st. As we are of opinion that all members of council in Jamaica may, for the more easy passing of laws, be admitted into the assembly, if duly elected by the freeholders; so we cannot but advise your majesty, that as well the members of the said council suspended by your majesty's governor, as the members displaced by your majesty, may be rendered incapable during which suspension of being admitted into the assembly.

2d. That although your majesty has, by an order of the 16th of November last past, thought fit that no assembly be called without your majesty's especial leave and directions; we think it very important, for your majesty's service and safety of the island, that in case of invasion, rebellion, or some other very urgent necessity, your majesty's governor may have power, with the consent of the assembly, to pass acts for raising of money, to answer the occasions arising by such urgent necessities.

3d. That whereas hitherto, within your majesty's island of Jamaica, the oaths of allegiance and supremacy have not been imposed on persons that bear any part of the government, except the members and officers of the council, and all judges and justices; so, for the prevention of future inconveniencies, and greater assurance of loyalty, towards your majesty, we are humbly of opinion, that all persons elected into the assembly shall, before their sitting, take the oaths of allegiance and supremacy, which your majesty's governor shall commissionate fit persons, under the seal of the island, to administer unto them, and that, without taking the said oaths, none shall be capable of sitting, although elected.

We have likewise, pursuant to your majesty's orders, prepared a body of laws, such as the Right honourable the Earl of Carlisle may be empowered to carry with him, and to offer unto the assembly of Jamaica for their consent. Whereas we do not find, since your majesty's happy restoration, that any laws transmitted from your majesty's plantations have

BOOK

II.

been confirmed by your majesty, either under the great seal of England, or any other signification of your majesty's pleasure (the act of four and a half *per cent.* in the Caribbee islands only excepted, which was confirmed by the order of council) and the intended method of enacting laws in Jamaica hath not as yet been put in practice; we humbly crave your majesty's royal determination, whether the said laws shall pass only by order of your majesty in council, or under the great seal of England, that we may accordingly be enabled fitly to present them unto your royal view.

All which, &c.

His majesty was pleased to order, that Mr. Secretary Coventry do prepare Lord Carlisle's commission and instructions concerning these matters accordingly: and as for the laws of the said island, his majesty by an order of the board, hath been pleased this day to declare his pleasure, that they shall pass under the great seal of England.

NUMBER III.

Extract of King Charles the Second's Commission to the Earl of Carlisle.

AND we do hereby give and grant unto you, with the advice and consent of the said council, full power and authority, from time to time, as need shall require, to summon or call general assemblies of the freeholders and planters within the said island, and other the territories under your government, in such manner and form as hath been formerly practised and used in the said island of Jamaica.

And our will and pleasure is, that the persons thereupon duly elected, and having before their sitting taken the oaths of allegiance and supremacy, (which you shall commissionate fit persons, under the seal of our island, to administer, and without taking which none shall be capable of sitting, though elected) shall be called and held the general assembly of the

the said island of Jamaica, and other the territories thereon depending; and shall have full power and authority to agree and consent unto all such statutes and ordinances for the publick peace, welfare, and good government of the said island, and other the territories thereon depending, and the people and inhabitants thereof, and such others as shall resort thereunto, and for the benefit of our heirs and successors, as having been by you, with advice and consent of the said council, framed and transmitted unto us, in order to be here enacted, by our giving our consent thereunto, shall be by us approved and remitted unto you under our great seal of England; which said statutes, laws, and ordinances, are to be by you framed as near as conveniently may be to the laws and statutes of our kingdom of England.

APPEN-
DIX.

And we do hereby, nevertheless, authorize and empower you, in case of invasion, rebellion, or some very great necessity, to pass an act or acts, by and with the consent of the general assembly, without transmitting the same first to us, to raise money within the said island, and the territories within your government, to answer the occasions arising by such urgent necessities.

And we give you likewise full power, from time to time, as you shall judge it necessary, to dissolve all general assemblies, as aforesaid.

NUMBER IV.

Extract of King Charles the Second's Instructions to the Earl of Carlisle.

AND whereas by our commission we have directed that, for the future, no general assembly be called without our special directions; but that, upon occasion, you do acquaint us by letter with the necessity of calling such an assembly, and pray our consent and directions for their meeting; you shall, at the same time, transmit unto us, with the advice and consent of the council, a draft of such acts as you shall think fit and necessary to be passed, that we may take the same into our consideration, and return them in the form we shall think fit to be enacted:

in

BOOK
II.

in and upon the receipt of our commands, you shall then summon an assembly, and propose the said laws for their consent.

And accordingly we have ordered to be delivered unto you herewith, a certain body of laws, for the use of our said island, framed in pursuance of other laws transmitted unto us by former governors, with such alterations and amendments as we have thought fit, with the advice of our privy-council here; which, upon your arrival in our said island, you shall offer unto the next assembly, that they may be consented to and enacted as laws originally coming from us.

We are willing, nevertheless, that in case of invasion, rebellion, or some very urgent necessity, you pass an act or acts, with the consent of the general assembly, without transmitting the same first unto us, to raise money within the said island, and the territories depending thereon, to answer the occasions arising by such urgent necessities.

And you shall take care that the present style of enacting laws, *By the governor, council, and representatives of the commons assembled*, be converted into the style of, *Be it enacted by the king's most excellent majesty, by and with the consent of the general assembly*.

NUMBER V.

Extract of a Letter from the Earl of Carlisle to Mr. Secretary Coventry.

I HAVE spoken with several of the council, and find some of them much dissatisfied at the alterations in the laws and manner of passing them, particularly at the latter part of the clause in the militia bill: "but that in all things he may, upon all occasions or emergencies, act as captain-general and governor in chief, according to and in pursuance of all the powers and authorities given unto him by his majesty's commission; any thing in this case, or any other, to the contrary in anywise notwithstanding;" which they are jealous of, lest that thereby they shall make it legal to execute all instructions that either are or shall be sent to me, or any other succeeding governor; which scruple might easily

easily be avoided, but that the great seal being affixed to the laws, I have no power to make alteration, which I might have done both to their satisfaction and the preservation of the king's right. The act for the revenue, too, I fear will not without difficulty pass; but I shall endeavour all I can to bring them to pass, for which I have greater inducements than my being here, without any hopes from the present state of the treasury, which is exhausted and in debt for their new fortifications.

APPEN-
DIX.

NUMBER VI.

Copy of a Letter to Mr. Secretary Coventry from the Earl of Carlisle.

St. Jago, 11th September, 1678.

Sir,

THE assembly met on the 2d instant, and, I find, are so dissatisfied with the alteration of the government, that I question whether they will pass any of these laws: they have objections against several of them; as the act for the revenue that is perpetual, and may be diverted; they are nettled at the expression in the preamble, that the revenue was raised by the governor and council; and though they cannot deny it to be truth, yet they say that council was elected by the people, and, though continued under the name of a council, yet was in effect an assembly or representatives of the people.

I have given into their hands a copy of that act and fourteen more, and gave them liberty to compare them with the original. The act of militia and some others I keep by me, till I see what they will do with those they have. All the acts are not yet transcribed; for but one man can write at a time, and they are bulky; but I have enough to keep them employed. The speaker came to me on Saturday, to desire liberty to adjourn for a few days, which I consented to, and they adjourned till Thursday morning. Lieut. Col. Beelson is speaker, who I recommended to them upon Sir H. Morgan's assurances that he would behave himself

BOOK

II.

himself well. He hath the general repute of an honest and discreet gentleman, though he signed the order about the privateer, at which so much offence was taken; but I am satisfied he was no further faulty, than in complying with the directions of the assembly: and I the rather proposed him (whom they had a mind to choose) to gain the point quietly of recommending, which my Lord Vaughan, I am told, neglected to do.

The assembly appointed a committee to compare these laws with their former: it is said they differ in many things, especially from these laws last sent from Lord Vaughan, which are most usefully framed for their present benefit.

Popular discourses here as well as in England; and I find a few men's notions have taken such place with the leading men of the assembly, that they rather set themselves to frame arguments against the present constitution, than to accommodate things under it. I cannot yet tell you what course I shall take to remove this difficulty; but I will do the best I can. I find one of the council more faulty in this than any man in the island, but am unwilling to name him till I have tried the utmost to reclaim him.

Whilst we are here busy about small matters, I doubt your hands are full of greater, and may therefore forget us. We hear the French and Dutch are agreed.

I am, Sir,

Your most humble servant,

CARLISLE.

NUMBER VII.

*Extract of a Letter from the Earl of Carlisle to the Committee,
24th October, 1678.*

My Lords,

I HAVE met with the difficulties here I foresaw, but could neither avoid nor prevent, in England. The general assembly meeting on the

2d of September last, I recommended and sent to them the several bills I brought over under the great seal of England, for their consent to be enacted; but being much dissatisfied at the new frame of government, and their losing their deliberative part of power in altering and amending laws, they would not pass any one of them, but threw them all out; but prepared an address, with a bill of impost upon wines and other strong liquors for one year, without giving me notice thereof, in such terms and form as was not fit for me to pass it: but afterwards changing the style of enacting, as directed in my instructions, with some other amendments to this bill, the publick necessities of the island, having contracted many debts from new fortifications and salaries already due, requiring it, I gave the royal assent; and then, on the 12th this instant October, I dissolved them. My earnest suit to all your lordships is, that you'll please to have me in your thoughts, and the present state of this colony under your lordships' consideration, for some expedient which may be elucidatory to the power given me by my commission and instructions, which may quiet the minds of persons generally dissatisfied in this island, which is most certainly under the greatest hopes of improvement of all the islands in the West Indies, and therefore most fit for to be encouraged, with the king's countenance and support, with good and acceptable laws.

What bills I shall send to Mr. Secretary Coventry, I pray may be dispatched speedily when brought before your lordships, and received; an order to be passed through all offices without delay, being in part of what is so very much wanting towards the support of the good government of this island.

NUMBER VIII.

Copy of a Letter from the Earl of Carlisle to the Committee.

My Lords,

A FORTNIGHT ago I gave you an account upon what terms I had parted with the assembly. I have since thoroughly considered of what might in this place most conduce to his majesty's service, and could not think of any better expedient than to send the bearer,

BOOK

II.

Mr. Atkinson to wait upon your lordships. He was Secretary to Sir Thomas Lynch and my Lord Vaughan, and has been enough acquainted with all my proceedings since my arrival, so as perfectly able to satisfy your lordships in any thing you may desire to know concerning the place, and to lay before you all the several interests of his majesty relating to it.

My lords, I find that the present form appointed for the making and passing of laws, considering the distance of the place, is very impracticable, besides very distasteful to the sense of the people here, as you may observe by the assembly's address to me; and if your lordships will please to move his majesty to send me a general instruction to call another assembly, and to re-enact and make what laws are fit for this place, I could then order the matter to conclude effectually to his majesty's service. I have, by Mr. Atkinson, sent you the drafts of such bills as are the most fundamental and chiefly concern his majesty's interest; and I do assure you, that I will not in any material point vary from them. He will, when your lordships order him to attend you, lay them all before you, and, I believe, give your lordships such thorough satisfaction, that you will rest assured that what I desire is for his majesty's service, and that I shall be enough enabled by it to settle every thing upon so good a foundation, that neither his majesty nor your lordships will ever repent of having made any deference to my opinion: in it, my lords, much success depends upon the dispatch, and of the circumstances Mr. Atkinson will give you an account. His business is wholly to attend your lordships, and, I believe, he will always be in the way. He has prayed me to intercede with your lordships, to excuse what errors he may commit, as having been a West-Indian for these eight years past, and do on his behalf beg that favour of your lordships; but hope that he will prove so discreet, as to give your lordships no manner of offence. I thought it the readiest and best way to have all things rightly understood, and do hope that issue will be produced from it.

I am, your Lordships' most humble, and obedient servant,

CARLISLE.

St. Jago de la Vega, Nov. 15, 1678.

NUMBER IX.

Extract of a Letter from the Earl of Carlisle to Mr. Secretary Coventry.

ON the 2d of September last, the general assembly met; but under so much dissatisfaction from the new frame of government, and their losing their deliberative part of power, in framing, altering, and amending laws, that they spent near a fortnight very uneasily about some of the laws, and would have begun with the bill of revenue to have thrown that out first, as a mark of their disallowing the new method of government, being so highly incensed that they were near questioning the king's power and authority to do it: insomuch, that I, taking the maintenance thereof to be in my charge, and finding some of the council equally disgusted at the change of government, and foreseeing that it was like to encourage discontent in the assembly, to take them off, and leave the assembly upon their humour by themselves, I thought it absolutely necessary to put this question to each of the counsellors, in these words: "Do you submit and consent to this present form of government which his majesty hath been pleased to order for this island of Jamaica?" To which the chief-justice, Col. Long, refused to answer, with two more, Col. Charles Whitfield and Col. Thomas Freeman. The chief-justice, being a man of very great influence upon the assembly, I presently suspended, and gave the other two (less dangerous) till morning to consider on it: and then the chief-justice sent to me his submission under his hand, and Col. Freeman submitted; but Col. Charles Whitfield, otherwise a very good man, went away into the country.

The assembly received and examined all the laws I brought over, and drew up their reasons against passing them; of each, many were very frivolous, and the best was, because they were not compared with and amended by the last laws of my Lord Vaughan's, now with you, and received some two days before my coming away, the fleet then staying in the Downs, and my departure much pressed upon the expectation of war. These

APPENDIX.

DIX.

BOOK

II.



reasons against the revenue bill I answered individually; but no means or endeavours either I myself, the council, or both could use, would prevail with them to pass any one of them; and I look upon this to be their chief reason, that by not passing them they might the better shew their dislike of that new way of government; though they urge this for their enjoying a power of altering and amending laws, the necessity of changing them as often as occasions do require, and the distance from this place is so great, that before the king's approbation can be obtained to a law, and returned hither, it may be fit for the publick good either to lay that law aside, or much to change and alter it; and, indeed, in this part of the objection I think they are in the right, for that they will want temporary laws till the colony be better grown: and, upon thorough consideration of the whole matter in this part, I am of opinion it is very advisable and requisite that there should be leave and power from the king to make laws (not relating to his majesty's power or prerogative) to endure for some term till his royal approbation may be had therein; and of this I do earnestly entreat your care.

Having used all methods possible with the several members apart, and jointly with the body of the assembly, for the passing the laws, I was, after many conferences and debates, and several adjournments, frustrated, and they threw them all out. Afterwards, in a full body, by the speaker they gave me the inclosed address, and presented to me a bill for a publick impost, prepared, without giving me notice thereof, in such terms and forms as was not fit for me to pass it in; but at last in some part consented to such amendments as I and the council thought fit, changing the style of enacting as directed in my instructions, but restraining it to one year, from a fear that if they should have made it perpetual, they should be assembled no more, but be governed by governor and council as they were in Col. D'Oyley's time, when they enacted laws, not only for the revenue but other occasions, by governor and council, and some part of Sir Charles Lyttelton's time, as appears by our council-book upon the place; and Sir Thomas Modyford had an instruction to continue this revenue by order of governor and council, the assembly in his life-time passing it perpetual; and in Sir Thomas Lynch's time the assembly made it perpetual, but, for want of the king's consent

consent they both are fallen; but now, the assembly say, they are of a better understanding than to give the reins out of their own hands.

APPENDIX.

To this bill, the island's affairs being under great pressures from publick debts contracted for the new fortifications and salaries already due, I gave the royal assent; and then, being the 12th instant, I dissolved them.

Which having done, and not being satisfied with the behaviour of the assembly in their proceedings in relation to the government I stood charged with, most of them being in military trusts, I put this question to each of them: "Do you submit to this form of government which his majesty hath been pleased to order for this island of Jamaica?" to which several of them neither gave me a dutiful nor chearful answer; some did, and at this some are much dissatisfied.

N U M B E R X.

May it please your Excellency,

WE, the members chosen by his majesty's writ to be the general assembly for this his island of Jamaica, do, with a great deal of thankfulness, acknowledge the princely care which his majesty hath been ever pleased to have of this his colony, and of which your excellency hath likewise given to us very late and fresh assurances: and, in obedience to his majesty's commands, we have perused the several bills which your excellency sent us; and, having duly examined the matters contained in them, we could not give our consent to any of them, there being divers fundamental errors, which we particularly observed, and did cause them to be entered in our journal; and from the consideration of them we cannot but reflect, and do humbly beg your excellency to represent unto his most sacred majesty, the great inconveniencies which are like to redound unto this his island by this method and manner of passing of laws, which is absolutely impracticable, and will not only tend to the great discouragement of the present planters, but likewise put a very fatal stop to any further prosecution of the improvement of this place, there being nothing that invites people more to settle and remove their

BOOK

II.

family and stocks into this remote part of the world, than the assurance they have always had of being governed in such manner as that none of their rights should be lost, so long as they were within the dominions of the kingdom of England: nor can we believe that his majesty would have made this alteration, had he been truly informed of his own interests, and of that which is proper and natural for the constitution of this island.

My lord, you that are now our governor, and here upon the place, cannot but distinguish both, and plainly see that which, at great distance, is impossible to be known, being always distinguished with the false colours of interest and design. It is to you, therefore, we address ourselves; and do humbly beg you to assure his majesty, which we do from the bottom of our hearts unfeignedly declare, that we are his true, faithful, and loyal subjects. In the next place, sir, we humbly beg you to lay before his majesty the true condition of this island, and the several circumstances wherein it stands: the situation and natural advantages of the place will very probably, by God's blessing, in a very short time, make it very considerable. It were pity, therefore, that any stop in its infancy should be put to it, which may hinder its future growth, and disappoint those hopes which his majesty hath ever had, and which will no doubt of it come to pass, that, if this island be encouraged by good government and wholesome laws, it will effectually serve very many interests, both of his majesty's crown and the nation's trade.

Sir, the present form of the government, as it is now appointed, has these plain and manifest inconveniencies in it:

1st. That the distance of this place renders it impossible to be put in practice, and does not in any manner fall under the same consideration as Ireland does, from which, we conclude, the example is taken.

2d. The nature of all colonies is changeable, and consequently the laws must be adapted to the interest of the place, and must alter with it.

3d. It is no small satisfaction that the people, by their representatives, have a deliberative power in the making of laws; the negative and barely resolving power being not according to the rights of Englishmen, and practised no where but in those commonwealths where aristocracy prevails.

4th. This

4th. This manner of form of the government brings all things absolute, and puts it into the power of a governor to do what he pleases, which is not his majesty's interest, and may be a temptation for even good men to commit great partialities and errors.

APPENDIX.


5th. The method which has been always used, both in this island and all other colonies, in the making of laws, was a greater security to his majesty's prerogative than the present form; for a governor durst not consent to any thing against his interest; and if he did, the signification of the king's pleasure determined the laws, so that his majesty had thereby a double negative.

Thus, sir, we have truly laid before your excellency our real sense; and do hope that your excellency, being thoroughly satisfied of the mischiefs which will certainly arise to this place from the reasons we have given, will in that manner represent our condition to his majesty, that he may be thereby induced to give an instruction to your excellency, to pass such laws as are municipal and fit for us, and in the same manner which has ever been practised in this island and other his majesty's colonies; we having no other claim in it than to express our duty to the king, and our unfeigned service and gratitude to your excellency, for mediating that which is so much for his majesty's and the island's interest.

And we do here likewise present unto your excellency a bill for the raising a publick impost unto his majesty, his heirs and successors, for the support of this his government; and do hereby beg your excellency to accept of it as a real demonstration of our loyalty to our prince and service to your excellency, with assurance that we shall, upon all occasions, be ready to express such further testimonies of the same as may be suitable to our duty and allegiance.

BOOK

II.

NUMBER XI.

At the court at Whitehall, 4th of April, 1679.

PRESENT, the King's Most Excellent Majesty in Council.

Whereas the Right honourable the Lords of the Committee for Trade and Plantations did this day make Report unto his Majesty in Council,

THAT having, in pursuance of his majesty's order, considered the present state and constitution of Jamaica, and the government thereof, as it is settled by his majesty's command, their lordships see no reasons why any alterations should be made in the method of making laws according to the usage of Ireland, for which their lordships are preparing reasons to evince the necessity and legality of the same. And that whereas a ship is now lying in the Downs, bound for that island, their lordships advise, that the Right honourable Mr. Secretary Coventry do, by this conveyance, inform the Earl of Carlisle of his majesty's pleasure herein, with directions that all things be disposed to this end; and that, in the mean time, the present laws enacted by Lord Vaughan be continued by proclamation, or otherwise, until his majesty's pleasure be further known; as also that his lordship do, by the first conveyance, send over an authentick copy of the act for a publick impost, lately enacted there, according to his lordship's instructions for matters of that nature.

His majesty, having thought fit to approve thereof, was pleased to order, as it is hereby ordered, that the Right honourable Mr. Secretary Coventry do signify his majesty's pleasure unto the Earl of Carlisle, according to the said report.

NUMBER XII.

APPEN-
DIX.

At the Court at Whitehall, the 28th of May, 1679.

PRESENT, the King's Most Excellent Majesty in Council.

Whereas there was this day read at the Board a Report from the Right honourable the Lords of the Committee for Trade and Plantations, in the words following; viz.

May it please your Majesty,

WE have, in obedience to your majesty's commands, entered into the present state of your majesty's island of Jamaica, in order to propose such means as may put an end to the great discouragement your majesty's good subjects there lie under by the unsettled condition thereof, occasioned by the refusal of the laws lately offered by the Earl of Carlisle to the assembly for their consent; at which proceedings dissatisfaction appears to have risen in the manner following:

By the commission granted by your majesty unto the Lord Vaughan and several preceding governors, it was your royal pleasure to entrust the assembly of Jamaica with a power to frame and enact laws, by the advice and consent of the governor and council; which laws were to continue in force for the space of two years, and no longer: but so it hath happened, that your majesty, finding the inconveniencies which did attend that power and manner of making laws, by the irregular, violent, and unwarrantable proceedings of the assembly, was pleased, with the advice of your privy council, to provide, by the Earl of Carlisle's commission, that no laws should be enacted in Jamaica, but such as, being framed by the governor and council, and transmitted unto your majesty for your royal approbation, were afterwards remitted to Jamaica, and consented unto by the assembly there; and, in pursuance thereof, the Earl of Carlisle carried over a body of laws under the great seal of Eng-

BOOK

II.

land; which laws, upon his lordship's arrival there, have been rejected by the general assembly, upon grounds and reasons contained in an address to your majesty's governor, and in divers letters received from his lordship in that behalf.

1st. In the first place, we find, they are unsatisfied with the clause in the militia bill, whereby it is provided, that the governor may, upon all occasions or emergencies, act as governor in chief, according to and in pursuance of all the powers and authorities given unto him by your majesty's commission; fearing that thereby they shall make it legal to execute all instructions that either are or shall be sent your majesty's governor.

2dly. They have likewise rejected the bill for raising a public revenue, as being perpetual, and liable (as they say) to be diverted.

3dly. It is objected, that the said laws contain divers fundamental errors.

4thly. That they were not compared with, and amended by, the last laws sent over by Lord Vaughan.

5thly. That the distance of the place renders the present method of passing laws wholly impracticable.

6thly. That the nature of all colonies is changeable, and consequently the laws must be adapted to the interest of the place, and alter with it.

7thly. That thereby they lose the satisfaction of a deliberative power in making laws.

8thly. That this form of government renders your governor absolute.

9thly. That by the former method of enacting laws your majesty's prerogative was better secured.

These being the objections and pretences upon which the assembly has, with so much animosity, proceeded to reject those bills transmitted by your majesty, we cannot but offer, for your majesty's information and satisfaction, such a short answer thereunto as may not only give a testimony of the unreasonableness of their proceedings, but also furnish your governor, when occasion shall serve, with such arguments as may be fit to be used in justification of your majesty's commission and powers granted unto him.

1st. It is not without the greatest presumption that they go about to question your majesty's power over the militia in that island, since it has been allowed and declared, even by the laws of this your kingdom, that the sole supreme government, command, and disposition of the militia, and of all forces by sea and land, and of all forts and places of strength, is residing in your majesty, within all your majesty's realms and dominions.

2d. The objection made against the bill for the public revenue hath as little ground, since its being perpetual is no more than what was formerly offered by them unto your majesty, during the government of Sir Thomas Lynch, in the same measure and proportion as is now proposed; nor can it be diverted, since provision is thereby expressly made, that the same shall be for the better support of that government; besides, that it is not suitable to the duty and modesty of subjects, to suspect your majesty's justice or care for the government of that colony, whose settlement and preservation have been most particularly carried on by your majesty's tender regard, and by the great expence of your own treasure.

3d. It cannot with any truth be said, that these laws contain many and great errors, nothing having been done therein but in pursuance of former laws, at divers times enacted by the assembly, and with the advice of your majesty's privy-council, as well as the opinion and approbation of your attorney-general, upon perusal of the same.

4th. To the fourth objection it may be answered, that, if any thing had been found of moment or importance in the last parcel of laws transmitted by the Lord Vaughan, your majesty's tender care of your subjects welfare would have been such as not to have sent those bills imperfect, or defective in any necessary matter.

5th. As to the distance of the place, which renders (as they say) the present method of making laws altogether impracticable, your majesty having been pleased to regulate the same, by the advice of your privy-council, according to the usage of Ireland, such care was taken as that no law might be wanting which might conduce to the well-being of the plantation, and that nothing might be omitted which in all former governments had been thought necessary; nor is it likely that this colony is subject to greater accidents than your kingdom of Ireland, so as to

BOOK

II.



require a more frequent and sudden change of laws in other cases than such as are already provided for upon emergencies, or in other manner than is directed by your majesty's commission; whereby the inhabitants have free access to make complaints to your governor and council, of any defect in any old law, or to give reasons for any new one, which, being modelled by the governor and council into form of law, and transmitted unto your majesty, if by your majesty and council found reasonable, may be transmitted back thither to be enacted accordingly.

6th. It was sufficiently apparent unto your majesty, that laws must alter with the interest of the place, when you were graciously pleased to lodge such a power in that government, as might not only, from time to time, with your majesty's approbation, and by the advice both of your privy-council here and of the governor and council there, enable the assembly to enact new laws answerable to their growing necessities, but even, upon urgent occasions, to provide, by raising money, for the security of the island, without attending your majesty's orders or consent.

7th. It is not to be doubted but the assembly have endeavoured to grasp all power, as well as that of a deliberative voice, in making laws; but how far they have thereby intrenched upon your majesty's prerogative, and exceeded the bounds of their duty and loyalty, upon this pretence, may appear by their late exorbitant and unwarrantable proceedings during the government of the Lord Vaughan, in ordering and signing a warrant unto the marshal of the island, your majesty's officer of justice, for the stopping and preventing the execution of a sentence passed, according to the ordinary forms of law, upon a notorious pirate and disturber of your majesty's peace: and they have further taken upon them, by virtue of this deliberative power, to make laws contrary to those of England, and to imprison your majesty's subjects; nor have they forbore to raise money by public acts, and to dispose of the same according to their will and pleasure, without any mention made of your majesty, which has never in like case been practised in any of your majesty's kingdoms. How far, therefore, it is fit to intrust them with a power which they have thus abused, and to which they have no pretension of right, was the subject of your majesty's royal commission, when you were pleased to put a restraint upon those enormities, and to take the reins of government

government into your own hands, which they, in express words, against their duty and allegiance, have challenged and refused to part with. APPEN-
DIX.

8th. It cannot with any truth be supposed, that, by the present form of government, the governor is rendered absolute, since he is now, more than ever, become accountable unto your majesty of all his most important deliberations and actions, and is not warranted to do any thing but according to law and your majesty's commission and instructions, given by advice of your privy council.

9th. And whether your majesty's prerogative is prejudiced by the present constructions, is more the concernment of your majesty, and subject of your own care, than of their considerations.

Lastly, and in general, we humbly conceive, that it would be a great satisfaction to your subjects there inhabiting, and an invitation to strangers, when they shall know what laws they are to be governed by, and a great ease to the planters not to be continually obliged to attend the assemblies to re-enact old laws, which your majesty has now thought fit, in a proper form, to ascertain and establish; whereas the late power of making temporary laws could be understood to be of no longer continuance than until such wholesome laws, founded upon so many years experience, should be agreed on by the people, and finally enacted by your majesty, in such manner as hath been practised in either of your majesty's dominions to which your English subjects have transplanted themselves. For as they cannot pretend to further privileges than have been granted to them, either by charter or some solemn act under your great seal, so, having from the first beginning of that plantation been governed by such instructions as were given by your majesty unto your governors, according to the power your majesty had originally over them, and which you have by no one authentic act ever yet parted with, and having never had any other right to assemblies than from the permission of the governors, and that only temporary and for probation, it is to be wondered how they should presume to provoke your majesty, by pretending a right to that which hath been allowed them merely out of favour, and discourage your majesty from future favours of that kind, when what your majesty ordered for a temporary experiment, to see what form would best suit the safety and interest of the island, shall be construed to be a total resignation of the power inherent in your majesty,
and

BOOK

II.

and a devolution of it to themselves and their wills, without which neither law nor government, the essential ingredients of their subsistence and well-being, may take place among them.

Since, therefore, it is evident, that the assembly of Jamaica have, without any just grounds, and with so much animosity and undirfulness, proceeded to reject the marks of your majesty's favour towards them, and that your majesty's resolutions in this case are like to be the measure of respect and obedience to your royal commands in other colonies; we can only offer, as a cure for irregularities past and a remedy against all further inconveniencies, that your majesty would please to authorize and empower your governor to call another assembly, and to represent unto them the great convenience and expediency of accepting and consenting unto such laws as your majesty has under your great seal transmitted unto them; and that, in case of refusal, his lordship be furnished with such powers as were formerly given unto Col. D'Oyley, your first governor of Jamaica, and since unto other governors, whereby his lordship may be enabled to govern according to the laws of England, where the different nature and constitution of that colony may conveniently permit the same; and, in other cases to act, with the advice of the council, in such manner as shall be held necessary and proper for the good government of that plantation, until your majesty's further orders; and that, by all opportunities of conveyance, the governor do give your majesty a constant and particular account of all his proceedings, in pursuance of your instructions herein.

All which is most humbly submitted, &c.

Upon reading of which report, and full debate thereupon, his majesty was pleased to approve the same: and the Right honourable Mr. Secretary Coventry is hereby directed to prepare such suitable orders and instructions as may answer the several parts and advices contained in the said report.

Robert Southwell.

NUMBER XIII.

Extract of a letter from the Committee to the Earl of Carlisle.

AFTER our very hearty commendation unto your lordship, we have received two letters from you, the one of the 24th of October, the other of the 15th of November, 1678; both of which gave us an account of the distaste the assembly had expressed at the new frame of government, and of their throwing out all the bills transmitted under the great seal; and your lordship having therein recommended unto us the speedy dispatch of the bills sent to Mr. Secretary Coventry, for passing them through the offices here, we did thereupon take the same into our consideration: but finding that they contained such clauses as we had formerly (your lordship being present) disallowed in the laws enacted by the Lord Vaughan, as most prejudicial to his majesty's rights and prerogative, one of them appropriating and disposing of the quit-rents in the same terms as was formerly done, so much to his majesty's dissatisfaction; another, declaring the laws of England to be in force, which clause (your lordship cannot but remember) was postponed here, upon very serious deliberation; besides divers other particulars, altogether unfit to be passed by his majesty: we have, withal, perused the several letters which your lordship had written to Mr. Secretary Coventry, in relation to your government: and as for the laws, we could not advise his majesty to proceed in any other manner, than by giving power to call another assembly, and to offer unto them the same laws your lordship carried over, as being the most usefully framed and settled for the good of the island and his majesty's service: and that, in case of refusal, you might be enabled to govern according to commissions and instructions given unto former governors, as your lordship will more fully understand by our report unto his majesty, and the order of council thereupon, to which we refer your lordship, as setting forth at large the grounds and reasons inducing the resolutions his majesty has now taken.

APPENDIX.

NUMBER XIV.

Extract of a letter from the Earl of Carlisle to Mr. Secretary Coventry.

St. Jago de la Vega, 30th Aug. 1679.

BOOK

II.

YOUR packet by Captain Buckingham, having inclosed his majesty's letter of the 31st of May last, and an order in council of the 28th of May, 1679, together with the animadversions of the council upon several points of the 22d of May last, and two letters from yourself, I received the 26th inst. at night. The next morning I read them in council. The assembly then having sat some seven days, to renew the bill for a revenue, the last being just expiring, I sent for the general assembly, and read the order of council and the king's letter thereupon to them, which I hope will have some good effect; but they came in as good time so much contrary to their expectation. I herewith send you a copy of their address thereupon, which they presented to me the 28th; and finding them nettled and warm, I thought it discretion to let them take time to digest their thoughts; and, having continued the revenue bill for six months longer from the 1st of September next, I passed it, and then prorogued them till the 28th of October following.

NUMBER XV.

Copy of a vote of the Assembly, Aug. 22, 1679.

DIE VENERIS.

THE committee appointed to examine Mr. Martyn's accounts reported, that Mr. Martyn, appearing before them, said, that my lord had ordered him to come and tell them, that, both from the king and from my lord, he was not obliged to shew his accounts to the assembly; but that he had given them unto my lord, and his excellency had told him, that,

that, if any of the assembly had a mind to see them, they might see them there. APPENDIX.

The house, considering the return of the committee ordered to inspect Mr. Martyn's accounts, re-assumed that debate, and thereupon did vote, that, notwithstanding my lord's answer by Mr. Martyn to that committee, it was and is their undoubted and inherent right, that as all bills for money ought and do arise in their house, so they ought to appoint the disposal of it, and to receive and examine all the accounts concerning the same.

Vera Copia.

ROWLAND POWELL.

NUMBER XVI.

Extract of a letter from the Earl of Carlisle to the Committee.

St. Jago de la Vega, 15th Sept. 1679.

My Lords,

YOUR lordships letters of the 25th of March, 4th of April, and 31st of May last, I received on the 26th of August, as also your lordships orders and reports to his majesty, touching the laws and government of Jamaica; which I communicated to the council (the assembly then sitting to continue the revenue bill, expiring the 2d of September) on the 27th of August; and afterwards, the same day, I communicated, the council being present, his majesty's letter of the 31st of May last, and your lordships order and report of the same date, to the assembly; which came to me as seasonably as they received them surprisedly, making me the next morning the inclosed address; upon which, having passed a bill of impost for six months, I prorogued them, by advice of the council, till the 28th of October next, hoping in that time they would fall of their heat, and, upon recollection, better bethink themselves of their duties and allegiance, and upon my offering them again the laws, which I propose to do upon their first meeting, better demonstrate their obedience by readily giving their consent that they might be enacted.

BOOK

II.



But, from what I can learn from the chief leaders among them, I find the same averfeness as formerly, averring that they will submit to wear, but never consent to make, chains, as they term this frame of government, for their posterities; so that I scarce expect better success; of which I have writ at large to Mr. Secretary Coventry.

NUMBER XVII.

Extract of a letter from the Earl of Carlisle to Mr. Secretary Coventry.

St. Jago de la Vega, 23d November, 1679.

Sir,

THE assembly meeting on the 28th of October, I, with the council, went to them; commanded the council's report of the 28th of May, and his majesty's letter of the 31st of May last, to be read again to them; pressed them very much to consider how much it imported at this juncture for the interest of the island, that they should pass these laws I brought to them under the great seal of England, or at least part of them; desiring that any one or more of the assembly would there and then argue the reasonableness of their objection, which none of them would undertake; and so I left the body of laws with them. They having the last session passed a vote, that the raising money and disposing of it, was the inherent right of the assembly (of which I had no account, either from the members or their speaker, in fourteen days afterwards, they presuming it to be their privilege that their proceedings should be kept secret from me) I then appointed and swore them a clerk, which before used to be of their own choice; and this they are very uneasy under.

They proceeded to read over the body of laws: notwithstanding the great care, pains, and trouble I had taken with them, both apart individually as well as assembled together, they threw out and rejected all the laws, again adhering to their former reasons, rather than admitting or honouring those from their lordships for rules of obedience.

I thereupon presently, with the council, framed a bill of revenue indefinite,

finite, and sent that to them: but that had no better success; and they then attended me with the address, to be presented to his majesty, which I herewith send you; as also the humble desire of justification of his majesty's council thereupon, which I and they earnestly desire your favour in humbly presenting to his majesty, being unanimously agreed to by all the council: but Col. Samuel Long (chief-justice of the island, whom I have found all along since my arrival here to be a most pertinacious abettor and cherisher of the assembly's stubbornness in opposing this new frame of government, having had a hand, being their speaker, in the leaving the king's name out of the revenue bill) refuses to join with the council in this their genuine act, and has sufficiently possessed himself of the opinion of the assembly, by advising and assisting them in the framing of their address: thinking their resolutions to be unalterable as his own, he is withdrawn to his plantation, some thirty miles off from this town, where at this juncture we have most need of council.

Upon serious and deliberate consideration of all which, I have sent him his *quietus*; and appointed Col. Robert Byndlofs chief justice in his place, of whose fidelity to the king's interest I have many proofs, having formerly executed the place, and was now one of the judges of the supreme court.

I have also suspended Col. Long from being one of the council, purposing, by the advice of the council, to bring or send him, with six more of the assembly, to attend the king and council in England to support their own opinions, reasons, and address, wherein they are not ordinarily positive; and this I do from the council here unanimously agreeing, that there is no other nor better expedient for the settlement of this government to a general consent.

NUMBER XVIII.

Extract of a letter from the Earl of Carlisle to the Committee.

St. Jago de la Vega, 23d Nov. 1679.

My Lords,

MINE of the tenth of September last to your lordships I hope you have received; and what I therein sent your lordships, as my conjecture

BOOK
II.

in prospect, since the general assembly's meeting, on the 28th of October last, have found to be no vain prophecy.

Upon the assembly's meeting on that day, I, with the council, went to the place where they were met, and again, in the presence of the council and the assembly, commanded to be read your lordships report of the 28th of May last past made to his majesty; as also his majesty's commands to myself of the 31st of the same; and thereupon offered to the assembly the body of laws brought over under the great seal of England for their consent; at the same time declaring to them the great expediency it would be to all the officers of the island, and reason to persuade his majesty they were another people than represented at home; that it would induce the king to gratify them in what was necessary; and that, otherwise, they could not appear but in great contempt, to the lessening of the island's interest in his royal favour: and what I urged in general to them at their meeting, I had not been wanting to press to them apart individually before it: then swore them a clerk of my appointing, which they took not well, alledging it was their right to choose their own clerk. I told them no; for that the king did grant by patent the clerk of the parliament, so that they were uneasily over-ruled. The reason of my doing this was from their having an opinion that the votes of the house should be kept a secret from me, and their passing a vote the former sessions, that to raise money, and dispose of the same, was a right inherent in the assembly, of which I had no notice, in some fourteen days after, from any of them or their speaker.

I much urged the whole assembly freely to argue, in the presence of the council and their own members, for the reasonableness of the matter commanded by the king, that, upon their discoursing it openly and freely, they might be the better convinced of the necessity of their being dutiful therein: but none of them, in my presence and the council's, would undertake it; so we left them, and the body of laws with them.

Some days they spent in reading over again the body of laws under the great seal left with them; but rejected the many arguments I had laboured them with, and threw all the laws out again: whereupon they appointed a committee to draw up an address, to be presented by me to his majesty on their behalfs: and in that time, with the council, I drew a bill of revenue indefinitely, and gave it myself to their speaker; but that bill had no better success, but was rejected also.

Upon this, on the 14th instant, the speaker and assembly being sent for to attend me in council, to shew cause why they did reject the bill of revenue so framed by us in pursuance of his majesty's pleasure therein, they gave me no answer; but, by their speaker, desired to present to me their address, the speaker contending to give it its due accent by reading it himself; a copy whereof is here sent inclosed.

This address is founded greatly upon the advice of Lieutenant-Colonel Samuel Long, chief-justice of the island, and one of the king's council, who principally contends for the old frame of government, of whom the assembly is highly opiniated, and esteem him the patron of their rights and privileges as Englishmen, who had a hand in leaving the king's name out of the revenue bill, being then speaker, and denies not his having a hand in framing and advising some parts of the address, which in whole is not truth; for,

1st. Whereas they alledge, that the civil government commenced in my Lord Windfor's time; it is generally known and recorded in our council-book, fifteen months before, in Colonel D'Oyley's time, and will be proved by Sir Thomas Lynch, who then himself had an occasion of a trial by jury, the foreman of which was Colonel Byndlofs.

2dly. They alledge the readiness of governors to use martial law, particularly in Sir Thomas Lynch's time; which is here contradicted, for there was only an order in council for the putting it in force upon condition of any actual descent or invasion, and not otherwise; neither was it on foot really all this time here, as I am credibly informed upon good enquiry.

3dly. As for its being in force in my time, it was not from my affecting, but the council advising and their desiring it; as also the putting off the Courts till February, in favour generally of the planters. Then, for their alledging so much to be done during the martial-law, wholly at the charge of the country; that it is done is true, but the charge thereof they would clog the revenue bill with, amounting to twelve hundred and twenty-eight pounds, when, *communibus annis*, the bill of impost is but fifteen hundred pounds; of which twelve hundred and twenty-eight pounds there is not yet made payment of one farthing, nor any prospect how it may, since the revenue is so much anticipated from the want of money in the treasury, occasioned by my Lord Vaughan's letting fall the bill of revenue before his departure.

NUMBER XIX.

BOOK

II.

To his Excellency Charles Earl of Carlisle, captain-general, governor, and commander in chief of his majesty's island of Jamaica, &c.

The humble address of the assembly of this his majesty's island, in answer to the report of the right honourable the lords of the committee of trade and plantations, made to his majesty's council; which we entreat his excellency may be humbly presented to his most sacred majesty and his council.

WE, his Majesty's most loyal and obedient subjects, the assembly of this his island of Jamaica, cannot without infinite grief of mind read the report made to his majesty by the right honourable the lords of the committee for trade and plantations; wherein, by the relations made by their lordships unto his majesty, they have represented us as a people full of animosity, unreasonable, irregular, violent, undutiful, and transgressing both the bounds of duty and loyalty; the bitterness of which characters were we in the least part conscious to have deserved, we should, like Job, have said, "*Behold, we are vile: what shall we answer? we will lay our hands upon our mouths.*"

But, lest our silence should argue our guilt, we shall, in all humility, endeavour to make appear we have always demeaned ourselves as becometh good and obedient subjects, and those who acknowledge and are truly sensible of the many favours received from his majesty; the truth of which resting only on matter of fact being related, and the false colours which hitherto have been thrown on us being washed off, we shall not doubt but his majesty will soon entertain a better opinion of his subjects of this island.

We must, therefore, humbly beg that his majesty will with patience be pleased to hear the account of our proceedings; which truly to manifest we must be forced to look back so far as Sir Charles Lyttleton's and Sir Thomas Modyford's entrance upon their government:

At

At which time, we humbly conceive, the island began really to take up the form of a civil government, and wholly to lay aside that of an army, which, until that time, was deemed the supreme authority; when after, upon their several arrivals, by order from his majesty, and according to the method of his majesty's most ancient plantations, they called assemblies, and settled the government of the island in such good form, that, until his excellency the Earl of Carlisle's first arrival, his majesty thought not fit to alter it, though several governors in that time were changed, which must necessarily infer the goodness and reason of it, as well as the satisfaction of the people (since, from that time, they betook themselves to settle plantations) especially the merchants, by which means the estates here are wonderfully increased, as is evident by the great number of ships loaden here by the industry of the planter; and the satisfaction they received by those wholesome laws then began, and until that time continued, the change of which laws we had no reason to expect, being done on such mature deliberation from home.

But to return to answer: the first thing their lordships are pleased to accuse us of is, presuming to question his majesty's power over the militia; which, how much they are misinformed in it, will hereunder appear: but we must first repeat the clause against which, we humbly conceive, we had just reasons to take exceptions, which clause is as followeth:

“ Provided always, and it is hereby further enacted and declared by the authority aforesaid, that nothing in this act contained be expounded, construed, or understood, to diminish, alter, or abridge, the power of the governor or commander in chief for the time being; but that in all things he may, upon all occasions or exigencies, act as captain-general and governor in chief, according to and in pursuance of all the powers and authorities given to him by his majesty's commission; any thing in this act or any other to the contrary in anywise notwithstanding.”

In their lordships observations, in which they take no notice that the power given by that clause extends as well to the governor as captain-general, nor of the words “ any thing in this act or any other to the contrary notwithstanding,” which words, being plain, need no references

BOOK

II.

to expound them, being consented to, there is no occasion of making any other law, because that makes all the powers and authorities given by his majesty's commission, and, by that commission, the instructions which shall be after given to him, shall be law, though it be to the nulling of any beneficial law, made either here or in England, by which we are secured both in life and in estate; the like of which was never done in any of his majesty's dominions whatsoever, and is in effect to enact will to be law, and will be construed (we fear) to bind us by the old rule of law, that every man may renounce his own right: and if their lordships had been pleased to have as well remembered the other clauses of the act of the militia, we cannot think they would have said we had questioned his majesty's power over it, for no act of England gives his majesty the like power over the militia as ours doth; for, on any apprehension of danger, the general with his council of officers have power to put the law martial on foot for what time they please, and to command us in our own persons, our servants, negroes, horses, even all that we have, to his majesty's service; which having been so often put in practice will need the less proof: but how readily and willingly we have obeyed, and in that faith is best justified by works, it will not be amiss to instance some times, and what hath been done in those times, by the charge and labour of his majesty's subjects here, under the several governors; none of which have left unexperimented the strength of his majesty's commission, and the virtue or force of that act, upon the least seeming occasion.

In the government of Sir Thomas Modyford, in the years 1665 and 1666, the whole island was put under law martial for many months together; in which time, by the inhabitants and their blacks, Fort-Charles was made close, which to that time wanted a whole line, and also the breast-work at Port-Royal was built, with a very small charge to his majesty.

In the time of Sir Thomas Lynch, in the year 1673, the law martial was again set on foot; Fort-James built by the contributions of the gentlemen of his majesty's council and assembly, and several other of his majesty's good subjects in this island, which amounted to a very considerable sum of money; a breast-work thrown up at Old-Harbour and several

several other places; and guns mounted on a platform placed at Port-Morant. APPEN-
DIX.

In Lord Vaughan's time, though there was no probability of war, yet he wanted not the trial of his power also in the militia, and our obedience to it; for he commanded out a company of the inhabitants in search of a Spanish *barqua longa*, who was said to have robbed a sloop belonging to this island upon the coast of Cuba: he, likewise, in favour of the royal company, commanded out to sea two vessels, with a company of the militia and their captain, from Port-Royal, to seize an interloper riding in one of his majesty's harbours, and there by force seized her.

In the time of Sir Henry Morgan being commander in chief, we were again put under martial law; in which time Fort-Rupert, Fort-Carlisle, and a new line at Fort-James, were built.

Lastly, in his excellency the Earl of Carlisle's time (the present governor) the law martial was again put in force for about three months; in which time Fort-Morgan with its platform, and another line at Fort-James, and the breast-work reinforced very considerably in thickness and height, and new carriages were made for the guns, those that came out of England not being fit for land service; all which fortifications are substantially built with stone and brick, at the charge and labour of the country.

Neither have we ever been wanting in due respect to his majesty's governors; the militia having always waited on them to church, in their progresses, and on all public occasions: and we may safely affirm with truth, that no militia in his majesty's dominions undergo the like military duty as his subjects in Jamaica; as is evident to all men that ever set foot in Port-Royal, which cannot be distinguished from a garrison, either in time of peace or war, but by their not being paid for their service.

To answer their lordships objections to the bill of revenue, wherein his majesty's name was left out, there are several members of this assembly now sitting who were members when that bill passed three times in form in the assembly; and, upon the best recollection of their memories, they are fully persuaded and do believe the bill was again sent down

BOOK

II.

with that amendment from the governor and council, according as it passed at the last: but, should it have risen in the assembly, they are very unfortunate if they must bear the censure of all mistakes that may happen in presenting laws to be passed, when both the governor and his council have their negative voices, which, had either of them made use of in this point, would have been readily consented to by the assembly, as they had formerly done, both under the government of Sir Thomas Modyford and Sir Thomas Lynch, before whose time it had been raised without mentioning his majesty's name, and that without check; and we always concluded the governor's name in the enacting part to be of the same effect as his majesty's is in England, whom, in this particular, he seems rather to personate than represent: for which reasons we hope, it ought not to have been imputed to the assembly as their crime altogether, being consented unto by his majesty's governor, without any debate, and all applied by the act whereby it was raised, to the very same public use his majesty directs; and we are certain no instance can be given of any money disposed of to any private use, but was always issued by the governor's warrant, for the payment of his own and other his general officers salaries in this island, with some small contingent charges of the government.

Their lordships also affirm, that the assembly offered this bill, in the same measure and proportion as it is now proposed, to Sir Thomas Lynch: in which their lordships are misinformed; for his majesty's instructions were, that the laws should be in force for two years and no longer, which their lordships also acknowledge in the prior part of the report; so that the assembly needed not to have expressed any time, and the particular uses therein appointed.

But had their lordships known how great sums of money have been raised here, and how small a part hath been applied to his majesty's service for the defence and strengthening the island, we humbly conceive their lordships would have been of opinion, that we have no reason to bar ourselves to perpetuity, and pass the said act without limitation of uses or time; nor can we be so presumptuous as to imagine the king can be hindered from making such use of his own money as he shall think fit, and apply it where he finds most necessary.



It is very true the laws contain many and great errors, as their lordships may see by the assembly's journal; so that were the assembly as much petitioners to his majesty for this new form as they are to be restored to their old, above half the body of these laws, without amendment, would never be reasonable to pass.

As, to instance some few amongst many: in the act for preventing damages by fire, a single justice of the peace hath power of life and death; and the act of the militia empowers the governor and council to levy a tax on the whole island; and in the act directing the marshal's proceedings, there is a clause that makes it felony for any person to conceal his own goods, left in his own possession, after execution levied by that law, so that a man may be hanged for being poor, which, though inconvenient, was never till then accounted capital; with others too long to be repeated.

And whereas their lordships are pleased to say, that there is nothing imperfect or defective in these bills transmitted hither; yet we humbly conceive, that no notice being taken in this body of laws how or in what nature we are to make use of the laws of England, either as they have reference to the preservation of his majesty's prerogative or the subjects rights, we ought not in reason to consent to these bills; for, nothing appearing to the contrary, the governor is left, *ad libitum*, to use or refuse as few or as many as he pleases, and such as suit with his occasions; there being no directions in them how to proceed according to the laws of England, either in causes criminal or testamentary, and in many other cases which concern the quiet of the subject, both in life and estate.

We conceive also, that, whatsoever is said to the contrary by their lordships in answer to the distance of places, this very last experiment is sufficiently convincing of the truth of that allegation; since it is a year since this model came over and was debated, and before their lordships report came back, notwithstanding one of the advices went home by an express. And,

Whereas their lordships say, we cannot be subject to more accidents than his majesty's kingdom of Ireland; to that we object, that advice and answers thence may be had in ten or fourteen days, and that kingdom is already settled, our plantation but beginning. But further,

BOOK

II.

we cannot imagine that Irish model of government was, *in principio*, ever intended for Englishmen: besides, their lordships cannot but know, that that model was introduced amongst them by a law made by themselves in Ireland, and so consequently bound them, which, being now generally known to all those who remove thither, they have no cause to repine at, that being their choice to live under it or stay from it, and was made for the preservation of the English against the Irish faction. As there is not the same cause, so there is not the same reason, for imposing the same on us, unless we did it ourselves, who are all his majesty's natural-born subjects of his kingdom of England; which is the reason the parliament give, in all their acts concerning the plantations, for obliging us by them to what, and with whom, and in what manner, we may trade, and impose a tax on us here in case of trade from one colony to another; and it is but equity then, that the same law should have the same power of loosing as binding.

His majesty giving a power, on urgent occasions, to raise monies the old way, only secures the king's officers their salaries, which else they had been disappointed of; the act of the militia which was heretofore consented to, ever providing, that, on alarm or invasion, the commander in chief should have unlimited power over all persons, estates, and things, necessary on such urgencies.

As to the 7th, the assembly say, they never desired any power but what his majesty's governors assured them was their birth-rights, and what they supposed his majesty's most gracious proclamation allowed them: also his majesty was graciously pleased to write a letter to his governor Sir Thomas Lynch, after the double trial of one Peter Johnson, a pirate, signifying his dislike that any thing should be done that should cause any doubt in his subjects, in not enjoying all the privileges of subjects of the kingdom of England, or to that effect.

But as to the obstructing of justice against Brown, the pirate, what they did, though not justifiable in the manner, was out of an assurance, that we had no law in force then to declare my lord chancellor of England's power, and our chancellor's here equal, in granting commissions, in pursuance of the statute of Henry the eighth; which also his majesty and council perceiving, have, in the new body of laws, sent one to supply
that

that want: and if they, not meddling with the merits of the cause, endeavoured to preserve the form of justice, and justice itself, and, after denial of several petitions, joined with the council, were led beyond their duty (for which they were sharply reprimanded by the then governor) they do hope for and humbly beg his majesty's pardon.

And as for the act upon which he came in, it arose not in the assembly, but was sent from the council, to be consented to by them, which was accordingly done.

And as to the imprisonment of Mr. Thomas Martyn, one of their members, for taking out process in chancery in his own private concern against several other members, and of the council, the assembly then sitting, and for other misdemeanors and breach of the rules of the house; they hope it is justifiable, the king's governor having assured them, that they had the same power over their members which the house of commons have, and all speakers here praying, and the governors granting, the usual petitions of speakers in England.

Seeing the governor hath power to turn out a counsellor, and turning out incapacitates him from being an assembly-man, no counsellor dares give his opinion against the governor, under danger of less penalty than losing that which he thinks his birth-right: also, a governor being chancellor, ordinary, and admiral, joined with his military authority, lodges so great a power in him, that being united and executed in one person to turn it *totum in qualibet parte*, so that he may invalidate any thing done under his own commission.

There is no doubt but, by this new way, it is in the assembly's power to consent to and perpetuate such laws as are wholly of benefit to them, and leave unpassed all that may be thought most necessary for his majesty; which advantage they not laying hold on, hope it will be an evidence they are careful of his majesty's prerogative, as it is the duty of every good subject to be.

It is without controversy that the old form of government, which was ordered so like his majesty's kingdom of England, must of consequence be of greater encouragement to all his majesty's subjects, as well as strangers, to remove themselves hither. Upon his majesty's proclamation in my Lord Windſor's time, and by those gracious instructions given:

BOOK
II.

given to Sir Thomas Modyford, all or most part of the sugar plantations have been settled; and the major part of the said planters being such who arrived here and settled upon the general liking of the model first constituted, and in belief that they lost not any of the privileges of his majesty's subjects of the kingdom of England by their removal hither, and having by no act, as we believe, either provoked his majesty or forfeited our rights, or ever desiring or attempting to lessen or question his majesty's prerogative, the preservation whereof we ever deemed the best means of preserving our own privileges and estates, we shall presume to hope for the continuance of his majesty's favour, which is impossible for us ever to forget.

And whereas their lordships are pleased to offer their advice to his majesty, to furnish his governor with such powers as were formerly given to Colonel D'Oyley and others, in whose time the then accounted army was not disbanded, but so continued till Lord Windsor's arrival, who brought over the king's royal donative, and order to settle the civil government: we hope their lordships intend not that we are to be governed by or as an army, or that the governor be empowered to levy any tax by himself and council; since his majesty having discharged himself and council, by an act of parliament, of any such power over any of his majesty's subjects of his kingdom of England, as we undoubtedly are, it will be very hard to have any imposition laid on us but by our own consents; for their lordships well know, that no derived power is greater than the primitive.

However, if his most gracious majesty shall not think fit to alter this model, but we are to be governed by the governor and council, according to their lordship's advice, yet we humbly beseech his majesty to do us the grace to believe, that we are so sensible of our duty and allegiance, that our submission to and comportment under his majesty's authority shall be such as that, we hope, he, in his due time, will be graciously pleased to restore unto us our ancient form of government, under which it hath hitherto pleased God to prosper us: ending with our hearty prayers for his majesty's long and happy reign over us, and most humbly begging his majesty's pardon of all our errors and mistakes, and a gracious interpretation of this our answer; protesting, from the bottom of

our hearts, that we are and resolve to die his majesty's true, loyal, and APPEN-
obedient subjects. DIX.

A true copy.

ROWLAND POWELL, *Cl. Conc.*

NUMBER XX.

*The humble desire and justification of the members of his majesty's
council, to his Excellency the Governor in Jamaica.*

THE alterations of the frame of government in this his majesty's island of Jamaica unto that of his kingdom of Ireland, which his majesty, the best and greatest of kings, hath graciously commanded us to submit unto and own, we his majesty's truly loyal and dutiful subjects, hitherto have and yet do, by a willing readiness, and ready willingness, declare our entire obedience and hearty conformity thereunto, because his majesty commands.

And although his majesty's great perspicuity and truly royal prudence is best able to determine what government is the fittest for his subjects in this island, yet with all due submission, in all humility, we beg leave to represent to his majesty the great inconvenience attending the present frame, in transmitting our laws home.

The vast distance of place will of necessity require a great expence of time, between the first framing our laws here and the transmitting and return of them hither again; so that, before they can be passed into laws by the assembly here, there will probably as great cause arise to alter as there were at first to make them.

And, with all due submission, we judge it even impossible to adapt laws to the present constitution, so as not to admit of often and great alterations; for, according to our experience hitherto, we have found urgent occasions to alter and amend the laws, that have more immediately concerned us here, at the least every two years; and we cannot foresee but we shall lie under the same necessity still; so that if his
majesty

BOOK

II.



majesty graciously please to take it into his princely consideration, and either restore to us our former power and way or method of passing laws, or at least remit that part of the present method of making laws which only concerns us here, as they may pass without transfixing the same, we hope, by our present submission and entire obedience to all his laws here, his majesty will be a glorious prince and his subjects here an happy people.

And whereas the gentlemen of the assembly, in their address to his majesty read here in council the 15th of November, 1679, do declare, that as to the bill of revenue wherein his majesty's name was left out, that there are several of the members of their assembly now sitting who were members when the bill passed three times in form in the assembly, and, upon the best recollection of their memories, they are fully persuaded and do believe the bill was again sent down with that amendment from the governor and council, according as it passed at the last: we, the gentlemen of his majesty's council here present at the passing of the bill, do most humbly and with all seriousness aver and declare, that we were so far from consenting the said bill should pass without his majesty's name in it, that we do not remember it was ever debated or mentioned in council; and further, that, to the best of our respective knowledge, it was read three times, and passed the council-board, with his majesty's name in it: and we are the rather induced to this our confidence, because we find the original act was razed, and, by the then speaker's own hand, interlined; and moreover, the several amendments of the said bill, that were made in council, were all taken notice of in the minutes in our council-books, and no mention made of this; and the gentlemen of the assembly do produce nothing out of their journal to justify the reflections upon us; therefore it is to be presumed they cannot.

And we do further humbly and unanimously declare, we never did at any time, either jointly or severally, make any complaint to the assembly, or any of them, of the power given by his majesty to his excellency our present governor to suspend any of his majesty's council here; for as we have hitherto yielded all due obedience and submission to his majesty's royal will and pleasure concerning us, so we hope we shall approve ourselves such, and, as in duty bound, ever pray for his majesty's

jeſſy's long life, and that he may proſperouſly and triumphantly reign over us.

APPEN-
DIX.

This was unaniſouſly agreed to in council by the reſpective members thereof who were preſent at the paſſing the bill of revenue: Colonel Thomas Ballard, Colonel John Cope, Colonel Robert Byndlofs, Colonel Thomas Freeman, Colonel William Joy, Colonel Thomas Fuller, John White, Eſquire;

And conſented to by the whole council, excepting Lieutenant-Colonel Samuel Long.

Received from the Earl of Carlifle, 26th February, 1679-80.

N U M B E R X X I.

Extrait of an order in council.

JAMAICA.

At the committee of trade and plantations, in the council-chamber at Whitehall, the 5th of March, 1679-80,

P R E S E N T,

Prince Rupert,	Marquis of Worceſter,	Mr. Hyde,
Lord Preſident,	Earl of Bridgewater	Mr Secretary Coventry,
Lord Privy-Seal,	Earl of Eſſex,	Sir Leolin Jenkins.

A LETTER from the Earl of Carlifle to the committee, dated 23d of November laſt, is read, wherein his lordſhip acquaints the committee, that, having called the council and aſſembly together, he had cauſed their lordſhips report of the 28th of May to be publickly read; which their lordſhips think to be diſagreeable to the directions of the

report, which was only presented to his majesty for his information, and in order to furnish the Earl of Carlisle, when occasion should serve, with such arguments as might be fit to be used in justification of his majesty's commission and instructions; and their lordships particularly take notice, that it was neither necessary nor convenient for him to expose his instructions to the assembly: and as to the clerk of the assembly, which his lordship had appointed, the committee does very much approve his lordship's proceedings therein, and will desire him to continue the same method for the future.

And whereas Colonel Long is represented to have a hand in leaving out the king's name in the late bill of revenue, and in framing and advising the address of the assembly now transmitted to his majesty; their lordships will report, that the Earl of Carlisle may be ordered to send him to England, to answer what is laid to his charge.

The address of the assembly of Jamaica to his majesty, in answer to a report of the committee approved on the 28th of May last, being read, their lordships observe, that there are many falsities and mistakes contained therein.

First, it is alledged by the assembly, that the island took up the form of government in the time of Sir Thomas Mouyford and Charles Lyttelton; whereas it is certain, that Colonel D'Oyley had commission, soon after his majesty's restoration, to govern by the civil power.

As to their denial of having left out his majesty's name in the revenue bill, it is evident, by the justification of the council, and assurance of the Lord Vaughan, that the bill passed the governor and council with his majesty's name, which was afterwards left out, or erased, as may be supposed by the interlineation that yet appears upon the original bill.

And whereas it is said, that their lordships are misinformed, in affirming that the assembly had before offered the bill of revenue in the same measure and proportion as is now proposed, since the laws were to be in force for two years, and no longer: the assembly have quite forgotten, or pretended to be ignorant of, the powers settled by his majesty's commission to Sir Thomas Lynch, whereby the laws were to be in force for two years, and no longer, unless confirmed by his majesty within that time;

time; so that the bill transmitted by Sir Thomas Lynch wanted only his majesty's approbation to render it perpetual.

The assembly further mentions the great sums raised in Jamaica, which had not been employed to his majesty's service; but does not instance the misapplication of any part of the revenue by any of the governors.

It is also to be observed, that the law for preventing damages by fire, of which they complain, was first made by them; as also the act directing the marshal's proceedings cannot be but very reasonable, and for the advantage of the planters, since it gives them the use of their goods after execution, and enables them the better to pay their debts.

And whereas the assembly complains, that there is no law transmitted to them for ascertaining the laws of England; it is thought reasonable, that his majesty should retain within himself the power of appointing the laws of England to be in full force in that island, as he shall find necessary.

The delays and length of time, alledged by them in reference to the model prescribed by his majesty, were wholly occasioned by the refractoriness of the assembly, and not by the distance of places, or other reason.

Their objection concerning Ireland, in reference to Jamaica, is frivolous, since the English there have right to the same privileges as those of Jamaica, and are bound up by acts of parliament in England, as well as the inhabitants of Jamaica.

To their 7th objection it is replied, that nothing has been done to take away their enjoyment of all the privileges of English subjects, since they are governed by the laws and statutes of this realm.

Their unwarrantable proceedings in obstructing of justice against Brown the pirate is confessed, and his majesty's pardon prayed by them.

Their lordships think the imprisonment of Martyn, and the articles preferred against him, altogether unjustifiable, not only as he was his majesty's collector, but as the assembly ought not, by the pretensions of privilege, to shelter themselves from justice, there being no such usage in Barbadoes and other plantations.

In the 9th place, it is altogether erroneous in the assembly to think it is, by the present model, in their own power, to accept such laws as are

BOOK

II.

wholly of benefit to themselves, and to reject such as are most necessary for his majesty; since the governor yet retains a negative voice, after the consent of the assembly.

And whereas they very much insist upon his majesty's proclamation in my Lord Windfor's time: his majesty has not in any instance withdrawn the effects of his promise to them, nor imposed several rules and instructions that were prescribed in Sir Thomas Modyford's commission and instructions, whereby he had power, with the advice of the council, to raise money on strong liquors: and the assembly can as little believe they have not provoked his majesty to keep a strict eye upon them, after their several unwarrantable proceedings during the government of the Lord Vaughan, and since of the Earl of Carlisle, by their votes and otherwise.

In the last place, it is falsely insinuated by the assembly, that the government remained under an army in Colonel D'Oyley's time; since it appears plainly by his commission, that it was otherwise provided, and that the martial law was then laid aside: so that, upon the whole matter, they have reason to beg his majesty's pardon for all their errors and mistakes.

The justification of the council of Jamaica, in answer to the imputation of the assembly, of their leaving out the king's name in the revenue bill, is also read; and to be made use of by the governor, to disprove the allegations of the assembly in their own behalf.

N U M B E R XXIII.

Extract of an order in council.

JAMAICA.

At the committee of trade and plantations, in the council-chamber at Whitehall, Monday the 8th of March, 1679-80,

P R E S E N T,

Lord Privy Seal, Earl of Bridgewater, Sir Leolin Jenkins.

THE Lord Vaughan attends, concerning the charge against Colonel Long, of Jamaica, for razing out the king's name in the act of revenue; and declares, that he is very content that the bill came up from the assembly to the council with the king's name in it, and that it was not put out by the council, nor by his privy; and that when Mr. Martyn came to Jamaica with the king's patent to be collector, his lordship then sent for the act, and perceived the interlineation to be in Colonel Long's hand; and that his lordship does absolutely agree with the council of Jamaica, in the matter of their justification.

BOOK
II.

NUMBER XXIV.

Extract of an order in council.

JAMAICA.

At the committee of trade and plantations, in the council-chamber at Whitehall, Thursday the 11th of March, 1679-80,

PRESENT,

Lord President,
Lord Privy-Seal,

Marquis of Worcester,
Earl of Bridgewater,

Sir Leolin Jenkins.

THEIR lordships take into consideration the state of the government in Jamaica, and agree to refer the queries following to Mr. Attorney and Mr. Solicitor General, for their opinions therein; *viz.*

1st. Whether, from the past and present state of Jamaica, his majesty's subjects inhabiting and trading there have a right to the laws of England, as Englishmen, or by virtue of the king's proclamation, or otherwise?

2d. Whether his majesty's subjects of Jamaica, claiming to be governed by the laws of England, are not bound as well by such laws as are beneficial to the king, by appointing taxes and subsidies for the support of the government, as by other laws, which tend only to the benefit and ease of the subject?

3d. Whether the subsidies of tonnage and poundage upon goods that may by law, or shall be directly carried to Jamaica, be not payable, according to law, by his majesty's subjects inhabiting that island, or trading there, by virtue of the acts of tonnage and poundage, or other acts made in England?

4th. Whether wine or other goods, once brought into England and transported from thence, upon which the respective abatements are allowed upon exportation, according to law, the same being afterwards carried

ried to Jamaica and landed there, shall not be liable to the payment of the full duty of tonnage and poundage which it should have paid if consumed in England, deducting only such part of the said duty as shall not be repaid in England upon exportation of the said goods from thence?

APPEN-
DIX.

Which queries were accordingly transmitted to Mr. Attorney and Mr. Solicitor General, with a paper containing the past and present state of Jamaica, in relation to the government.

N U M B E R XXV.

Letter to Mr. Attorney and Mr. Solicitor General.

Council-chamber, 11th March, 1679-80.

Gentlemen,

THE right honourable the lords of the committee for trade and plantations, upon consideration of the affairs of Jamaica, have stated the questions following; *viz.*

[Here were recited the queries stated in the preceding number.]

To which questions their lordships desire your answer in writing, with all convenient speed: and, for your information, I have inclosed *a paper, containing a short account of the past and present state of the government in Jamaica*; and in case you should require any further satisfaction therein, or touching the queries referred unto you, I am ordered by the lords of the committee to attend you at any time or place you shall think fit to appoint.

I am, with all respect, gentlemen, &c.

BOOK

II.

NUMBER XXVI.

Extract of an order in council.

JAMAICA.

At the committee of trade and plantations, in the council-chamber at Whitehall, the 27th of April, 1680,

P R E S E N T,

Prince Rupert,	Earl of Essex,	Mr. Hyde,
Lord President,	Viscount Fauconberg,	Mr. Secretary Jenkins.
Earl of Sunderland,		

MR. Attorney and Mr. Solicitor General having likewise acquainted the committee, that, upon consideration of the four questions concerning Jamaica, referred unto them the 11th of March, they did find them of such difficulty and moment as to deserve the opinion of the judges: it is agreed that they be accordingly referred unto the judges; upon whom Mr. Attorney and Mr. Solicitor General are desired to attend with them; Mr. Attorney having first delivered his opinion, "that the people
" of Jamaica have no right to be governed by the laws of England, but
" by such laws as are made there, and established by his majesty's authority." But whereas Mr. Solicitor General doth deliver his opinion, that the word "dominion," in the act of parliament for tonnage and poundage, may seem rather to imply the dominion of Wales and Berwick upon Tweed only, than to extend to the plantations; and more especially, as Mr. Attorney alledges, since the islands of Guernsey and Jersey are not concerned in that act; their lordships order the two first questions only to be sent unto the judges, without any mention to be made of the two last, which particularize the act of tonnage and poundage.

N U M B E R XXVII.

APPENDIX.
DIX.*References to the judges about Jamaica.**Council-chamber, 27th April, 1680.*

Gentlemen,

I AM commanded by the right honourable the lords of the privy-council appointed a committee of trade and foreign plantations, to signify their desires that you attend his majesty's judges with the questions following:

1st. Whether from the past and present state of Jamaica, his majesty's subjects inhabiting and trading there have a right to the laws of England, as Englishmen, or by virtue of the king's proclamation, or otherwise?

2d. Whether his majesty's subjects of Jamaica, claiming to be governed by the laws of England, are not bound as well by such laws as are beneficial to the king, by appointing taxes and subsidies for the support of the government, as by other laws, which tend only to the benefit and ease of the subject?

Which of the above lordships desire his majesty's judges to consider and answer in writing, and to return their opinions to the committee with convenient speed.

I am, with respect, &c.

BOOK
II.

NUMBER XXVIII.

Order to the judges about the question of Jamaica.

At the court at Whitehall, the 23d of June, 1680.

PRESENT,

His Majesty,

Prince Rupert,	Lord Chamberlain,	Mr. Coventry,
Archbp. of Canterbury,	Earl of Sunderland,	Mr. Secretary Jen-
Lord Chancellor,	Earl of Clarendon,	kins,
Lord President,	Earl of Bath,	Mr. Chancellor of
Lord Privy-Seal,	Lord Bishop of London,	the Exchequer,
Duke of Albemarle,	Mr. Hyde,	Mr. Godolphin.
Marquis of Worcester,	Mr. Finch,	
Earl of Ossory,	Lord Chief Justice North,	

IT is this day ordered in council, that Mr. Attorney and Mr. Solicitor General do attend his majesty's judges, and desire them to assemble with all convenient speed, and, being assembled, to confer with them concerning this question; *viz.*

Whether, by his majesty's letter, proclamation, or commissions, annexed, his majesty hath excluded himself from the power of establishing laws in Jamaica, it being a conquered country, and all laws settled by authority there being now expired?

And that, upon receiving the opinions of his majesty's judges, *under their hands in writing*, they do report the same to the lords of the privy-council appointed a committee for trade and foreign plantations.

NUMBER XXIX.

APPEN-
DIX.*Extract of an order in council.*

JAMAICA.

At the committee of trade and plantations, in the council-chamber at Whitehall, the 7th of September, 1680,

P R E S E N T,

Lord President, Marquis of Worcester, Mr. Secretary Jenkins.

MR. Secretary Jenkins acquaints the committee, that Colonel Long, of Jamaica, had some days before surrendered himself to him, upon a bond of ten thousand pounds given to the Earl of Carlisle to that purpose; and that he had taken his security for the like sum, that he would attend the first council, on Friday next, being the 10th instant.

NUMBER XXX.

Copy of an order in council.

JAMAICA.

At the committee of trade and plantations, in the council-chamber at Whitehall,

P R E S E N T,

Prince Rupert, Marquis of Worcester, Earl of Bath,
Lord President, Earl of Clarendon, Mr. Secretary Jenkins.

THE Earl of Carlisle is called in, and delivers a paper containing a charge against Colonel Long, which is read, consisting chiefly in three points; *viz.* That he had razed the king's name out of the act for raising a publick revenue; that he had granted an *habeas corpus*, being judge, for

BOOK

II.



a person condemned by law; and had opposed the settlement of the country pursuant to the king's orders.

And his lordship declaring, that he had nothing more to say against Colonel Long than was contained in that paper, only reserving to himself the liberty of explaining what he had therein mentioned, Colonel Long is called in, and the paper read to him; whereupon he positively denies that he had done any thing to the bill without the directions of the assembly; and that he believes the rasure happened, inasmuch as the clerk of the assembly had transcribed the bill passed in Sir Thomas Lynch's time, which was now blotted out by the agreement of the governor, council, and assembly, and the words written in his hand were only added to make up the sense, which otherwise would have been wanting, which he did as speaker of that assembly from whom he had directions; which is confirmed by the letters of Major Moleworth, Mr. Bernard, Mr. Ashurst, Mr. Burton, and of the clerk of the assembly.

As to the granting an *habeas corpus*, he declares he did not know the person was condemned; and that it is usual for the judges to sign blank *habeas corpus*'s, which the clerk gives out in court.

And that he never opposed the king's orders, otherwise than by expressing his opinion, that they were not for his majesty's service, nor the good of the country.

NUMBER XXXI.

APPENDIX.

Extract of an order in council.

JAMAICA.

At the committee of trade and plantations, in the council-chamber at Whitehall, Tuesday the 12th of October, 1680,

PRESENT,

Prince Rupert,	Earl of Sunderland,	Mr. Hyde,
Lord President,	Earl of Clarendon,	Mr. Godolphin,
Lord Privy-Seal,	Earl of Halifax,	Mr. Secretary Jenkins,
Marquis of Worcester,	Vise. Fauconberg,	Mr. Seymour.

THE Earl of Carlisle attending, acquaints the committee, that the act for raising a publick revenue will expire in March next, and that the government will be left under very great necessities, in case the king do not give Sir Henry Morgan leave to pass a temporary bill, until the full settlement of affairs shall be agreed on, which is like to take up a considerable time; and therefore proposes, that the order in council, dated the 14th of January last (which is read) forbidding the governor to raise money by any other act or order whatsoever than by the bill transmitted by his majesty, which the assembly will not be willing to pass until the government be entirely settled in such manner as may be more agreeable to them than the Irish model, be suspended. His lordship proceeds to give an account of his transactions with the assembly to persuade them to pass the revenue bill, and reads the objections of the assembly, and his answer to them; whereof, and of the council-books, his lordship is desired to give a transcript to the committee.

There having been two laws read which were entered therein, the one made by Colonel D'Oyley and the council, for raising imposts on liquors, the other by Sir Charles Lyttelton and his council, being a supplemental act to the former:

And his lordship acquainting the committee, that, as for licences of taverns, he had set them on foot before he passed any bill of revenue:

It

BOOK

II.

It is thereupon thought fit, by some of their lordships, that the assembly of Jamaica be induced to pass a perpetual bill, by having leave to appropriate the revenue to the support of the government.

And the committee is appointed to meet again on this business on Thursday, at nine o'clock in the morning; when Colonel Long, and the other assembly men lately come over, are to attend.

NUMBER XXXII.

JAMAICA.

At the committee of trade and plantations, in the council-chamber at Whitehall, Thursday the 14th of October, 1680,

PRESENT,

Prince Rupert,	Earl of Clarendon,	Viscount Fauconberg,
Lord President,	Earl of Essex,	Lord Chief Justice North,
Lord Privy-Seal,	Earl of Halifax,	Mr. Secretary Jenkins.
Marquis of Worcester,		

THE Earl of Carlisle attends, and produces an entry in the council-book of Jamaica, of a law passed by Colonel D'Oyley and the council, for raising a publick revenue, and of another passed by Sir Charles Lyttelton and the council, being a supplemental act to the former, both which are indefinite, and not determined by the commissions of Colonel D'Oyley or my Lord Windsor, whose deputy Sir Charles Lyttelton was.

After which, Colonel Long and Mr. Ashurst are called in (the other gentlemen of Jamaica being in the country) and being asked, Why they were not willing that a perpetual bill of revenue should pass in Jamaica? they made answer, that they have no other way to make their aggrivances known to the king, to have them redressed, than by the dependance of the governor upon the assembly, which is preserved by passing temporary bills of revenue; and that, a perpetual bill being passed, all the ends of government would be answered, and there would be no further need of calling assemblies. To which my Lord of Carlisle replies, that, notwithstanding

notwithstanding any act for raising an impost on liquors should be passed in that manner, yet the necessities and contingencies of the government are such as to require the frequent calling of assemblies, for raising money by other means, and doing publick works, the present revenue coming far short of the expence of the government.

APPENDIX.

Their lordships tell Colonel Long, that, in case they be willing and pass the act of revenue indefinitely, the king may be induced to settle other perpetual laws, which they shall propose as beneficial to them.

The gentlemen of Jamaica bring withdrawn, their lordships enter upon a debate concerning a continuance of the two laws made by Colonel D'Oyley and Sir Charles Lyttelton before mentioned, and *how far the English laws and methods of government ought to take place in Jamaica; and it is there alledged, "that the laws of England cannot be in force in another country, where the constitution of the place is different from that of England."*

Upon the whole matter, the committee desire my Lord Chief Justice North to report his opinion in writing, on Monday next, upon the questions following; viz.

1st. Whether the king, by his proclamation published during my Lord Windfor's government, *his majesty's letter dated 15th of January, 1672-3*, or any other act, appearing by the laws of England or any laws of Jamaica, or by his majesty's commissions or instructions to his governors, has divested himself of the power he *formerly had* to alter the forms of government in Jamaica?

2d. Whether any act of the assembly of Jamaica, or any other act of his majesty or his governors, have totally repealed the acts made by Colonel D'Oyley and Sir Charles Lyttelton for raising a publick revenue, or whether they are now in force?

Memorandum, His majesty being present, my Lord Chief Justice North was added to the committee.

Memorandum, Colonel Long having mentioned some transactions of my Lord Vaughan's during his government, his lordship is to be summoned for the next meeting.

BOOK
II.

JAMAICA.

NUMBER XXXIII.

At the committee of trade and plantations, in the council-chamber at Whitehall, on Monday the 18th of October, 1680,

PRESENT,

Lord President,	Earl of Clarendon,	Lord Chief Justice North,
Lord Privy-Seal,	Earl of Halifax,	Mr. Secretary Jenkins,
Lord Chamberlain,	Lord Visc. Fauconberg,	Mr. Seymour.
Earl of Essex,		

MY Lord Chief Justice North having acquainted the committee, that he had considered of the two questions proposed by their lordships; and that, although some further time would be requisite for him to give in his answer, yet, in respect of the haste that was necessary for settling the revenue, his lordship undertakes to return his answer at the next meeting upon the second question; wherein his lordship is desired to take to his assistance some other of his majesty's judges; *viz.*

Whether any act of the assembly of Jamaica, or any act of his majesty or his governors, have totally repealed the acts made by Colonel D'Oyley and Sir Charles Lyttelton, for raising a publick revenue, or whether they are now in force?

N U M B E R XXXIV.

APPEN-
DIX.

JAMAICA.

At the committee of trade and plantations, in the council-chamber at Whitehall, on Wednesday the 20th of October, 1680,

P R E S E N T,

Lord President,	Earl of Essex,	Lord Bishop of London,
Earl of Sunderland,	Earl of Halifax	Mr. Secretary Jenkins,
Earl of Bridgewater,	Lord Chief Justice North,	Mr. Seymour,

MY Lord Chief Justice North having delivered his opinion in writing upon the question recommended to him at the last meeting, Colonel Long, Mr. Beeston, Mr. Ashurst, and other planters and merchants of Jamaica, together with the Earl of Carlisle, are called in, and his lordship's opinion is read to them; whereby his lordship concludes, that the act of revenue made in 1663 by Sir Charles Lyttelton, is yet in force, as being not repealed by any subsequent acts, which were limited to the term of two years by his majesty's commands. But Colonel Long objects, that there was a law made by Sir Thomas Modyford, which declares all laws passed at Sir Charles Lyttelton's assemblies void, for want of due form in the writs, and other particulars: whereupon they are bid to withdraw; and whereas my Lord Chief Justice North was not present when this objection was made, their lordships think fit that he be acquainted therewith, and desired to renew his opinion; and the gentlemen of Jamaica are also desired to be ready with the objections they have to make to his lordship's report, at the next meeting, which is appointed for to-morrow at three in the afternoon.

BOOK

II.

JAMAICA.

NUMBER XXXV.

At the committee of trade and plantations, in the council-chamber at Whitehall, Thursday 21st of October, 1680,

PRESENT,

Prince Rupert,	Earl of Bridgewater,	Mr. Hyde,
Lord President	Earl of Clarendon,	Lord Chief Justice North,
Marquis of Worcester,	Visc. Fauconberg,	Mr. Secretary Jenkins.

THE lords, being met to consider the business of Jamaica, order the proclamation published in my Lord Windsor's time to be read: and thereupon their lordships express their opinion, that his majesty did thereby assure and settle the property of the inhabitants, *but not the government and form*: thence these questions did arise; viz.

1st. Whether, upon the consideration of the commission and instructions to Colonel D'Oyley, and Sir Charles Lyttelton, and the *constitution of the island thereupon*, the acts of council made by Colonel D'Oyley and Sir Charles Lyttelton were perpetual laws, binding to the inhabitants of the island?

2^d. Whether, supposing those laws good and perpetual, any of the subsequent laws, or the proclamation in my Lord Windsor's time, have taken away the force of these laws?

And because the gentlemen of Jamaica made divers objections against the validity of these laws, as being made by the governors and council without an assembly, and against the perpetuity of them, as being repealed by subsequent laws; their lordships do therefore think it most conducing to his majesty's service, that Colonel Long, Major Beeton, and Mr. Ashurst, do attend my Lord Chief Justice North, in order to explain to his lordship what is chiefly expected by them, whereby they may be induced to settle the revenue for the support of the government, to the end matters may be brought to an accommodation.

NUMBER XXXVI.

APPENDIX.

JAMAICA.

At the committee of trade and plantations, in the council-chamber at Whitehall, Wednesday the 27th of October, 1680,

PRESENT,

Lord Privy-Seal,	Earl of Bath,	Mr. Chancellor of the Ex-
Earl of Bridgewater,	Earl of Halifax,	chequer.
Lord Chamberlain,		

MY Lord Chief Justice North reports, that he has been attended by the gentlemen of Jamaica, who have declared themselves willing to grant the king a perpetual bill for the payment of the governors, and another bill for the payment of contingencies to continue for seven years, provided they may be restored to their ancient form of passing laws, and may be assured of such of the laws of England as may concern their liberty and property.

Their lordships taking notice, that the revenue of Jamaica will expire in March next, direct a letter to be prepared, for the approbation of the council, empowering Sir Henry Morgan to call an assembly, and to endeavour the passing a temporary bill, with their consent, for the revenue; and, in case of their refusal, to raise the same in such manner as hath been done by former governors.

Memorandum, At a council on the instant, a draught of the aforementioned letter was read.

And upon reading the petition of the planters, merchants and inhabitants of Jamaica, praying to be restored to their ancient method of making laws, the lords of the committee are ordered to meet *de die in diem*, until they shall have agreed on such a method for the making of laws, and the settlement of the government, as they shall find most convenient for his majesty's service.

P R E S E N T,

Prince Rupert,	Earl of Clarendon,	Bishop of London,
Lord Privy-Seal,	Earl of Essex,	Mr. Hyde,
Lord Chamberlain,	Earl of Halifax,	Lord Chief Justice North,
Earl of Bridgewater,	Viscount Fauconberg,	Mr. Secretary Jenkins.
Earl of Sunderland,		

THEIR lordships having considered that part of the letter from the council of Jamaica, dated 20th May last, that concerns the laws, and having read the petition of the merchants and planters of Jamaica, presented in council on the _____ as also a paper prepared by Mr. Blackwayt, concerning the manner of making laws in Jamaica, their lordships, upon full consideration and debate of what may best conduce to his majesty's service, agree, *that the present method of making laws, in Barbadoes, as settled by the commission of Sir Richard Dutton, be proposed unto his majesty in council:* and that powers be drawn up for the Earl of Carlisle, with instructions suitable to that scheme, and with respect to the present circumstances of Jamaica, and that the assembly may be the more easily induced to grant a revenue for the support of the government, their lordships are of opinion, that his majesty's quit-rents, and the tax on the wine-licences, as well as all other levies which now are or shall be made, be appropriated to the support of the government, and to no other use whatsoever.

NUMBER XXXVIII.

JAMAICA.

At a committee of trade and plantations, in the council-chamber at Whitehall, on Saturday the 30th of October, 1680,

APPENDIX.

PRESENT,

Prince Rupert,	Earl of Sunderland,	Viscount Fauconberg,
Duke of Albemarle,	Earl of Clarendon,	Earl of Halifax,
Lord Chamberlain,	Earl of Essex,	Mr. Secretary Jenkins.
Earl of Bridgewater,		

COLONEL Long and the other gentlemen of Jamaica attend, and are acquainted with the resolutions of the committee to report to his majesty, that they may enjoy the same method of making laws as is now appointed for Barbadoes; with which the gentlemen express themselves very well satisfied.

NUMBER XXXIX.

Copy of powers to the Earl of Carlisle for making laws.

Charles the Second, by the grace of God, king of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, &c.

To our right trusty and right well-beloved cousin Charles Earl of Carlisle, our captain-general and governor in chief in and over our island of Jamaica, and other the territories depending thereon; and to our deputy-governor and commander in chief of our said island; and, in case of their death or absence, to our council of Jamaica.

WHEREAS, by our royal commission bearing date the first of March, in the thirtieth year of our reign, we having thought fit to constitute,

BOOK

II.

tute and appoint you, Charles Earl of Carlisle, captain-general and governor in chief in and over our island of Jamaica, and the territories depending thereon, thereby commanding and requiring you, or in your absence our deputy-governor, or our council, to do and execute all things belonging to the said command, and the trust reposed in you, according to the several powers or directions granted or appointed you by the said commission and the instructions therewith given you, or by further powers and instructions to be granted or appointed you under our signet and sign manual, as by our said commission (reference being thereunto had) doth more at large appear: and whereas it is necessary that good and wholesome laws and ordinances be settled and established for the government and support of our island of Jamaica: we do hereby give and grant unto you full power and authority, with the advice and consent of the said council, from time to time, as need shall require, to summon or call general assemblies of the freeholders and planters within the said island, in manner and form as is now practised in Jamaica. And our will and pleasure is, that the persons thereupon duly elected by the major part of the freeholders of the respective parishes and places, and so returned (having, before their sitting, taken the oaths of allegiance and supremacy, which you shall commissionate fit persons, under the publick seal of that island, to administer, and without taking which none shall be capable of sitting, though elected) shall be called and held the general assembly of our island of Jamaica; and that they, or the major part of them, shall have full power and authority, with the advice and consent of yourself and of the council, to make, constitute, and ordain laws, statutes, and ordinances, for the publick peace, welfare, and good government of the said island, and of the people and inhabitants thereof, and such other as shall resort thereto, and for the benefit of our heirs and successors; which said laws, statutes, and ordinances, are to be (as near as conveniently may be) agreeable to the laws and statutes of our kingdom of England: provided, that all such laws, statutes, and ordinances, of what nature or duration whatsoever, be, within three months, or by the first conveyance after the making the same, transmittted unto us under the publick seal, for our allowance and approbation of them, as also duplicates thereof by the next conveyance: and in case all or any of them (being not before confirmed by us) shall at any time be disallowed and not approved, and so signified by us, our heirs or successors, under our or their sign manual

or signet, or by order of our or their privy-council, unto you, the said Earl of Carlisle, or to the commander in chief of our said island for the time being, then such or so many of them as shall be so disallowed and not approved shall from thenceforth cease, determine, and be utterly void and of none effect, any thing to the contrary thereof notwithstanding. And, to the end nothing may be passed or done in our said island by the said council or assembly to the prejudice of us, our heirs or successors, we will and ordain that you, the said Charles Earl of Carlisle, shall have and enjoy a negative voice in the making or passing of all laws, statutes, and ordinances, as aforesaid; and that you shall and may likewise, from time to time, as you shall judge it necessary, dissolve all general assemblies, as aforesaid; any thing in our commission bearing date as aforesaid to the contrary hereof notwithstanding. And our will and pleasure is, that, in case of your death or absence from our said island, our deputy-governor for the time being exercise and enjoy all and singular the powers and authorities hereby granted unto you, or intended to be granted you, the said Charles Earl of Carlisle; and in case he likewise happen to die, or be absent from our said island, we do hereby authorize and empower our council of Jamaica to execute the powers hereby given you, until we shall declare our further pleasure therein.

APPEN-
DIX.

Given at our court at Whitehall, this 3d Day of November, in the thirty-second year of our reign.



Map
of the ISLAND of
(**BARBADOES;**)
for the History of the
WEST INDIES.
by Bryan Edwards Esq.

N.B. Plantations or Sugar works of greater note are expressed as [to Senwell] and
Plantations or Sugar works of less note are expressed as [to Charneck].

Statute Miles
1 2 3 4

THE
HISTORICAL,
CIVIL AND COMMERCIAL,
OF
The British Colonies in the West Indies.

BOOK III.
ENGLISH CARAIBEAN ISLANDS.

CHAP. I.
BARBADOES.

First Arrival of the English at this Island.—Origin, progress, and termination of the Proprietary Government.—Revenue granted to the Crown of 4 $\frac{1}{2}$ per centum on all Produce exported—how obtained.—Origin of the Act of Navigation.—Situation and Extent of the Island.—Soil and Produce.—Population.—Decline, and Causes thereof.—Exports and Imports.

THE Island of Barbadoes, of which I now propose to treat, was probably first discovered by the Portuguese in their voyages from Brasil; and from them it received the name which it still retains (*a*). It was found without occupants or

CHAP.
I.

(*a*) It is said not to have been noticed in any sea-chart before the year 1600.

BOOK

III.

claimants. The Charaibes, for reasons altogether unknown to us, had deserted it, and the Portuguese, satisfied with the splendid regions they had acquired on the Continent, seem to have considered it as of little value. Having furnished it with a breed of swine for the benefit of such of their countrymen as might navigate the same tract, they left the island in all other respects as they found it.

OF the English, the first who are known to have landed in this island, were the crew of a ship called the *Olive Blossom*, bound from London to Surinam, in 1605, and fitted out at the expence of Sir Olive Leigh, whom Purchas styles ‘a worthipful knight of Kent.’ Finding it without inhabitants, they took possession of the country, by fixing up a cross on the spot where *James-Town* was afterwards built, with this inscription, “James King of England and this island;” but they began no settlement, nor made any considerable stay in a country entirely uninhabited and overgrown with woods; yet it furnished them with fresh provisions. They found pigs, pigeons, and parrots, and the sea abounded with fish.

SOME years after this, a ship of Sir William Courteen’s, a merchant of London, returning from Brasil, was driven by stress of weather into this island, and finding refreshments on it, the master and seamen, on their arrival in England, made so favourable a report of the beauty and fertility of the country, that Lord Ley (afterwards Earl of Marlborough, and Lord High Treasurer) immediately obtained from King James the First a grant of the island to himself and his heirs in perpetuity.

COURTEEN himself was a man of extensive views and magnificent projects. He immediately began (probably under the patronage of Marlborough) to form ideas of establishing a colony in the distant but promising territory. Having engaged about thirty persons, who undertook to settle in the island, and furnished them with tools, provisions, and necessaries of all kinds for planting and fortifying the island, he appointed William Deane their governor, and sent them away in a ship called the *William and John*, commanded by John Powell. They arrived safe in the latter end of the year 1624, and laid the foundations of a town, which, in honour of the sovereign, they denominated JAMES-TOWN; and thus began the first English settlement in the Island of Barbadoes.

FOR some time previous to this, it had become fashionable for men of high rank and distinction to engage in sea adventures, proclaiming themselves the patrons of colonization and foreign commerce. In the lists of those who contributed to the British settlements in Virginia, New England, the Bermuda Islands, and other places in the New World, may be found the names of many of the first nobility and gentry of the kingdom. Among others who distinguished themselves in such pursuits, at the time that Barbadoes was thus planted by a private merchant, was James Hay, Earl of Carlisle. This nobleman was at that juncture engaged in the establishment of a colony in the island of St. Christopher (as we shall hereafter have occasion more particularly to relate) and, either not knowing of the Earl of Marlborough's patent, or conceiving

BOOK

III.

that it interfered with his own pretensions (*b*), he applied for and obtained, in the first year of Charles I. a warrant for a grant, by letters patent under the great seal of England, of all the Charaibbean Islands, including also Barbadoes; but when the grant came to be actually passed, the Earl of Marlborough opposed it, on the ground of priority of right. The dispute between these noble lords continued for a considerable time; at length the contending parties thought it prudent to compromise the matter, and, on the Earl of Carlisle's undertaking to pay the annual sum of £. 300 to the Earl of Marlborough and his heirs for ever, Marlborough waved his patent, and, in consequence of this arrangement, on the 2d of June 1627, the Earl of Carlisle's patent passed the great seal, who thereupon became sole proprietor (*c*).

DURING

(*b*) It is said that he had obtained from James I. a grant, or warrant for a grant, under the great seal, of all the Charaibbean Islands, which the king erected into a province by the name of *Carlisle*, on the model of the palatinate of *Durham*.

(*c*) Among other clauses in this grant are the following. "Further know ye, that we, for us our heirs and successors, have authorized and appointed the said *James Earl of Carlisle*, and his heirs (of whose fidelity, prudence, justice, and wisdom, we have great confidence) for the good and happy government of the said province, whether for the publick security of the said province or the private utility of every man, to make, erect, and set forth, and under his or their signet to publish, such laws as he the said Earl of *Carlisle*, or his heirs, *with the consent, assent, and approbation of the free inhabitants of the said province, or the greater part of them, thereunto to be called*, and in such form as he or they in his or their discretion shall think fit and best. And these laws must all men for the time being, that do live within the limits of the said province, observe; whether they be board to sea, or from thence returning to *England*, or any other our dominions, or any other place appointed, upon such impositions, penalties, imprisonment,

DURING this contest about the disposal of countries, most of which were at that time in the hands of their proper owners, the Charaibes; the man, who alone had the merit of an-

ment, or restraint that it behoveth, and the quality of the offence requireth, either upon the body, or death itself, to be executed by the said *James Earl of Carlisle*, and by his heirs, or by his or their deputy, judges, justices, magistrates, officers, and ministers, according to the tenor and true meaning of these presents, in what cause soever, and with such power as to him the said *James Earl of Carlisle*, or his heir, shall seem best; and to dispose of offences or riots whatsoever, either by sea or land, whether before judgment received, or after remitted, fined, pardoned, or forgiven; and to do and to perform all and every thing and things, which to the fulfilling of justice, courts or manner of proceeding in their tribunal, may or doth belong or appertain, although express mention of them in these presents be not made, yet we have granted full power by virtue of these presents therein to be made; which laws so absolutely proclaimed, and by strength of right supported as they are granted, we will, enjoin, charge, and command all and every subject and liege people of us, our heirs and successors, so far as them they do concern, inviolably to keep and observe, under the pains therein expressed; so as notwithstanding the aforesaid laws be agreeable and not repugnant unto reason, nor against it; but as convenient and agreeable as may be to the laws, statutes, customs, and rights of our kingdom of *England*.”—“We will also, of our princely grace, for us, our heirs and successors, straightly charge, make, and ordain, that the said province be of our allegiance, and that all and every subject and liege people of us, our heirs and successors, brought or to be brought, and their children, whether there born or afterwards to be born, become natives and subjects of us, our heirs and successors, and be as free as they that were born in *England*; and so their inheritance within our kingdom of *England*, or other our dominions, to seek, receive, take, hold, buy, and possess, and use and enjoy them as his own, and to give, sell, alter, and bequeath them at their pleasure; and also freely, quietly, and peaceably to have and possess all the liberties, franchises, and privileges of this kingdom, and them to use and enjoy as liege people of *England*, whether born, or to be born, without impediment, molestation, vexation, injury or trouble of us our heirs and successors, any statute, act, ordinance, or proviso, to the contrary notwithstanding.”

BOOK

III.



nexing the plantation of Barbadoes to the crown of England seems to have been shamefully neglected. The Earl of Marlborough, having secured to himself and his posterity, the gratification I have mentioned, deserted him; and the Lord Carlisle, having done him premeditated injury, became his irreconcilable enemy. Courteen, however, found a friend in William Earl of Pembroke, who represented his case in such a light to the King, as to obtain a revocation of Carlisle's patent, and a grant to himself in trust for Courteen.

BUT the hopes of this worthy citizen were of short continuance. The Earl of Carlisle was, at that juncture, absent from the kingdom, a circumstance which gave some colour to his charge of injustice and precipitancy in the proceeding. On his return to England, he complained that he had been condemned and deprived of his property unheard; and the monarch on the throne, who seems, through the whole of his unfortunate reign, rather to have wanted resolution to pursue the right path, than sagacity to discern it, trod back his ground a second time; for, unable to resist the clamorous importunity of a worthless favourite, he actually annulled the grant to the Earl of Pembroke, and, by second letters patent to the Earl of Carlisle, again restored to him the privileges of which he had himself, a short time before, deprived him.

THUS by an act of power, which its repugnancy and absurdity alone, rendered illegal, the Earl of Carlisle again found himself lord paramount of Barbadoes; and in order completely to ruin all the interests in the colony of his competitor, he proceeded

ceeded to distribute the lands to such persons as chose to receive grants at his hands on the terms proposed to them. A society of London merchants (*d*). accepted ten thousand acres, on conditions which promised great advantage to the proprietor; but they were allowed the liberty of sending out a person to preside over their concerns in the colony, and they made choice for this purpose of Charles Woolferstone, who repaired to the island, accompanied with sixty-four persons, each of whom was authorized to take up 100 acres of land.

THESE people landed on the 5th of July, 1628, at which time Courteen's settlement was in a very promising condition; but Woolferstone declared it an incroachment and usurpation, and, being supported by the arrival of Sir William Tufton, who was sent out as chief governor by Lord Carlisle, in 1629, with a force sufficient for the maintenance of his pretensions, he compelled the friends of Courteen to submit; and the interests of the latter were thenceforth swallowed up and forgotten (*e*).

THE facts which I have thus recited have been related so often by others, that an apology might be necessary for their insertion in this work, were it not, that by comparing one account with another, I have been enabled to correct some im-

(*d*) The names of those merchants were Marmaduke Brandon, William Perkin, Alexander Banister, Robert Wheatley, Edmond Forster, Robert Swinnerston, Henry Wheatly, John Charles, and John Farrington.

(*e*) In this year, Sir William Tufton gave 140 grants of land, comprizing in the whole 15,872 acres, and on the 23d of February, 1630, he passed divers laws, and among others, one for dividing the island into six parishes.

BOOK
III.

portant errors in each. And the claim of the Earl of Carlisle having originally introduced and established the very heavy internal imposition on their gross produce, to which the planters of this, and some of the neighbouring islands, are to this day liable; I have thought it necessary to be particular and minute, in tracing the claim itself from the beginning. In what manner it produced the burthen in question, and how Barbadoes reverted from a proprietary to a royal government, I shall now proceed to relate.

THE administration of Sir William Tufton, the first governor appointed by Lord Carlisle, proving disagreeable to his lordship, Captain Henry Hawley was sent over in 1631 to supersede him. Tufton resenting this measure, procured the signatures of some of the planters to a petition complaining of Hawley's conduct. Hawley construed this petition into an act of mutiny on the part of Tufton, for which he had him tried and condemned by a court-martial, and with very little ceremony caused him to be shot to death; a proceeding universally exclaimed against as a most horrid and atrocious murder. Hawley, however, though recalled on this account, not only escaped punishment through the interest of his noble patron, but was soon afterwards sent back again as chief governor; in which capacity he remained till 1638, when he was driven from the country by the united voice of all the inhabitants; who however permitted his brother, William Hawley, to act as commander in chief until a governor should be nominated at home. He was succeeded by Major Hunckes, who, leaving the island in 1641, appointed Philip Bel, Esquire, his deputy,

and

and Bell, in 1645, was appointed chief governor (*f*). But the conduct of Hawley, thus violent and bloody, and the support which he received from the proprietor, had alienated the minds of the new settlers from power thus delegated and abused; and the proprietor's authority lost ground every day. In the mean time, the civil war in England caused many people, of peaceable tempers and dispositions, to take refuge in this island; and the

(*f*) During the administration of this gentleman, many salutary laws were passed; among others the following:

1st. "An Act for the continuance and observation of all acts and statutes not repealed;" which Act recites that there were divers and sundry good and wholesome laws, statutes, and ordinances provided, enacted, and made, assigned, and agreed upon, by and with the assent, consent, and approbation of the governor, council, and freeholders out of every parish of the island, intituled, *A General Assembly for that purpose elected, made, and chosen*. And it is thereby enacted, that none of those laws shall be altered, or any thing added to them, without the consent of a like *General Assembly*. And that every parish should have two representatives at least, to be elected by the freeholders.

2d. "An addition to an Act intituled, "An Act for settling the estates and titles of the inhabitants of this island to their possessions in their several plantations within the same:" it is therein recited, that in a clause in the first act it is ordained, that all the inhabitants of this island, that were in quiet possession of any lands or tenements by virtue of any warrant from any former governor, or by conveyance or other act in law, from them who had the same warrant, should have, hold, and enjoy the same, *as their free estates and as free* (sculples had since arisen, whether an estate for life or inheritance or, to be continued from the same, for want of the words *their heirs*; to the effect the same might be more fully explained, and all disputes of that kind for the future abolished, it is enacted, that by the words *as their free estates*, was meant, *the whole estate and inheritance* of the respective plantations within this island, so that by such possession in manner as by the said act is expressed, the said inhabitants are thereby adjudged and declared to have and to hold their lands of right to them, to dispose of or alienate, or otherwise to descend, or be confirmed to their heirs for ever."

BOOK
III.

consequent ruin of the King's affairs induced a still greater number, many of whom had been officers of rank in his service, to follow their example. The emigration from the mother-country to this island was indeed so great during the commotions in England, that in 1650 it was computed there were 20,000 white men in Barbadoes, half of them able to bear arms, and furnishing even a regiment of horse to the number of one thousand.

“THESE adventurers,” says Lord Clarendon, “planted without any body's leave, and without being opposed or contradicted by any body.” The case seems to have been, that the governor for the time being granted lands to all who applied, on receiving a gratuity for himself; and the claim of the proprietor, whether disputed in the island, or disregarded amidst the confusions at home, was at length tacitly and silently relinquished (g).

THE colony, left to its own efforts, and enjoying an unlimited freedom of trade, flourished beyond example. In the year 1646, however, the then Earl of Carlisle, who was son and heir of the patentee, stimulated by the renown of its wealth and prosperity, began to revive his claims as hereditary proprietor; and, entering into a treaty with Lord Willoughby of Parham, conveyed to that nobleman all his rights by lease for twenty-one years, on condition of receiving one half the

(g) Lord Carlisle had originally stipulated for an annual tribute of forty pounds of cotton wool from each person who held lands under his grant.

profits in the meantime; but justly apprehending that the resident planters might dispute his pretensions, he very readily concurred with Lord Willoughby in soliciting a commission for the latter, as chief governor, under the sanction of regal authority (*b*).

Thus, though an absolute dereliction of the proprietaryship, was asked and obtained; and the Lord Willoughby, thus commissioned, embarked for his government; and, in consideration of the royal appointment, was received by the inhabitants, who were warmly attached to the King's interest, with respect and obedience. It seems probable, that, at his first coming, he said nothing of his lease from Carlisle; trusting rather to future management for the re-establishment of that lord's pretensions, than to an open avowal of them on his arrival. We are told, however, by Clarendon, that he obtained from the planters a promise of a contribution to the proprietor; but before it was carried into effect, the regal authority was abolished in England, and Barbadoes reduced to the obedience of the new republick, by whom another governor was appointed.

ON the restoration of Charles II. and the re-establishment of the royal authority over all the British dominions (*i*), Lord Willoughby,

(*b*) When this application was made, the King was in the hands of the parliament; the commission therefore, with his Majesty's privy and approbation, was signed by the Prince of Wales, at that time in Holland.

(*i*) On the 18th of February, 1661, his Majesty honoured thirteen gentlemen of Barbadoes with the dignity of baronetage, in consideration of their loyalty and sufferings during the civil war: They were, Sir John Colleton, Sir James Mod-

BOOK

III.

Willoughby, who had eight or nine years of his lease unexpired, applied to the King for leave to return to his government of Barbadoes. To this application no objection would have been made by the inhabitants, if his lordship had considered himself merely as representative of the crown; but his connection and contract with the Earl of Carlisle, were by this time sufficiently understood by the planters, who saw with astonishment that they were regarded by those great lords as mere tenants at will of their possessions. They solicited therefore the King's support and protection. "They pleaded," says Clarendon, "that they were the King's subjects; that they had repaired to Barbadoes as to a desolate place, and had by their industry obtained a livelihood there, when they could not with a good conscience stay in England; that if they should now be left to those lords to ransom themselves and compound for their estates, they must leave the country, and the plantation be destroyed, which yielded his Majesty so great a revenue." Respecting the charter granted to the Earl of Carlisle, they insisted positively that it was void in law; and they made two humble propositions to the King, either that his Majesty would give them leave to institute in his name, but at their own cost, a process in the Exchequer for trying the validity of the earl's patent; or that he would leave those who claimed under it (for the second Earl of Carlisle dying in the interim, had bequeathed his rights in the West Indies to the Earl of Kinnoul) to their legal remedy, absolutely denying that either the late or

ford, Sir James Drax, Sir Robert Davers, Sir Robert Hacket, Sir John Yeamans, Sir Timothy Thornhill, Sir John Witham, Sir Robert Legard, Sir John Worsum, Sir John Rawdon, Sir Edwyn Stede, Sir Willoughby Chamberlayne.

former Lord Carlisle had sustained the smallest expence in settling the colony.

C H A P.

I.

INSTEAD of consenting to either of those most reasonable propositions, the King ordered enquiry to be made into the several allegations and claims of the parties concerned, by a committee of the privy-council; before whom some of the planters being heard, one of them, in order more readily to induce the King to take the sovereignty of the island into his own hands, offered, in the name of the inhabitants, to consent, in that case, to lay an imposition of so much in the hundred on the produce of their estates, out of which his Majesty's governor might be honourably supported, and the King dispose of the overplus as he should think fit. To a monarch of Charles's disposition, this was too tempting a proposition to be resisted. We are informed that his Majesty *received the offer very graciously*; "and the next care of the committee," adds the noble historian, who was himself of that body, "was to make some computation, that might be depended upon, as to the yearly revenue, that would arise upon the imposition within the island." But the planters, when called up the next day to give satisfaction in this particular, insisted that Mr. Kendall, the person who had made the offer, had no authority to undertake for them, or the inhabitants within the island; and the utmost they could be brought to promise for themselves was, that they would use their endeavours with their friends in the island, to settle such a revenue on the crown as the circumstances of the colony would admit of, which they said the assembly alone was competent to determine.

THE

BOOK

III.

THE prospect of a revenue, though distant and uncertain, brought forward the creditors of the Earl of Carlisle, the patentee, who was indebted, it seems, at his death, in the sum of £.80,000, and they had no hopes of being paid but from the profits of his West Indian possessions. The heirs of the Earl of Marlborough likewise put in their claim for the arrearage of the annuity of £.300, granted under the original compromise which I have before mentioned; and the Lord Willoughby insisted at the same time on receiving a moiety of whatever profits might arise during the remainder of the term yet unexpired in his lease. The other moiety, during that time, and the whole in reversion, was claimed by the Earl of Kinnoul.

To satisfy these several claimants, and secure a perpetual revenue to the crown, was a work of difficulty, and its accomplishment seems to have been the sole aim of the King's ministers; by whom, after a tedious but partial investigation (considering the colony as wholly at the King's mercy) it was finally ordered, that the Lord Willoughby should immediately repair to his government, and insist on the grant and establishment by the assembly of a permanent and irrevocable revenue of four and a half per cent. to be paid in specie, on all dead commodities, the growth of the island, shipped to any port of the world; the money arising therefrom to be applied as follows:

FIRST, towards an honourable and immediate provision for the Earl of Kinnoul, who, it was alledged, had sacrificed his fortune in the King's service, and who covenanted, on such provision

provision being secured to him, to surrender the Carlisle patent to the crown. CHAP.
I.

SECONDLY, towards satisfaction and full discharge of the Earl of Marlborough's annuity.

THIRDLY, it was stipulated that the surplus should be divided equally between the creditors of the Earl of Carlisle and the Lord Willoughby, during the term yet unexpired of his lordship's lease. On the expiration thereof, the remainder, after providing £.1,200 *per annum* for the King's governor, for the time being, was ordered to be paid among the said creditors till their demands were fully satisfied and discharged.

FOURTHLY, on the extinction of those several incumbrances, it was stipulated that the whole revenue, subject to the charge of £.1,200 *per annum* to the governor, should be at the disposal of the crown.

ON these terms it was understood that the proprietary government was to be dissolved, and that the planters were to consider themselves as legally confirmed in possession of their estates; and to carry into effect the important point, on which the whole arrangement depended (the grant of a perpetual revenue by the assembly) the Lord Willoughby returned to his government in 1663.

IT is not wonderful that the planters, on his lordship's arrival, though devoted to the interests of the crown, should have
loudly

BOOK

III.

loudly murmured at the conduct and determination of the British government in the progress and conclusion of the whole business. Clarendon himself confesses, that the grant to Carlisle was voidable by law. The King therefore laid them under no great obligation in obtaining a surrender of it. Many of the planters had been obliged to quit their native country in consequence of the exertions in support of the royal cause during the civil war: by the late settlement they perceived a regard expressed towards every interest concerned but their own; and the return which they met with, both for their former services, and also for augmenting the trade, revenue, and dominion of the parent state by their recent labours, was a demand of a contribution, which they stated would amount to ten *per cent.* on the clear profits of their estates for ever.

BUT their complaints, though well founded, were unavailing. The king and his governor were too deeply interested to recede. The assembly was called upon to forge chains for themselves and their children; and, if persuasion should fail, force was not only at hand, but was actually employed to compel them to submission. Colonel Farmer, who led the party in opposition, was arrested and sent prisoner to England, on a charge of mutiny and treason, nor was he released till after a tedious and severe confinement. Awed by this example, and sensible that no support could be expected from the people at home, whose privileges lay prostrate at the feet of the restored monarch, the assembly passed an act for the purposes required of

of them ; and their posterity still bear, and it is apprehended will long continue to bear, the burthen of it (*k*)!

CHAP.

I.

THE

(*k*) I have thought it may be satisfactory to the reader to have an opportunity of perusing the Act at large, which I therefore subjoin, premising, that the clause which exempts the lands called the 10,000 acres, and also that which stipulates for the building a sessions-house, and a prison, and providing for all other publick charges incumbent on the government, out of the monies to be raised by the Act, have been equally disregarded by the crown. The session-house and prison were not finished until the year 1730, and the expence (upwards of £. 5,000) was then defrayed by a special tax on the inhabitants; and there was raised by other taxes no less a sum than £. 19,440. 1s. 4d. in three years (viz. from 1745 to 1748) for the repair of the fortifications.

An ACT for settling the Impost on the Commodities of the Growth of this Island; passed the 12th of September, 1663.—N^o 36.

WHEREAS our late Sovereign Lord Charles the First, of blessed memory, did, by his letters patent under the great seal of England, grant and convey unto James Earl of Carlisle and his heirs for ever, the propriety of this island of Barbadoes: And his sacred Majesty that now is having by purchase invested himself in all the rights of the said Earl of Carlisle, and in all other rights which any other person may claim from that patent, or any other; and thereby, more immediately and particularly, hath taken this island into his royal protection. And his most excellent Majesty having, by letters patent under the great seal of England, bearing date the twelfth of June, in the fifteenth year of his reign, appointed his Excellency Francis Lord Willoughby of Parham, captain-general and chief governor of Barbadoes, and all the Caribbee Islands, with full power and authority to grant, confirm, and assure to the inhabitants of the same, and their heirs, for ever, all lands, tenements, and hereditaments under his Majesty's great seal appointed for Barbadoes and the rest of the Caribbee Islands, as, relation being thereunto had, may and doth more at large appear. And whereas, by virtue of the said Earl of Carlisle's patent, divers governors and agents have been sent over hither, with authority to lay out, set, grant, or convey in parcels the lands within this island,

THE conduct of the Lord Chancellor Clarendon in this affair, who indeed appears to have been the person chiefly consulted

to such persons as they should think fit: which was by them, in their respective times, as much as in them lay, accordingly performed. And whereas many have not their grants, warrants, and other evidences for their said lands, and others, by reason of the ignorances of those, want sufficient and legal words to create inheritances in them and their heirs, and others that never recorded their grants, or warrants, and others that can make no proof of any grants or warrants they ever had for their lands; and yet have been long and quiet possessors of the same, and bestowed great charges thereon. And whereas the acknowledgment of forty pounds of cotton per head, and other taxes and compositions formerly raised to the Earl of Carlisle, was held very heavy: For a full remedy thereof for all the defects afore-related, and quieting the possessions and settling the tenures of the inhabitants of this island; Be it enacted by his Excellency Francis Lord Willoughby of Parham, &c. his council, and gentlemen of the assembly, and by the authority of the same, that, notwithstanding the defects afore-related, all the now rightful possessors of lands, tenements, and hereditaments within this island, according to the laws and customs thereof, may at all times repair unto his Excellency for the full confirmation of their estates and tenures, and then and there shall and may receive such full confirmation and assurance, under his Majesty's great seal for this island, as they can reasonably advise or desire, according to the true intent and meaning of this Act. And be it further enacted by the authority afore-said, that all and every the payments of forty pounds of cotton per head, and all other duties, rents, and arrears of rent which have or might have been levied, be from henceforth absolutely and fully released and made void; and that the inhabitants of this island have and hold their several plantations to them and their heirs for ever, in free and common soccage, yielding and paying therefore, at the feast of St. Michael every year, if the same be lawfully demanded, one ear of Indian corn to his Majesty, his heirs and successors, for ever, in full and free discharge of all rents and services for the future whatsoever, in consideration of the release of the said forty pounds, and in consideration of the confirmation of all estates in this island as afore-said, and in acknowledgment of his Majesty's grace and favour in sending to and appointing over us his said Excellency, of whose prudence and moderate government we have heretofore

sulted in it, was afterwards thought so justly reprehensible, as to give occasion to the eighth article of his impeachment by the

C H A P.
I.

tofore had large experience, and do rest most assured thereof for the future. And, forasmuch as nothing conduceth more to the peace and prosperity of any place, and the protection of every single person therein, than that the publick revenue thereof may be in some measure proportioned to the publick charges and expences; and also well weighing the great charges that there must be of necessity in maintaining the honour and dignity of his Majesty's authority here; the publick meeting of the sessions, the often attendance of the council, the reparation of the forts, *the building a sessions-house and a prison, and all other publick charges incumbent on the government*; do, in consideration thereof, give and grant unto his Majesty, his heirs and successors for ever, and do most humbly desire your Excellency to accept these our grants; and we humbly pray your Excellency that it may be enacted, and be it enacted by his Excellency Francis Lord Willoughby of Parham, captain-general and chief governor of this island of Barbadoes, and all other the Caribbee Islands, and by and with the consent of the council and the gentlemen of the assembly, representatives of this island, and by authority of the same, That an imposit or custom be, from and after publication hereof, raised upon the native commodities of this island, after the proportions, and in manner and form as is hereafter set down and appointed; that is to say, upon all dead commodities of the growth or produce of this island, that shall be shipped off the same, shall be paid to our Sovereign Lord the King, his heirs and successors for ever, four and a half in specie for every five score.

And be it further enacted and declared by the authority aforesaid, That if any goods before-mentioned, on which the said custom is imposed, and due, by this act, shall at any time hereafter be shipped or put into any boat or other vessel, to the intent to be carried into any parts beyond the seas, the said imposition due for the same not paid, compounded for, or lawfully tendered to the collectors or their deputies, or not having agreed with the commissioners for that purpose to be appointed, or their deputies for the same, according to the true intent and meaning of the said act, that then, and from thenceforth, shall the said goods be forfeit, the moiety thereof to be to our Sovereign Lord the King, and the other to him that shall inform, seize, and sue for the same in any court of record within this island; which

the House of Commons in the year 1667. From his answer to that article, I have collected (chiefly in his own words) great part

grants are left to your Excellency's own way of levying, in full confidence and assurance that your Excellency will take such course for the collecting and gathering of the said impost, without any charge, duty or fees, as may be most for the ease of the people of this island.

Provided nevertheless, that neither this act, nor any thing therein contained, shall extend or be construed to bar his Majesty, or his said Excellency, from his or their right to any land granted, or any incroachments made upon the sea, since the year one thousand six hundred and fifty, *or to any lands commonly called or known by the name of The Ten Thousand Acres*; the merchants land, granted by the late Earl of Carlisle, or his father, unto Marmaduke Rawden, Esquire, William Perkins, Alexander Bannister, Edmund Forster, Captain Wheatley, and others their associates, on certain covenants and conditions: *Provided also, that the growth and produce of the said lands, mentioned in the preceding proviso, be not liable to any tax, impost, or custom, imposed by this act; any thing in the same seeming to the contrary notwithstanding.*

And be it further enacted by the authority aforesaid, That one act made the seventeenth day of January one thousand six hundred and fifty, intituled, An act importing the customs imposed and granted by the council, and gentlemen of the assembly, to the Right Honourable Francis Lord Willoughby of Parham, Lord Lieutenant-General of the Province of Carolina, and Governor of Barbadoes; as also, his Lordship's confirmation of the right of the inhabitants of this island to their several estates, with the tenure and rent thereon created, be, and is from henceforth repealed, made void, frustrate, of none effect, to all intents, constructions, and purposes whatsoever.

In 1684, the assembly of this island proposed to farm the four and a half *per cent.* for eleven years, for the annual rent of £. 6,000 sterling, to be paid into the exchequer; the governor and council concurred, and it was agreed that £. 7,000 currency *per annum* should be raised by a tax of twenty-one pence per acre, on all lands amounting to ten or more acres. The towns and traders to be taxed £. 500 sterling. An act passed March 19th 1684, for this purpose, and was sent home; but the lords of the committee for trade and plantations reported, that the

part of the account that I have given; and there cannot be a stronger demonstration of the tendency of power to pervert the judgment, and cloud the faculties of the wisest and worthiest of men, than the justification he has offered. He even claims great merit in not having advised the king to possess himself of the whole island of Barbadoes, without any regard to the planters or creditors concerned in the issue.

THE prosecution of this great statesman, however, on this account, was of no advantage to the suffering planters; for in this, as in many other cases, the redress of a grievance, and the punishment of its author, were objects of very distinct consideration. Those who sought the ruin of Clarendon, had nothing less in view than the removal of oppression, from subjects so remote as those of Barbadoes.

IN thus tracing the origin, progress, and termination of the Proprietary Government in this island, I have purposely chosen not to break the thread of my narration, by recording any intermediate events of a nature foreign to that subject. Soon after the establishment of the Commonwealth in England, cir-

commissioners of the customs with whom they had advised, were of opinion that they could make no estimate of the duty, until they had experienced the produce thereof, under the then management, for one year at least; and that the commissioners appointed for managing the said duty in Barbadoes, had assured them the duty would be worth from £. 8,000 to £. 10,000 *per annum*. So the act was repealed.

This proposal to farm the four and a half *per cent.* duty, was made in consequence of Governor Dutton's signifying to the council and assembly, on his arrival in 1680, that his majesty was inclined to commute the tax, for a reasonable recompence.

BOOK

III.

cumstances however arose, respecting this colony, which have produced such effects on the general commerce of Great Britain, as cannot be overlooked in an historical and commercial survey of her West Indian plantations, and of which I shall now give some account.

THE reader has been sufficiently apprized of the attachment of the Barbadians to the regal government. One of the first acts passed by the assembly, after the arrival of the Lord Willoughby for the first time, (1647) was a declaration of their allegiance and fidelity to the unfortunate Charles the First, at that time a prisoner to the army; and on the death of that monarch, the popular resentment against his persecutors ran so high in this island, that the few planters who were suspected to be in the interest of the parliament, thought it necessary to seek protection in England.

To punish such stubborn defenders of a ruined cause, the parliament resolved, in 1651, to send a powerful armament for the reduction of all the English colonies in America and the West Indies; but particularly Barbadoes, at that time the most important and hostile of them all.

MANY, indeed, were the motives which instigated the parliament to this determination. From the beginning of the commotions in the mother-country, the planters, having no other means of conveying the produce of their lands to Europe, had employed in this necessary navigation, many of the ships and seamen of Holland; and at this juncture the English government entertained very hostile intentions towards the subjects

jects of that republick. The reduction of Barbadoes would at once punish the colonists, and enable the English parliament to deprive the English of so profitable an intercourse with them; it would also enrich the treasury of the new government, by the confiscation of many valuable ships and cargoes in the harbours of that and the other islands. The parliament had reason likewise, it was said, to apprehend that Prince Rupert, with a squadron of the king's ships, was about crossing the Atlantick, to secure all the English American possessions for Charles the Second.

Ayscue, who commanded the parliament's forces employed in this expedition, arrived at Barbadoes on the 16th of October 1651, and succeeded at length in bringing the island to capitulate (1): But this was not effected without great difficulty; for he met with so stout a resistance, as determined his employers at home immediately to enforce a scheme they had projected a short time before, of altering the whole system of the Barbadian commerce; by prohibiting by an act of the commonwealth, all foreign shipping from trading with the English plantations; and not permitting any goods to be imported into England, or any of its dependencies, in any other

(1) Ayscue agreed, among other things, that the government should consist of a governor, council, and assembly, according to the ancient and usual custom of the island. The assembly to be chosen by a free and voluntary election of the freeholders of the island in the several parishes. That no taxes, customs, imposts, loans, or excise, should be laid, nor levy made on any of the inhabitants of this island, without their consent in a general assembly; and that all laws that had been made by general assemblies, not repugnant to the laws of England, should be good.

than

BOOK
III.

than English bottoms ; or in ships of that European nation of which the merchandize imported was the genuine growth and manufacture. And thus arose the famous navigation act of this kingdom ; for, immediately after the restoration, its provisions were adopted by Charles the Second, with this addition, that the master and three-fourths of the mariners, should also be English subjects.

WHATEVER advantages the general commerce and navigation of England may have derived from this celebrated law, it must be allowed that its original framers were actuated by no better motives (as a great (*m*) writer hath observed) than those of punishing the planters, and clipping the wings of the Dutch. The inhabitants of Barbadoes, justly considering the law as a chastisement inflicted on them by the Commonwealth for their loyalty to Charles the Second, were filled with amazement and indignation, on finding its provisions adopted and confirmed on the restoration of that monarch. By the regulations of this act, and the establishment of the internal duty on their produce, of which I have so largely spoken, they thought themselves treated with a rigour which bordered on ingratitude, and they predicted the decline of their population, agriculture and wealth, from the effects of those measures. How far their predictions have been accomplished, a comparative state of the island at different periods will demonstrate ; with which, and a few miscellaneous observations, I shall dismiss my present account.

BARBADOES is situated in $13^{\circ} 10'$ N. lat. and in longitude 59° W. from London. It is about twenty-one miles in length,

(*m*) Blackstone.

and

and fourteen in breadth, and contains 106,470 acres of land, most of which is under cultivation. The soil in the low lands is black, somewhat reddish in the shallow parts; on the hills of a chalky marl, and near the sea generally sandy. Of this variety of soil, the black mould is best suited for the cultivation of the cane, and, with the aid of manure, has given as great returns of sugar, in favourable seasons, as any in the West Indies, the prime lands of St. Kitt's excepted.

THAT the soil of this island is, to a great degree, naturally fertile, we must necessarily admit, if we give credit to the accounts which are transmitted down to us, of its ancient population and opulence. We are assured that, about the year 1670, Barbadoes could boast of fifty thousand white, and upwards of one hundred thousand black inhabitants, whose labours, it is said, gave employment to sixty thousand tons of shipping (*n*). I suspect that this account is much exaggerated.

(*n*) The earliest planters of Barbadoes were sometimes reproached with the guilt of forcing or decoying into slavery the Indians of the neighbouring continent. The History of *Inkle and Yarico*, which the Spectator has recorded for the detestation of mankind, took its rise in this island; but happily this species of slavery has been long since abolished: and perhaps such of my readers as have sympathized with the unfortunate Yarico, may not be sorry to hear that she bore her misfortunes with greater philosophy than they have hitherto fancied. The story was first related by *Ligon*, who (after praising poor Yarico's excellent complexion, which, he says, was "a bright bay;" and her small breasts "with nipples of porphyrie") observes, that "she chanc'd afterwards to be with child by a Christian servant, and being very great, walked down to a woode, in which was a pond of water, and there, by the side of the pond, brought herself a-bed, and in three hours came home with the child in her arms, a

"lucky

BOOK

III.

rated. It cannot however be doubted, that the inhabitants of this island have decreased with a rapidity seldom known in any other country. I have now before me authentick returns of the number of its whites in 1724, and of its negroes in 1753: the former consisted of no more than eighteen thousand two hundred and ninety-five, the latter of sixty-nine thousand eight hundred and seventy. In 1786 the numbers were sixteen thousand one hundred and sixty-seven whites, eight hundred and thirty-eight free people of colour, and sixty-two thousand one hundred and fifteen negroes.

It appears too that the annual produce of this island (particularly sugar) has decreased in a much greater proportion than in any other of the West Indian colonies. Postlethwayte states the crop of sugar, in 1736, at 22,769 hogsheads of 13 cwt. which is equal to 19,800 of 15 cwt.; and the author of the *European Settlements*, published in 1761, calculates the average crop at 25,000 hogsheads. As the author first quoted, gives a precise number, it is probable his statement was grounded on good authority. If so, the island has fallen off nearly one-half in the annual growth of its principal staple. On an average of eight years (from 1740 to 1748) the exports were 13,948 hogsheads of sugar, of 15 cwt. 12,884 puncheons

“lusty boy, frolicke and lively.” The crime of Inkle the merchant, however, admits of no palliation; but it is ridiculous enough to hear Abbé Raynal (willing to improve upon Addison) ascribe to it an intended revolt of all the Negroes in Barbadoes, who, as he asserts, moved by indignation at Inkle’s monstrous cruelty, vowed with one accord the destruction of all the Whites; but their plot was discovered the night before it was to have been carried into effect. The *Histoire Philosophique* has a thousand beauties; but it grieves me to say, that, in point of historical accuracy, it is nearly on a level with the History of *Robinson Crusoe*.

of rum of 100 gallons, 60 hogshheads of melassies, 4,667 bags of ginger, 600 bags of cotton, and 327 gourds of aloes. The exports, on an average of 1784, 1785 and 1786, had fallen to 9,554 hogshheads of sugar, 5,448 puncheons of rum, 6,320 bags of ginger, 8,331 bags of cotton; exclusive of some smaller articles, as aloes, sweetmeats, &c. of which the quantities are not ascertained.

THAT the dreadful succession of hurricanes, with which it has pleased the Almighty to visit this, and the other West Indian islands, within the last twelve years, has contributed to this great defalcation, cannot be doubted. The capital of this island was scarce risen from the ashes to which it had been reduced by two dreadful fires, when it was torn from its foundations, and the whole country made a scene of desolation, by the storm of the 10th of October 1780, in which no less than four thousand three hundred and twenty-six of the inhabitants (blacks and whites) miserably perished; and the damage to the country was computed at £.1,320,564. 15 s. sterling.

IT might have been presumed, however, from the favourable seasons which have been experienced for the last three or four years, that the prospect was at length beginning to brighten; but although, since the failure of their sugar plantations, the inhabitants have found some resource in the cultivation of cotton, it does not seem probable, that any encouragement is capable of ever restoring this island to its ancient splendor and opulence; unless it be relieved from the heavy imposition of $4\frac{1}{2}$ per cent. on their exported produce, or the

BOOK
III.

origin of which I have so largely treated. It is to be hoped, that an enlightened minister will one day arise, who will have the courage and virtue to signify to the sovereign, that it is neither becoming the dignity, nor consistent with the character of the common father of all his subjects, to insist on a tribute from a part of them, which, though nominally granted by themselves, was assuredly obtained by fraud and oppression, and of which the continuance is a check to honest industry, and perhaps the immediate cause of the decline of this beautiful and once valuable colony.

BARBADOES is divided into five districts, and eleven parishes; and contains four towns, Bridgetown, Oistins or Charles Town, St. James's (formerly called The Hole) and Speight's Town. Bridgetown, the capital, before it was destroyed by the fires of 1766, consisted of about fifteen hundred houses, which were mostly built of brick; and it is still the seat of government, and may be called the chief residence of the governor, who is provided with a country villa called Pilgrims, situated within a mile of it: his salary was raised by Queen Anne from twelve hundred to two thousand pounds *per annum*, the whole of which is paid out of the exchequer, and charged to the account of the four and a half *per cent.* duty. The form of the government of this island so very nearly resembles that of Jamaica, which has already been described, that it is unnecessary to enter into detail, except to observe that the council is composed of twelve members, and the assembly of twenty-two. The most important variation respects the court of chancery, which in Barbadoes is constituted of the governor

and council, whereas in Jamaica the governor is sole chancellor. On the other hand, in Barbadoes, the governor sits in council, even when the latter are acting in a legislative capacity. This, in Jamaica, would be considered improper and unconstitutional. It may also be observed, that the courts of grand sessions, common pleas and exchequer, in Barbadoes, are distinct from each other, and not, as in Jamaica, united and blended in one supreme court of judicature.

C H A P.

I.

I SHALL close my account of Barbadoes with the following authentick document :

An ACCOUNT of the Number of Vessels, their Tonnage, and Number of Men (including their repeated Voyages) that cleared Outwards from the Island of BARBADOES to all Parts of the World, between the 5th of JANUARY 1787 and the 5th of JANUARY 1788; with the Species, Quantities, and Value of their Cargoes, according to the actual Prices in London, as made out by the Inspector-General of Great Britain.

WINTER B.O.D.	SHIPPING.		SUGAR.		R U M.		MELASSES.		GINGER.		COTTON.		FUSTIC.		MISCEL-ARTICLES.		TOTAL Value in Sterling Money payable to the London Market.		
	N ^o .	Tons.	Men.	Cwt.	qrs.	lb.	Gallons.	Gallons.	Cwt.	qrs.	lb.	lbs.	Cwt.	qrs.	lbs.	Value.	£.	s.	d.
To Great Britain	66	11,221	833	130,442	—	16	28,689	1,089	5,137	2	18	2,640,725	240	—	5	45,948	19	1	4
Ireland	3	317	28	2,114	—	—	25,200	—	124	—	—	65,250	5	—	—	35	7	10	8
American States	54	6,416	579	2,668	—	—	213,400	700	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	38	5	—	4
Br. Am. Colonies	41	3,182	237	2,742	—	—	146,100	11,700	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	69	16	—	4
Foreign W. Indies	78	5,694	458	—	—	—	2,000	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	32	—	—	—
Africa	1	87	7	—	—	—	100	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	207	—	—
																	8	15	—
Total	243	26,917	1,942	137,766	—	16	415,489	13,489	5,661	2	18	2,705,975	245	—	5	46,124	7	11	10
																	539,605	14	10

Since the First Edition of this Work was published, the Author has received from Barbados the following authentic Return.

PRODUCE of the Island of BARBADOES for the last Seven Years, exported.

A. D.	SUGAR.		MELASSES.		R U M.		GINGER.		ALOES.		COTTON.	
	Hds.	Trees. Barls.	Hds. Trees.	Hds. Trees. Barls.	Bags and Barls.	Hds. Trees. Gourds.	Bags	lbs.				
1786	8,659	82 3,419	114 —	5,198 39 693	8,070	1 0 409	8,864					
1787	11,929	183 2,415	87 37	3,812 27 614	6,095	1 1 685	10,511					
1788	10,359	63 3,674	— —	3,386 607	5,164	— — 303	—	1,894,365				
1789	9,021	96 4,620	— —	3,172 197	5,180	— — 372	—	1,327,840				
1790	9,098	123 2,955	— —	2,311 261	4,565	— — 475	—	1,287,088				
1791	11,333	60 2,346	30 —	3,008 411	3,735	— — 770	—	1,163,157				
1792	17,073	125 2,698	188 —	5,064 512	3,646	— — 515	—	974,178				

• From this great Increase in the Export of Sugar, and Decrease in that of the Minor Staples, it seems probable that the advanced Price of that Article in Europe, has encouraged the Cultivation of that Article on Plantations which had formerly been abandoned or appropriated to a different line of Culture.

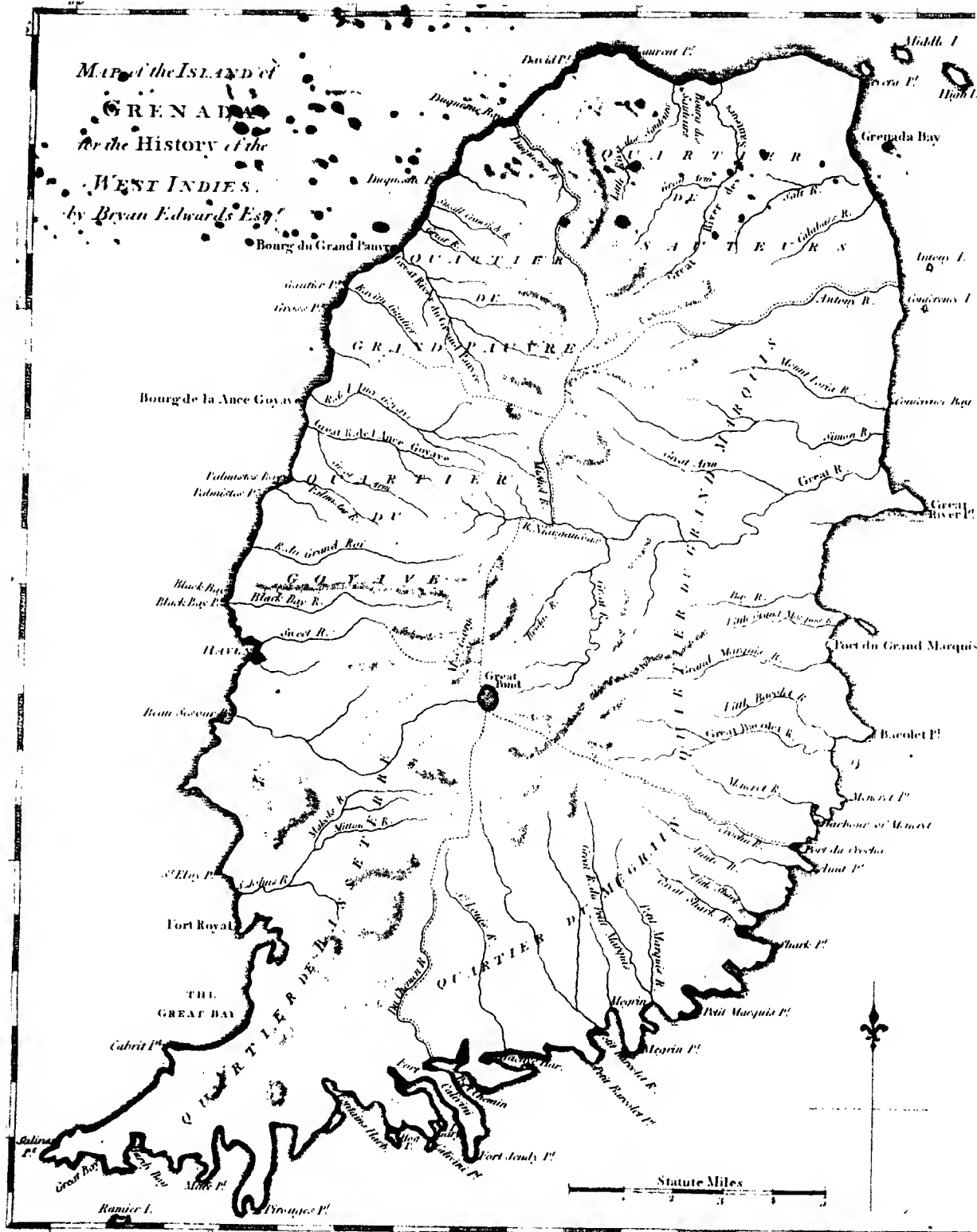
ACCOUNT of the Number of NEGROES in BARBADOES, and Amount of the PUBLIC TAXES for the last Seven Years.

A. D.	No. of Slaves	Do. imported	Amount of Taxes.
1786	62,115	511	£ 10,138
1787	62,712	528	13,538
1788	63,557	2,585	8,382
1789	63,870	556	5,554
1790	64,068	131	13,482
1791	63,250	426	6,203
1792	64,530	744	9,443

• The Taxes thus levied on the Publick consist of a Capitation Tax on Negroes—A Tax on Sugar Mills, Dwelling Houses, and Carriages, together with an Excise, &c. on Wines imported. Besides all which there is a Proportional Tax on Land amounting on Average throughout the Island to about Two Shillings per Acre, and an Allowance in Labour for the

MAP of the ISLAND of
GRENADA
 for the History of the
WEST INDIES.

by Bryan Edwards Esq.



CHAP. II.

Grenada and its Dependencies.

First discovery, name and inhabitants.—French invasion and establishment in 1650.—War with, and extermination of the natives.—The island and its dependencies conveyed to the Count de Cerillac.—Misconduct and punishment of the deputy-governor.—The colony reverts to the crown of France.—State of the island in 1700.—And again in 1762, when captured by the English.—Stipulations in favour of the French inhabitants.—First measures of the British government.—Claim of the crown to levy a duty of 4½ per cent. on produce exported.—Arguments for and objections against the measure.—Decision of the court of King's Bench on this important question.—Strictures on some positions advanced by the lord-chief-justice on this occasion.—Transactions within the colony.—Royal instructions in favour of the Roman Catholick capitulants.—Internal dissensions.—Defenceless state.—French invasion in 1779.—Brave defence of the garrison.—Unconditional surrender.—Hardships exercised towards the English planters and their creditors.—Redress given by the court of France.—Grenada, &c. restored to Great Britain by the peace of 1783.—Present state of the colony in respect to cultivation, productions and exports; government and population.

CHAP.
II.

GRENADA was discovered by, and received its name from, Christopher Columbus in his third voyage, in the year 1498. He found it possessed by a numerous and warlike people,

BOOK

III.

people, amongst whom it does not appear that the Spaniards ever attempted to force a settlement. They had a nobler prize to contend for on the continent, and a century elapsed before the other nations of Europe considered the regions of the new world as countries, wherein all men might seize on what suited their convenience, without any regard to the proper inhabitants. Thus the Charaibes of Grenada happily remained in peaceful obscurity until the year 1650, when the avarice and ambition of a restless individual devoted them to destruction.

THIS person was Du Parquet, the French governor of Martinico, nephew and heir of Desnambuc, of whom memorable mention is made in the annals of St. Christopher. Notwithstanding that the French establishment in Martinico was itself of recent date, and that a great part of that island still remained uncultivated; and although another establishment was, at the same time, begun by the same nation, in the large and fertile island of Guadaloupe, yet such was the rapaciousness of this people, that upwards of two hundred hardy ruffians were easily collected by Du Parquet's encouragement for an attempt on Grenada; and it is apparent, from the nature and magnitude of the preparations, that it was considered as an enterprize of difficulty and danger.

THE history of this expedition, which took place in June 1650, is related at large by Father du Tertre, whose account exhibits such a monstrous mixture of fanaticism and knavery in the conduct of its leaders, as cannot be contemplated without indignation

indignation and horror. Although it is evident that the French had not the smallest justifiable pretence for this invasion, yet we find the commanders administering the holy sacrament, in the most solemn manner, to all the soldiers on their embarkation; and again, on their landing, Du Parquet, causing a cross to be erected, compelled them to kneel down before it, and join in devout prayer to Almighty God, for success to their enterprize.

THIS commander seems however to have had a few scruples of conscience concerning the justice of his proceedings; for, having been received and entertained with the utmost kindness and cordiality by the natives (contrary to his expectation, and perhaps to his wishes) he thought it necessary to affect some little regard to moderation, by pretending to open a treaty with the chief of the Charaibes for the purchase of the country. He gave the natives (observes Du Tertre) *some knives and hatchets, and a large quantity of glass beads, besides two bottles of brandy for the chief himself*; and thus (continues he) was the island fairly ceded to the French nation by the natives themselves in lawful purchase! After this notable transaction, it is not wonderful that the French should consider the refusal of the poor savages to confirm the agreement, as contumacy and rebellion.

DUPARQUET, having thus established a colony in Grenada, and built a fort for its protection, left the government of the island to a kinsman, named Le Compte, a man, according to Du Tertre, who possessed very singular talents for government;

BOOK

III.



and was remarkable for clemency and humanity. We find this gentleman however, eight months afterwards, engaged in a most bloody war with the Charaibes; in the prosecution of which he authorized such acts of cruelty as furnish a portrait of him very different from that which the historian has exhibited. On receiving news of the revolt of the natives, Du Parquet sent a reinforcement of three hundred men from Martinico, with orders to extirpate the natives altogether; but Le Compte seems not to have wanted any incitement to acts of barbarity; for Du Tertre admits that he had already proceeded to murder, without mercy, every Charaibe that fell into his hands; not sparing even the women and children.

OF the manner in which this humane and accomplished commander, and his civilized followers, conducted hostilities against these miserable people, we may form an idea, from a circumstance that occurred in one of their expeditions, of which the reverend historian concludes his narrative as follows: "Forty of the Charaibes were massacred on the spot. About forty others, who had escaped the sword, ran towards a precipice, from whence they cast themselves headlong into the sea, and miserably perished. A beautiful young girl of twelve or thirteen years of age, who was taken alive, became the object of dispute between two of our officers, each of them claiming her as his lawful prize; a third coming up, put an end to the contest, by shooting the girl through the head. The place from which these brabarians threw themselves into the sea, has been called ever since *le Morne des Sauteurs* (a). Our people

(a) Leapers Hill.

(having.

(having lost but one man in the expedition) proceeded in the next place to set fire to the cottages, and root up the provisions of the savages, and, having destroyed, or taken away, every thing belonging to them, *returned in high spirits," (bien joyeux).*

By a series of such enormities, the whole race of Charaibes that possessed Grenada in 1650, was speedily exterminated, and the French, having in this manner butchered all the natives, proceeded, in the next place, to massacre each other.

THE particulars of this civil contest may, without injury to my readers, be omitted. I shall therefore only observe, that the supreme authority of Du Parquet and his lieutenant, was at length established in Grenada; but the expence which had attended the plantation from its outset, and the maintenance of the force which Du Parquet had been compelled to furnish in support of his authority, had so greatly injured his fortune, as to induce him to look out for a purchaser of all his rights and possessions in this island and its dependencies. In 1656 such a purchaser offered in the Count de Cerillac, to whom the whole was conveyed for 30,000 crowns.

THE conduct of Cerillac towards the inhabitants of his newly acquired dominion was highly injudicious and oppressive. He appointed a governor of so arrogant and rapacious a disposition, and supported him in his extortions with such obstinacy, as to compel the most respectable of the settlers to quit the country and seek for safety under a milder government. At

BOOK

III.

length the people that remained took the administration of justice into their own hands; by seizing on the person of the governor, and bringing him to a public trial. The criminal was condemned to be hanged; but he pleaded noble birth, and demanded the honour of decollation. His request would have been granted, but unluckily an expert executioner in the business of beheading could not readily be found; the judges therefore compounded the matter with his excellency, by consenting that he should be shot, and he suffered in that mode with great composure.

SOME years after this, Monsieur de Cerillac, the proprietor, receiving, as it may be supposed, but little profit from his capital, conveyed all his rights and interest in Grenada, &c. to the French West-Indian company; whose charter being abolished in 1674, the island from thenceforward became vested in the crown of France.

UNDER the various revolutions and calamities which had thus attended this unfortunate plantation, it may well be imagined that cultivation had made but little progress in it; but although order and submission were at length introduced by the establishment of the royal authority, various causes concurred to keep the colony in a state of poverty and depression for many years afterwards. Even so late as 1700, if Raynal has been rightly informed, the island contained no more than 251 whites and 525 blacks; who were employed on 3 plantations of sugar, and 52 of indigo.

AFTER the peace of Utrecht, the government of France began to turn its attention towards her West Indian possessions. Grenada however, for many years, partook less of its care than the rest. It had no constant correspondence with the mother country: some oppressive regulations of the farmers-general ruined the cultivation of one of its staples, tobacco: and the planters had not the means of obtaining a supply of negroes from Africa, sufficient for the purpose of cultivating sugar to any extent. These inconveniencies led them into a smuggling intercourse with the Dutch: a resource which at length changed their circumstances for the better; encreased their numbers and occasioned a great part of the country to be settled, insomuch that when, in the year 1762, the fortune of war made the English masters of this and the rest of the French Charaibbean Islands, Grenada and the Grenadines are said to have yielded annually, in clayed and muscovado sugar, a quantity equal to about 11,000 hogsheads of muscovado of 15 cwt. each, and about 27,000 lbs. of indigo.

GRENADA surrendered on capitulation in February 1762, and, with its dependencies, was finally ceded to Great Britain by the definitive treaty of peace at Paris on the 10th of February 1763; St. Lucea being restored at the same time to France. The chief stipulations in favour of the inhabitants, as well by the treaty, as by the articles of capitulation, were these; 1st. That, as they would become by their surrender, subjects of Great Britain, they should enjoy their properties and privileges, and pay taxes, *in like manner as the rest of his Majesty's subjects of the other British Leeward Islands.* 2dly, With respect.

respect to religion, they were put on the same footing as the inhabitants of Canada, viz. liberty was given them to exercise it according to the rites of the Romish church, *as far as the laws of Great Britain permitted*. 3dly, Such of the inhabitants of Grenada as chose to quit the island, should have liberty so to do, and eighteen months should be allowed them to dispose of their effects.

THE island and its dependencies being thus become a British colony, one of the first measures of government was to issue a proclamation under the great seal, bearing date the 7th of October 1763, wherein, amongst other things, it is declared “ that all persons inhabiting in, or resorting to, the island of Grenada, might confide in the royal protection for the enjoyment of the benefit of the laws of England, with the right of appeal to the king in council, as fully as the inhabitants of the other British Colonies in America under the king’s immediate government.”—It also sets forth, “ that the king, by letters patent under the great seal, had given express power and direction to the governor, as soon as the state and circumstances of the colony would admit thereof, with the advice and consent of the council, and the representatives of the people, to make, constitute, and ordain laws, statutes, and ordinances for the good government thereof, as near as may be agreeably to the laws of England, and under such regulations and restrictions as are used in the other British colonies.”

THIS proclamation was followed by another, dated the 26th of March 1764, inviting purchasers upon certain terms and conditions. C H A P.
II.

THE governor thus said to have been appointed, was general Melville, whose commission however did not bear date until the 9th of April 1764, and the assembly which he was directed to summon, met for the first time in 1765; previous to which, the British inhabitants were irresistibly called to the discussion of a great constitutional question; of which it is proper I should now give some account.

THE question arose from the information, that the crown, conceiving itself entitled by the terms of the capitulation to the duty of $4\frac{1}{2}$ *per cent.* upon all produce exported from the newly ceded islands, as paid at Barbadoes, &c. had issued letters patent, bearing date the 20th July 1764, ordering and directing, by virtue of the prerogative royal, that from and after the 29th of September, then next ensuing, such duty or import in specie, should be levied in Grenada; in lieu of all customs and duties formerly paid to the French king.

WE have seen, in the history of Barbadoes, in what manner the inhabitants of that island became subject to the duty in question; and to what purposes the money was expressly stipulated to be applied; but, unjustifiable as were the means by which that imposition was originally established in Barbadoes, the grant was, apparently, the grant of the people themselves, by their representatives in their legislative capacity. Even
Charles.

BOOK

II.

Charles the II^d, in whose reign the grant passed, though a rapacious and unprincipled monarch, did not openly claim the right of laying taxes by his own authority in a colony which had an assembly of its own, competent to that purpose. The king was ready enough to overawe, or to corrupt the members which composed that assembly; but he left them the form and semblance at least, of a free government.

IN defence of the present measure, it was urged that Grenada being a conquered country, the king was invested with the power of putting the inhabitants under what form of government he thought best; that he might have granted them what terms of capitulation, and have concluded what articles of peace with them he saw fit; and further, that the assurance to the inhabitants of Grenada, in the articles of capitulation, that they should enjoy their properties and privileges in like manner as the other his Majesty's subjects in the British Leeward Islands, necessarily implied that they were bound to submit to the same consequences of their being subjects as were submitted to by the inhabitants of those islands; one of which was the payment of the duty in question. It was said therefore that the demand of this duty was most reasonable, equitable and political; for that it was only putting Grenada, as to duties, on the same footing with all the British Leeward Islands. If Grenada paid more, it would be detrimental to her, if less, it would be detrimental to the other Leeward Islands.

ON the other side, it was contended, that the letters patent were void on two points, the first was "that although they had

had been granted before the proclamation of the 7th of October 1763, yet the king could not exercise such a legislative power over a conquered country."—The second point was, "that although the king had sufficient power and authority, before the 7th of October 1763, to do such a legislative act, he had divested himself of such authority previous to the letters patent of the 20th of July 1764,"

THE crown however persisting in its claim, and the inhabitants in opposing it, issue was joined on the arguments that I have stated, and the question was at length referred to a solemn adjudication before the judges of the Court of King's Bench in England (*b*).

THE case was elaborately argued in Westminster-hall, four several times; and in Michaelmas term 1774, Lord chief justice Mansfield pronounced judgment, *against the crown*. The consequence was, that the duty in question was abolished, not only in Grenada, but also in the ceded islands of Dominica, St. Vincent, and Tobago.

IT may be reasonably supposed that the inhabitants of all these islands had sufficient cause for exultation at a verdict so favourable to their interests; but the circumstances on which the decision was founded, and the doctrines which were promulgated along with it, became the subject of much animadversion; and indeed (if I may obtrude my own opinion in such

(*b*) The case is related at large in Cowper's Reports.

BOOK
III.

a case) they appear to me to be of a dangerous and unconstitutional tendency.

THE noble and venerable judge who pronounced the opinion of the Court, rested the determination solely on the circumstance, that the proclamations of October 1763, and March 1764, were of prior date to the letters patent; observing, that the king had precluded himself from the exercise of legislative authority over Grenada, *before* the letters patent were issued. “Through inattention, he said, of the king’s servants, in inverting the order in which the instruments should have passed, the last act was contradictory to, and a violation of the first, and on that account null and void.” But, although the noble lord confined the mere legal question to a narrow compass, he judged it necessary, at the same time, to enter on a wide and extensive field of discussion in support of the regal authority over conquered countries; maintaining “that it is left to the king to grant or refuse a capitulation;—if he refuses, *and puts the inhabitants to the sword, or otherwise exterminates them*, all the lands belong to himself. If he receives the inhabitants under his protection, and grants them their property, he has a power to fix *such terms and conditions as he thinks proper*. He may (said the noble judge) yield up the conquest, or retain it, *on what terms he pleases*, and change part, or the whole, of the law, or political form of its government, *as he sees best*.” In reply to an observation, that no adjudged case, in point, had been adduced, the noble lord declared that this was not to be wondered at, “inasmuch as no question was ever started before
but

but that the king has a right *to a legislative authority* over a conquered country ;” and he quoted an opinion of the crown lawyers in 1722, in respect of Jamaica. The assembly of that island being refractory, it was referred to Sir Philip Yorke and Sir Clement Wearge to know “ what could be done if the assembly should obstinately continue to withhold all the usual supplies.” They reported, that “ if Jamaica was still to be considered as a *conquered island*, the king had a right to levy taxes upon the inhabitants ; but if it was to be considered in the same light *as the other colonies*, no tax could be imposed on the inhabitants, but by *an assembly of the island*, or by *an act of parliament*.”

It is impossible, I think, not to perceive, throughout these, and other parts of the learned judge’s argument, a certain degree of bias arising from the unhappy dissensions which, about that period, broke out into a civil war between Great Britain and her colonies ; in the progress of which, it is believed, this noble person distinguished himself as an active partizan, and a powerful advocate for the unconditional supremacy of the mother-country. I might otherwise be chargeable with great arrogance in presuming to differ from such weight of authority ; but surely it will be permitted me to examine the doctrine maintained on this occasion, by the test of those cases, which the noble judge himself adduced in its support. In such an examination, plain argument and common sense may supply the subtleties of legal refinement, and the want of professional learning.

BOOK

III.

THE cases chiefly relied on by the learned judge, were those of Ireland, Wales, Berwick and New York; in all which places it was asserted that the king, after their conquest, had, of his own authority, exercised the powers of legislature, by introducing an alteration of their former laws, and establishing a new system of government over the inhabitants. “No man (observed his lordship, in the case of Ireland,) ever said, that the change in the laws of that country was made by the parliament of England: no man ever said the crown could not do it.”

WITH the utmost deference, however, to the sentiments of this great and enlightened lawyer, I presume to think that the question was not simply, Whether the crown alone, or the parliament of England, had the right of exercising the authority contended for?—I will even admit that the interposition of parliament was unnecessary. Still however the main question remains to be answered, which is, *To what extent may the royal prerogative in such cases be exerted?* Did the noble judge mean to assert, that conquest destroys *all* the rights of the conquered, and that the king, in changing their laws and form of government, has a right to prescribe to them, *not merely the English constitution*;—but any other system he thinks best? If such was the opinion, it may be affirmed that the cases which his lordship adduced in support of his argument, warrant no such conclusion.

THE first case was that of Ireland. “The fact, says the noble lord, comes out clearly to be, that Ireland *received the laws of England* by the charters and commands of Henry II. King John and Henry III.”

OF Wales, the noble lord observes “ that the statute of Wales (12 Edward I.) is certainly no more than *regulations*, made by the king in his council for the government of Wales, and that the king governed it as a conquest; but let us hear on this subject the learned judge Blackstone. “ This territory, observes Blackstone, being then entirely re-annexed (by a kind of feudal resumption) to the dominion of the crown of England, or, as the statute of Rutland expresses it, *terra Walliae cum incolis suis, prius regi jure feodali subjecta*, (of which homage was the sign) *jam in proprietatis dominium totaliter et cum integritate conversa est, et coronae regni Angliae tanquam pars corporis ejusdem annexa et unita*. But the finishing stroke to their independency, was given by the statute 27 Henry VIII. c. 26. which at the same time gave the utmost advancement to their civil prosperity, by admitting them to a *thorough communication of laws with the subjects of England*. Thus were this brave people gradually conquered into the enjoyment of true liberty; being insensibly put upon the same footing, and made fellow citizens with their conquerors.”

ANOTHER case was that of Berwick, which, observed the noble lord, “ after the conquest of it, was governed by charters from the crown, without the interposition of parliament, till the reign of James I.” The noble judge would have stated this case more fairly, had he said that Edward I. *at the request of the inhabitants*, confirmed to them the enjoyment of their ancient laws; but that “ its constitution was put on an English footing, by a charter of king James.” These are the very words of Blackstone.

BOOK

III.

THE case next quoted by the learned judge was that of New York, which was conquered from the Dutch in 1664, and, like Wales, remained in possession of most of its former inhabitants. "King Charles II. (observes the noble judge) changed the form of their constitution and political government; by granting it to the duke of York, to hold of his crown under all the regulations contained in the *letters patent*."—So far is true; but what followed? This duke of York (afterwards James II.) was a man whose principles of government were in the highest degree repugnant and inimical to those of the English constitution. Accordingly he attempted at first to introduce into the newly acquired country, a system little consonant to British freedom; but he was disappointed and defeated. He was compelled, much against his inclination, to allow the people to choose deputies to represent them in the legislature; and these deputies actually voted "that all the ordinances which had been made by the governor and council, before the people were admitted to a share in the legislature, were invalid, *because they were passed in a manner repugnant to the constitution of England*."

FROM this recital, it is I think evident that the noble and learned judge mistook the *gist* of the question; or rather confounded together two things which are totally distinct and repugnant in their nature; for he appears to have considered the prerogative in the king, of *extending to his newly acquired subjects, the benefits of the English constitution*, as equivalent to the right of ruling them by whatever constitution or system of government he pleases; or, *by none at all*.

It would seem then that, if the cases which have been adduced prove any thing, they prove that the crown neither has prescribed, nor could prescribe, any form of government incompatible with the principles of the British constitution, to any colony or territory whatever, whether acquired by conquest or settlement;—and good authorities are not wanting in support of this doctrine. “The king of Great Britain (says an excellent writer (c) although at the head of a free state, may, in his own right, hold other states, under a form of government *that is not free*; as he does, for instance, the states of the electorate of Hanover. He may too even as king of Great Britain, by virtue of his prerogative and as generalissimo of the empire, hold a conquered state (for the time being) under a form of government that is not free; that is, under military law: but, in the instant that such conquered state is, by treaty of peace, or otherwise, ceded to the crown of Great Britain, in that instant it imbibes the spirit of the constitution, it is naturalized; it is assimilated to the government, it is governable and to be governed by, and under all those powers, with which the governing power of king, lords and commons is invested by the constitution; but it is not governable, neither is to be governed, by any powers which the governing power of king, lords and commons does not possess from the constitution: as for example, it cannot be governed on the principles of slavery; because the governing power of king, lords and commons is appointed by the constitution to govern on the principles of liberty.” Surely it is a proposition absurd and monstrous on the very face of it, to say that a limited monarch, in a free state, may govern any part of the dominions of such a

(c) Mr. Estwick!

BOOK

III.

state in an arbitrary and tyrannical manner. A body of subjects so governed, would, if sufficiently numerous, be fit instruments to enslave the rest!

THE intelligent reader will admit the vast importance of this question, both to the present age and to posterity; and perceive how greatly the dearest interests of men, who, in the contingencies of war, shall hereafter fall under the British dominion, may possibly be concerned in its discussion. To such readers no apology will be necessary, for the detail which I have thought it my duty to give on a subject of such constitutional magnitude.—I now return to transactions with the colony.

It has been stated that the first assembly met in 1765. At that time none of the French Roman catholick inhabitants claimed a right, or even expressed a desire, of becoming members, either of the council or assembly: but in 1768 the governor received instructions from the crown, to admit two of them into the council, and to declare others to be eligible into the assembly, on taking the oaths of allegiance and supremacy. The governor was directed also to include the names of certain persons of this description, in the commission of the peace.

THESE instructions, and the measures which were taken in consequence thereof, gave rise to violent commotions and party divisions in the colony, which, being embittered by religious controversy, continue to divide the inhabitants to the present hour. It were highly unbecoming in me (a stranger to the island) to flatter the passions of one party or the other; and I should

should readily consign all the circumstances to oblivion, but that it is my duty as an historian, to state without prejudice such particulars as may, in their consequences, affect the general welfare of the colony, that the errors of one age may serve as a lesson to the next.

THE opposition that was given by the British inhabitants to the appointment of any of the Roman catholick capitulants to seats in the legislature, arose, I believe, originally from an idea that the royal instructions in this case were in direct violation of the test act of Charles II. which requires "that all persons enjoying any place of trust or profit shall, in addition to the oaths of allegiance and supremacy, subscribe a declaration against the doctrine of transubstantiation in the sacrament of the Lord's supper." By the king's instructions, above cited, his Roman catholick subjects of Grenada were declared eligible without subscribing to this declaration.

LIBERAL and enlightened minds at this day are not easily reconciled to the doctrine, that an adherence to mere speculative opinions in matters of faith, ought to drive any loyal subject from the service of his country, or deprive a man (otherwise entitled) of the enjoyment of those honours and distinctions, the distribution of which the wisdom of the laws has assigned to the sovereign. Much less will it be thought that such a man is unworthy of that confidence which his neighbours and fellow citizens, who are best acquainted with his principles and virtues, and are themselves of a different persuasion, shall think fit to repose in him. At the same time, it

BOOK

III.

must be acknowledged, that the recent and then depending claim in the crown, to lay taxes on Grenada by its own authority, gave the inhabitants just cause of apprehension, that the royal instructions in the present case were founded, in like manner, on a pretension to legislative authority, subversive of their own colonial assembly.

ON the other hand, it was alledged that the test act was never meant to extend to the British plantations; that it was confined, both in its letter and spirit, to the kingdom of England and the town of Berwick; and though it were true that it is the practice of the courts of Grenada to adopt both the common and statute law of England, it was contended nevertheless, that the adoption could extend only to such of the English statutes, as were applicable to the peculiar situation of the colony. It was urged, that the act in question originated in an age of religious frenzy and fanatic violence. The authority of history was adduced to prove that it was particularly promoted by a worthless individual, from animosity to the Duke of York, who was obliged, in consequence of it, to resign the great office of Lord High Admiral. A law thus founded and supported, instead of being considered as suited to the circumstances of a new and infant colony, ought, it was said, to be expunged from the English statute book.

WHAT influence these, or other considerations, had on the British Ministry, I presume not to say. It is certain that the king refused to revoke his instructions; in consequence whereof the most zealous of the protestant members of the assembly

bly

bly declining to attend, it was seldom that a house could be formed. Publick affairs soon fell into the utmost confusion, and in this state of faction and perplexity, the island continued, until its re-capture by the French in 1779.

ON this occasion, charges were brought again the French inhabitants which I will not repeat, because I have no other evidence to support them than the mutual reproaches, and reciprocal accusations of the parties. The complaints indeed which were loudly made on the part of the French, of an usurpation of their dearest rights by the prevailing faction, seemed to imply that they relied rather on justification than denial.

THE French ministry however required no other encouragement for attacking this island, than the defenceless state in which all the British settlements in the West Indies were at that juncture notoriously left. The hopeless and destructive war in North America had drawn to its vortex all the powers, resources, and exertions of Great Britain. Already had Dominica and St. Vincent become a sacrifice to that unfortunate contest; when it fell to the lot of Grenada to experience her share of the general misfortune.

ON the 2d of July 1779, a French armament, consisting of a fleet of 25 ships of the line, 10 frigates, and 5000 troops, under the command of the Count D'Estaing, appeared off the harbour and town of St. George: the whole force of the island was composed of 90 men of the 48th regiment, 300

BOOK

III.

militia of the island, and 150 seamen from the merchant ships; and its fortifications consisted chiefly of an entrenchment, which had been hastily thrown up round the summit of the Hospital-hill. This entrenchment the Count D'Estaing invested the next day, at the head of 3,000 of his best forces, which he led up in three columns, and after a hard conflict and the loss of 300 men, carried the lines. Never did so small a body of men make a nobler defence against such inequality of numbers. The governor (Lord Macartney) and the remains of his little garrison, immediately retired into the old fort, at the mouth of the harbour, which however was wholly untenable, being commanded by the Hospital-hill battery, the guns of which having been most unfortunately left unspiked, were now turned against them. At day-break, the French opened a battery of twenty-four pounders against the walls of the old fort. In this situation, the governor and inhabitants had no resource but in the hopes of obtaining favourable terms of capitulation; and herein they were disappointed. Their proposals were scornfully rejected, and such hard and extraordinary terms offered and insisted on by Count D'Estaing, as left them no alternative but the sacrifice of their honour, or an unconditional surrender. They embraced the latter; and it must be acknowledged, that the protection which was afforded to the helpless inhabitants of the town, and their property, not only while the treaty was depending, but also after the surrender of the island at discretion, reflected the highest lustre on the discipline, as well as humanity of the conquerors. Protection and safe-guards were granted on every application, and thus a town was saved from plunder, which by the strict rules of

of war, might have been given up to an exasperated soldiery.

C H A P.

II.

IT is to be lamented that the subsequent conduct of the French government of Grenada, towards its new subjects, was not quite so generous. By an ordinance of the Count de Durat, the new governor, they were enjoined, under the penalty of military execution and confiscation of property, from the payment, directly or indirectly, of all debts due by them to British subjects, residing in any part of the British dominions; and by another ordinance, the prohibition was extended to such debts owing to the subjects of the united provinces of Holland, as were guaranteed by any of the subjects of Great Britain. The Count D'Estaing had inserted clauses to the same effect, in the form of capitulation, which he had tendered to the garrison, and it was those prohibitions that induced the British inhabitants, with an honest indignation, to risque the consequence of an unconditional surrender, rather than submit to them. With the virtue and integrity that it is to be hoped will for ever distinguish the British character, they considered no sacrifice so great as the violation of that confidence, which had been reposed in them by their friends and creditors in Europe. But the ordinances went still further. By the regulations which they contained, it was enacted that all the estates belonging to English absentees, should be put into the hands of certain persons to be nominated by the governor, called *conservators*; and the produce be paid into the public treasury. Thus was plunder sanctioned by authority; and the absent proprietors were not the only victims. The shameful facility

BOOK

III.



facility with which every French claimant was put into possession of estates, to which the slightest pretension was set up, gave the resident planters reason to apprehend, that the only indulgence they were to expect, was that which Polyphemus promised Ulysses, *of being devoured the last*.

MOST of these injurious proceedings, and various acts of personal oppression, inflicted on the conquered inhabitants of Grenada, were, by them, imputed to the too great influence with the governor of their late fellow subjects and neighbours, the French planters; and it is much easier to account for, than to justify their conduct. Let it be remembered, however, to the honour of the French nation, that these nefarious proceedings were no sooner made known to the court of France, than they were disapproved and reprobated. The appointment of conservators was abolished, and restoration ordered to be made of the estates of absent proprietors. Redress was likewise very generally given, by appeals in the last resort, to such of the resident planters as had been illegally deprived of their possessions. But it was not long before the island itself reverted to the British dominion.

GRENADA and the Grenadines were restored to Great Britain, with all the other captured islands in the West Indies (Tobago excepted) by the general pacification which took place in January 1783; a pacification upon which, whatever may be its general merits, it is impossible but that the English sugar planters (except perhaps those of the ceded island) must reflect with grateful satisfaction. It might indeed have been wished,

wished, by those who have at heart the present repose and future prosperity of mankind, that some salutary regulations had been framed, at the same time, for preventing the revival of those unhappy national animosities among the white inhabitants of Grenada, of which I have so largely spoken, and which, I am sorry to be informed, were renewed on the restoration of the island with additional force and aggravated violence. It is not my intention however to enter into any further detail on the subject. As a friend to the interests of humanity, independent of religious opinions, and locality of birth, I shall rejoice if means can be found to restore to this little community that peace, confidence and unanimity, without which its inhabitants must be a ruined people, and a prey to the first invader.

HAVING thus, as I conceive, sufficiently treated of the historical and political concerns of this valuable colony, I shall conclude with a short display of its present state, in respect of soil, population, productions and exports; premising, that many of those little islands which are called the Grenadines, no longer appertain to the government of Grenada. By an arrangement of the British administration, which has taken effect since the peace, a line of division passes in an east and west direction, between Carriacou and Union island. The former of these, and some smaller islands south of it, are all that are now comprised in the Grenada government; Union island, with all the little islands adjoining, to the north, being annexed to the government of St. Vincent.

BOOK

III.

GRENADA contains about 80,000 acres of land; of which although no less than 72,141 acres paid taxes in 1776, and may therefore be supposed fit for cultivation, yet the quantity actually cultivated has never exceeded 50,000 acres. The face of the country is mountainous, but not inaccessible in any part, and it abounds with springs and rivulets. To the north and the east, the soil is a brick mould; the same, or nearly the same, as that of which mention has been made in the history of Jamaica. On the west side, it is a rich black mould on a substratum of yellow clay. To the south, the land in general is poor, and of a reddish hue, and the same extends over a considerable part of the interior country. On the whole, however, Grenada appears to be fertile in a high degree, and by the variety, as well as excellence, of its returns, seems adapted to every tropical production. The exports of the year 1776, from Grenada and its dependencies, were 14,012,157 lbs. of muscavado, and 9,273,607 lbs. of clayed sugar; 818,700 gallons of rum; 1,827,166 lbs. of coffee, 457,719 lbs. of cacao, 91,943 lbs. of cotton, 27,638 lbs. of indigo, and some smaller articles; the whole of which, on a moderate computation, could not be worth less, at the ports of shipping, than £.600,000 sterling, excluding freight, duties, insurance and other charges. It deserves to be remembered too, that the sugar was the produce of 106 plantations only, and that they were worked by 18,293 negroes, which was therefore rather more than one hoghead of muscavado sugar, of 16 cwt. from the labour of each negro, old and young, employed in the cultivation of that commodity; a prodigious return, equalled, I believe, by no other British island in the West Indies, St. Christopher's excepted.—The exports of

1787 will be given hereafter : they will be found, except in one or two articles, to fall greatly short of those of 1776 ; a circumstance for which I know not wholly how to account.

CHAP.
II.

THIS island is divided into six parishes, St. George, St. David, St. Andrew, St. Patrick, St. Mark and St. John ; and its chief dependency, *Cariacou*, forms a seventh parish. It is only since the restoration of Grenada to Great Britain by the peace of 1783, that an island law has been obtained for the establishment of a protestant clergy. This act passed in 1784, and provides stipends of £. 330 currency, and £. 60 for house-rent *per annum*, for five clergymen, *viz.* one for the town and parish of St. George, three for the other five out-parishes of Grenada, and one for *Cariacou*. Besides these stipends, there are valuable glebe lands, which had been appropriated to the support of the Roman catholic clergy, whilst that was the established religion of Grenada. These lands, according to an opinion of the attorney and solicitor-general of England (to whom a question on this point was referred by the crown) became vested in his Majesty as publick lands, on the restoration of the island to the British government, and I believe have since been applied by the colonial legislature, with the consent of the crown, to the further support of the protestant church, with some allowance thereout (to what amount I am not informed) for the benefit of the tolerated Romish clergy of the remaining French inhabitants.

THE capital of Grenada, by an ordinance of governor Melville, soon after the cession of the country to Great Britain.

BOOK

III.

by the peace of Paris, is called St. George. By this ordinance, English names were given to the several towns and parishes, and their French names forbidden to be thereafter used in any publick acts. The French name of the capital was Fort Royale. It is situated in a spacious bay, on the west or lee-side of the island, not far from the south end, and possesses one of the safest and most commodious harbours for shipping in the English West Indies, which has been lately fortified at a very great expence (c).

THE other towns in Grenada, are, properly speaking, inconsiderable villages or hamlets, which are generally situated at the bays or shipping places in the several out-parishes. The parish town of Carriacou is called Hillsborough.

GRENADA has two ports of entry, with separate establishments, and distinct revenue officers, independent of each other, viz. one at St. George, the capital, and one at Grenville-bay, a town and harbour on the east or windward side of the island. The former, by the 27 Geo. III. c. 27. is made a free port.

(c) The town of Saint George is built chiefly of brick, and makes a handsome appearance. It is divided by a ridge, which running into the sea forms on one side the carenage, on the other the bay: thus there is the *Bay-town*, which boasts a handsome square and market-place, and the *Carenage-town*, wherein the principal merchants reside, the ships lying land-locked, and in deep water close to the wharfs. On the ridge between the two towns stands the church, and on the promontory above it is a large old fort, which was probably constructed by the first French inhabitants. It is built of stone, and is large enough to accommodate an entire regiment.

WHETHER:

WHETHER it be owing to the events of war, to domestick dissentions, or to calamities inflicted by the hand of Divine Providence, I know not, but it appears that the white population of Grenada and the Grenadines has decreased considerably since these islands first came into possession of the English. The number of white inhabitants, in the year 1771, were known to be somewhat more than sixteen hundred; in 1777 they had decreased to thirteen hundred; and at this time they are supposed not to exceed one thousand, of which about two-thirds are men able to bear arms, and incorporated into five regiments of militia, including a company of free blacks or mulattoes, attached to each. There are likewise about 500 regular troops from Great Britain, which are supported on the British establishment (*d*).

THE negro slaves have also decreased. By the last returns preceding the capture of the island in 1779, they were stated at 35,000, of which 5,000 were in Carriacou, and the smaller islands. In 1785 they amounted to no more than 23,926 in the whole. The decrease was owing partly to the want of any regular supply during the French government, and partly to the numbers carried from the island by the French inhabitants, both before and after the peace. It is also to be observed, that of the African cargoes sold at Grenada, some part (perhaps a

(*d*) Besides the regular troops which are sent from Great Britain for the protection of Grenada, there are in its garrison three companies of king's negroes, which came from America, where they served in three capacities, as pioneers, artificers, and light dragoons. In Grenada they form a company of each, and are commanded by a lieutenant of the regulars, having captain's rank.

fourth or fifth) are exported to the neighbouring French and Spanish colonies.

THE free people of colour amounted in 1787, to 1,115. To prevent the too great increase of this mixed race, every manumission is, by an act of this island, charged with a fine of one hundred pounds currency, payable into the publick treasury. But this law has neither operated as a productive fund, nor as a prohibition; for it is usually evaded by executing and recording acts of manumission in some other island or government where there is no such law. The evidence of all free coloured people, whether born free or manumitted, is received in the courts of this island, on their producing sufficient proof of their freedom; and such free people are tried on criminal charges in the same manner as whites, without distinction of colour. They are also allowed to possess and enjoy lands and tenements to any amount, provided they are native-born subjects or capitulants, and not aliens.

THE governor, by virtue of his office, is chancellor, ordinary and vice-admiral, and presides solely in the courts of chancery and ordinary, as in Jamaica. His salary is £. 3,200 currency *per annum* (*e*), which is raised by a poll-tax on all slaves; and it is the practice in Grenada to pass a salary bill on the arrival of every new governor, to continue during his government. In all cases of absence beyond twelve months, the salary ceases and determines.

(*e*) The currency of Grenada, or rate of exchange, is commonly 65 *per cent.* worse than sterling.

THE council of Grenada consists of twelve members, and the assembly of twenty-six. The powers, privileges and functions of both these branches of the legislature, are the same, and exercised precisely in the same manner, as those of the council and assembly in Jamaica. A freehold, or life estate, of fifty acres, is a qualification to sit as representative for the parishes, and a freehold, or life estate, in fifty pounds house-rent in St. George, qualifies a representative for the town. An estate of ten acres in fee, or for life, or a rent of ten pounds in any of the out-towns, gives a vote for the representatives of each parish respectively; and a rent of twenty pounds *per annum*, issuing out of any freehold or life estate in the town of St. George, gives a vote for a representative for the town.

THE law courts in Grenada, besides those of chancery and ordinary, are, first, the court of grand sessions of the peace held twice a year, *viz.* in March and September. In this court the first person named in the commission of the peace presides, who is usually the president or senior in council.

2dly, THE court of common pleas. The court consists of one chief and four assistant justices, whose commissions are during pleasure. The chief justice is usually appointed in England, a professional man, and receives a salary of £. 600 *per annum*. The four assistant justices are usually appointed by the governor from among the gentlemen of the island, and act without salary.

3dly, THE court of exchequer. The barons in this court
are

are commissioned in like manner as in the court of common pleas. But this court is lately grown into disuse.

4thly, THE court of admiralty, for trial of all prize causes of capture from enemies in war, and of revenue seizures in peace or war. There is one judge of admiralty and one surrogate.

LASTLY, The governor and council compose a court of error, as in Jamaica, for trying all appeals of error from the court of common pleas.

ALTHOUGH there is no law of Grenada declaring an adoption of the laws of England, yet it has been always the practice of the courts, to consider both the common and statute law of England to extend to Grenada in all applicable cases, not otherwise provided for by particular laws of the island. So in like manner the practice of the courts in Westminster Hall, and authentick reports of adjudged cases there, are resorted to, when precedents and authorities are wanting in the island. In the case of its *slave laws*, it may be said with truth and justice, that the assembly of this island have shewn a liberality of sentiment which reflects the highest honour on their characters, both as legislatures and christians.

I HAVE now furnished the reader with all the information I have collected, concerning the past history and present state of the island of Grenada, and if it shall be thought deficient or uninstruative, the fault is not in the want of materials, but in the workman. Something however remains to be observed

§

concerning

concerning such of the Grenadines as are dependent on the Grenada government, the chief of which are Cariacou and Isle Ronde. The former contains 6913 acres of land, and in general it is fertile and well cultivated; producing in seasonable years a million of pounds of cotton for exportation, besides corn, yams, potatoes, and plantains sufficient for the maintenance of its negroes. The cultivation of sugar has been found less successful in this island than cotton, though it still continues to be made on two plantations. Isle Ronde contains about 500 acres of excellent land, which are wholly applied to pasturage, and the cultivation of cotton. It is situated about midway between Cariacou and the north end of Grenada, about four leagues from each.

I CLOSE my account of this colony, as of Barbadoes, with an authentick return by the Inspector General of Great Britain, of the exports from Grenada and its dependencies, for the year 1787; containing also an estimate of the actual value of the several articles at the British market:

ACCOUNT of the Number of Vessels, their Tonnage, and Men (including their repeated Voyages) that cleared outwards from the Island of Grenada, &c. to all Parts of the World, between the 5th January 1787 and the 5th January 1788, with the Species, Quantities, and Value of their cargoes, according to the actual Prices in London. By the Inspector General of Great Britain.

Whither bound.	SHIPPING.		SUGAR.		RUM.		MELASSES.		COFFEE.		CACAO.		COTTON.		INDIGO.		Value of Miscellaneous Articles, as Hides, Dying Woods, &c.		Total Value according to the current Prices in London.	
	N ^o	Tonn.	Men.	Cwt.	qrs.	lbs.	Gallons.	Gallons.	Cwt.	qrs.	lbs.	Cwt.	qrs.	lbs.	lbs.	lbs.	£.	s.	d.	£.
to Britain	65	13,276	969	172,880	—	9	102,590	—	8,550	2	4	2,645	1	2	2,030,177	1,560	64,439	—	3	£.555,222 11 6
and	7	771	59	1,248	—	—	86,100	—	—	—	—	19	2	16	1,250	1,250	24	10	—	15,580 4 5
to American States	47	6,373	410	290	—	—	272,080	—	44	—	—	36	—	—	—	—	27	4	—	24,597 4 —
to American Colonies	30	2,610	194	1,150	—	—	239,820	4,500	218	—	—	16	—	—	—	—	15	6	—	21,469 9 4
to West Indies	19	2,734	792	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	39	—	—	59 — —
	188	25,764	1,824	175,548	—	9	675,390	4,500	8,816	2	4	2,716	3	18	2,062,427	2,810	64,545	—	3	£.614,908 9 5

POSTSCRIPT to the HISTORY of GRENADA.

The first edition of this work having fallen into the hands of a gentleman of distinguished abilities and learning (one of his Majesty's Serjeants at Law) he was pleased, at the author's request, to communicate his thoughts in writing on the doctrine maintained by Lord Mansfield, concerning the legal authority of the crown over conquered countries, as stated in page 362 of this volume, which I have great pleasure in presenting to the reader in the precise words in which they were given :

“THE ground upon which the court rested their judgment in the case of Grenada, was clearly sufficient to warrant that judgment, even admitting the doctrine laid down by Lord Mansfield on the other point to be well founded ; but nothing can be more unfounded than that doctrine :—every proposition upon which it is made to rest, is a fallacy. I deny that the king (at least since the constitution has had its present form) can “*arbitrarily* grant or refuse a capitulation.” The power of granting or refusing a capitulation, in the case of a siege or invasion, is certainly vested in him ; but it is vested in him, like every other power with which he is entrusted by the British constitution, to be exercised according to the usage which has prevailed in like cases. If that power should be abused,

Postscript.
CHAP
II.

Postscript.
BOOK
III.

his officers and ministers must answer to the publick for their misconduct.

“ FOR the same reason I deny that “ the king can put the inhabitants of a conquered country to the sword, or otherwise exterminate them,” unless such severity be fully justified by the laws of war, as they are understood amongst civilized nations.


“ BUT, supposing that a case should happen wherein such severity would be justifiable, I deny that, upon the extermination of the enemy, the lands would belong to the king himself: I say they would belong to the state; and that they would be subject, not merely to the king, but to the sovereign power which governs the British dominions. If the king receives the inhabitants under his protection, and grants them their property, I deny that he has power to fix such terms and conditions as he thinks proper; for he cannot reserve to himself, in his individual capacity, legislative power over them: that would be to exclude the authority of the British legislature from the government of a country subdued by British forces, and would be an attempt to erect *imperium in imperio*. One consequence of this would be, that such conquered territory might descend to an heir of the king not qualified, according to the act of settlement, to succeed to the crown of Great Britain. The king might give it to a younger son, or bestow it on a stranger. A thousand other absurd consequences might be pointed out, as resulting from such incongruity.

I ADMIT

“ I ADMIT that the king (subject to the responsibility of his ministers) may yield up a conquest, or retain it, as he sees best ; but I deny, for the reasons above hinted at, that he can impose what terms he pleases, or that he can arbitrarily change the law or political form of its government. I think he may agree, upon the capitulation, that the conquered people shall continue to enjoy their ancient religion and laws, and even this must be *sub modo* ; but I deny that he could, by his own authority, grant these things after the capitulation ; for that would amount to an exercise of independent sovereignty. The fallacy of Lord Mansfield’s argument, proceeds from an endeavour to confound the king’s civil and military characters, and to perpetuate in the chief executive magistrate, the vast powers with which it is necessary to invest the generalissimo of the armies, during the continuance of military operations. The moment these operations cease, he resumes his civil character, and in that character no man will venture to assert that, as king of Great Britain, he has the prerogative of being a despot in any part of his dominions.

Postscript.
C H A P.
II.

“ WITH respect to the cases of Ireland, Wales, and Berwick, even taking them precisely as Lord Mansfield puts them, I think they do not weigh a feather in the argument. Those cases happened long before the English constitution had reduced itself to its present form, consequently, before the rights of the people were ascertained and defined as they exist at present. If a few instances of the exercise of arbitrary power by the ancient kings of England, are to be received as decisive

Postscript. cases, to shew what are the powers of the crown at this day.
B.O O K I think it would be no very difficult task to find authorities,
III. even as low down as the reigns of the Plantagenets and
 Stuarts, to prove that the British government ought to be a
pure despotism !

C H A P. III.

ST. VINCENT AND ITS DEPENDENCIES,

AND

D O M I N I C A.



THE civil history of these Islands may be comprised within a narrow compass; for the sovereignty of them having been long an object of dispute between the crowns of Great Britain and France, the rightful possessors, the Charaibes, derived that security from the reciprocal envy and avarice of the contending parties, which they might have expected in vain from their justice and humanity. As both St. Vincent and Dominica were included, with many other islands, in the Earl of Carlisle's patent, it is not wonderful that attempts were made, at different times, to bring them under the English dominion. These attempts the French constantly opposed, with design, it was urged, secretly and surreptitiously to occupy the Islands themselves; and their conduct towards the Charaibes on other occasions seems to justify the suggestion.

C H A P.
III.

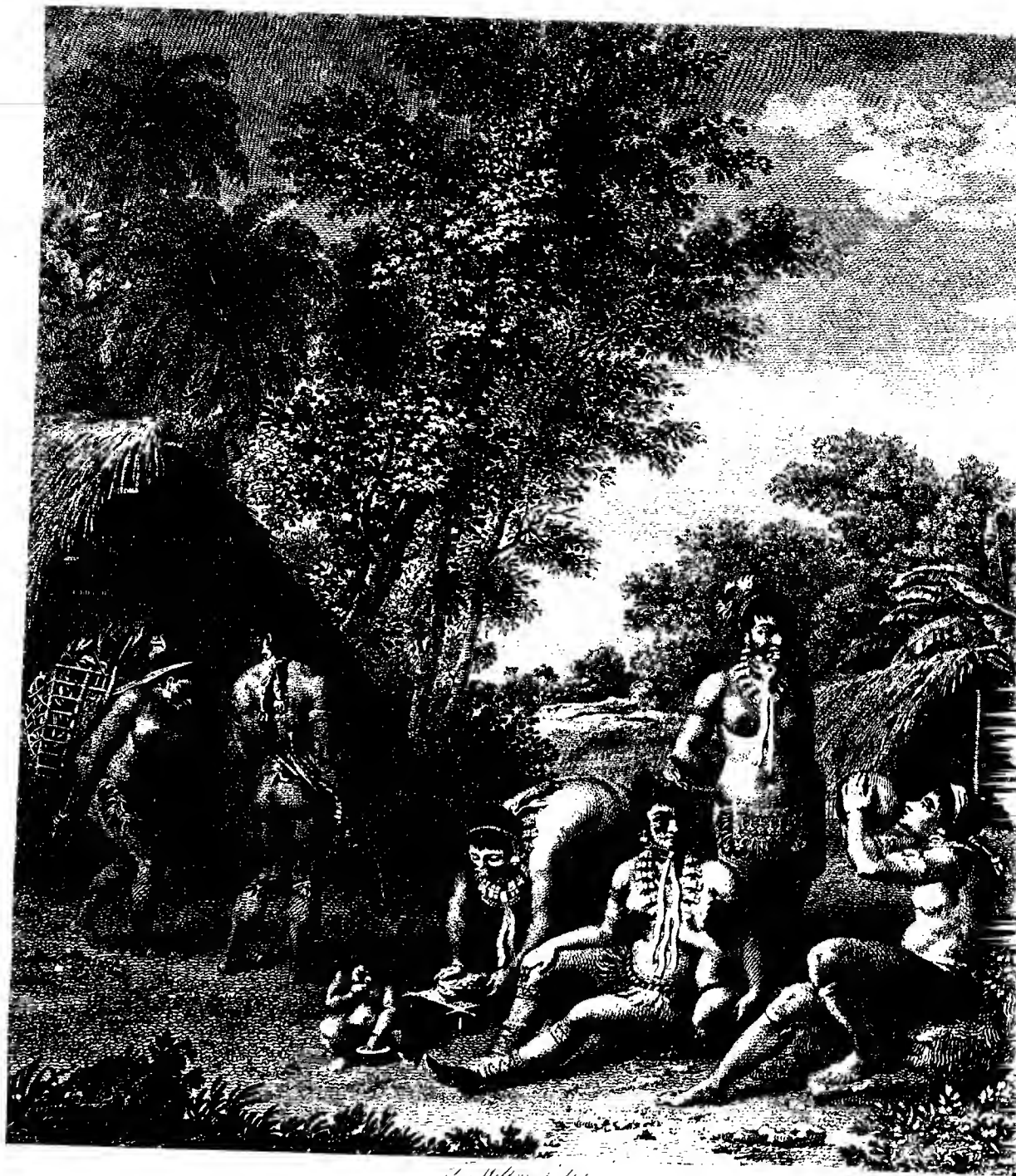
BUT,

BOOK
- III.

BUT, whatever might have been their motives, they exerted themselves with such effect, that the English were compelled to relinquish all hopes of obtaining these Islands by force;—for by the treaty of Aix la Chapelle (1748) St. Vincent, Dominica, St. Lucia, and Tobago, were declared neutral, and the ancient proprietors (such as remained of them) were at length left in unmolested possession.

THE disputes and hostilities which these attempts of the English on the one hand, and resistance of the French on the other, gave rise to, in this part of the world, are no longer interesting, and therefore need not be brought again to remembrance. The depravity and injustice of mankind are at all times subjects of unpleasing speculation; but the subsequent conduct of both nations, respecting the Islands which they had declared neutral, is too remarkable to be overlooked, even if historical precision did not, as in the present case it does, require me to relate the circumstances attending it.

THE treaty of neutrality was no sooner concluded, than both English and French appeared dissatisfied with the arrangement which they had made. The latter seem not to have considered until it was too late, that by restricting the English from the occupancy of those countries, on the ground of right in a third party, they precluded themselves at the same time. The English, on the other hand, discovered that, by acceding to the compromise, they had given up St. Lucia, an Island worth all the rest, and to which it must be owned we had some colourable pretensions, founded on a treaty entered into with the Charibean



J. M. W. Turner

A FAMILY OF CHARAIBES, drawn from the Life, in the ISLAND of ST VINCENT

raibeans in 1664, six hundred of whom attended an armament that was sent thither by Lord Willoughby, and actually put the English publick y and formally into possession.

C H A P.

III.

BOTH nations being thus alike dissatisfied with an arrangement which left nothing to either, it may be supposed, that on the conclusion of the war which broke out a few years afterwards, a very different stipulation took place. The French no longer pleaded scruples on behalf of the Charibes, but very cordially concurred with the English in dividing the spoil. By the 9th article of the peace of Paris, signed the 10th February, 1763, the three islands of Dominica, St. Vincent, and Tobago, were assigned to Great Britain; and St. Lucia to France, in full and perpetual sovereignty; the Charibes not being once mentioned in the whole transaction, as if no such people existed.

THEY were in truth reduced to a miserable remnant.—Of the ancient, or, as they were called by the English, *Red* Charibes, not more than a hundred families survived in 1763, and of all their ancient extensive possessions, these poor people retained only a mountainous district in the Island of St. Vincent (*a*). Of this Island and its dependencies I shall now treat, reserving Dominica for a separate section.

(*a*) See the plate annexed, which contains an accurate delineation of a family of these poor people still existing in this island, under the patronage and protection of Sir William Young, Bart. to whom I am proud to acknowledge my obligations, for the valuable assistance he has given me in rendering this edition of my work less unworthy the notice of the publick than the former.

SECTION I.

ST. VINCENT.

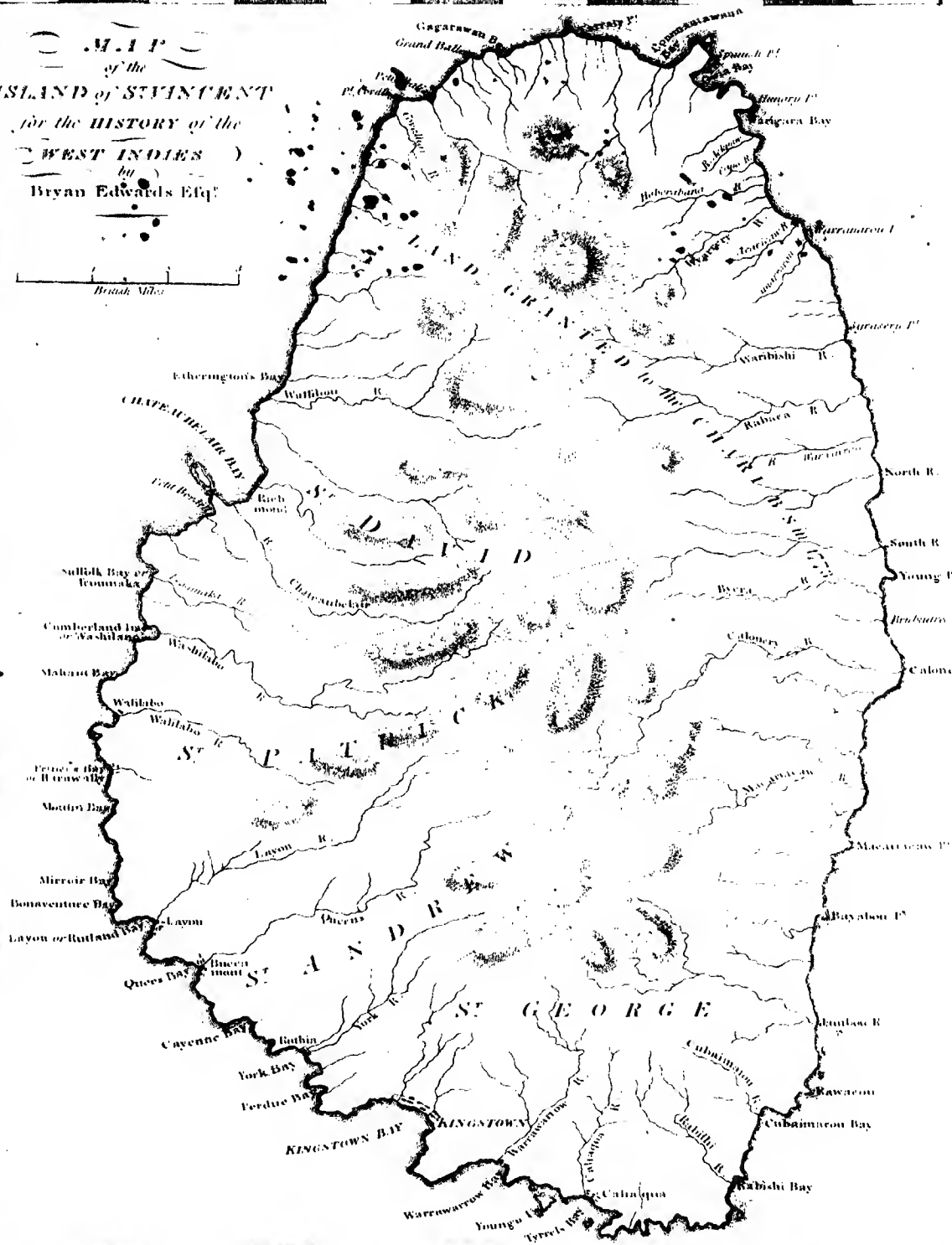
BOOK
III.

“ THE Spaniards (says Doctor Campbell) bestowed the name of St. Vincent upon this Island, because they discovered it upon the 22d of January, which in their calendar is St. Vincent’s day, but it does not appear that they were ever, properly speaking, in possession of it; the Indians being very numerous here, on account of its being the rendezvous of their expeditions to the continent.” Unfortunately, however, neither their numbers, nor the natural strength of the country, exempted them from hostility. What avarice had in vain attempted, accident accomplished, by procuring an establishment among them for a race of people, whom, though at first beheld by the native Charaibes with contempt or pity, they have since found formidable rivals and merciless conquerors. These people have been long distinguished, however improperly, by the name of the *Black* Charaibes.

OF the origin of these intruders, and their ancient connection with the native Charaibes, the best account that I have been

MAP
of the
ISLAND of ST. VINCENT
for the HISTORY of the
WEST INDIES
by
Bryan Edwards Esq^r

British Miles



able to find is in a small treatise of the author above quoted, (Doctor Campbell) entitled "Candid and impartial considerations on the nature of the Sugar-trade," which being equally authentick and curious, I shall present to my readers entire; and with the less scruple, because it consists chiefly of an official paper which cannot be abridged without injury.

"IN 1672, King Charles thought fit to divide these governments, and by a new commission appointed Lord Willoughby Governor of Barbadoes, St. Lucia, St. Vincent, and Dominica; Sir William Stapleton being appointed Governor of the other Leeward Isles, and this separation has subsisted ever since, the same Islands being constantly inserted in every new Governor's patent. On the demise of Lord Willoughby, Sir Jonathan Atkins was appointed Governor of Barbadoes, and the rest of these Islands, and so continued till 1680, when he was succeeded by Sir Richard Dutton, who being sent for to England in 1685, appointed Colonel Edwin Stede Lieutenant Governor, who vigorously asserted our rights by appointing Deputy Governors for the other Islands; and particularly sent Captain Temple hither to prevent the French from wooding and watering without our permission, to which they had been encouraged by the inattention of the former Governors; persisting steadily in this conduct, till it was signified to him, as we have had occasion to remark before, that the king had signed an act of neutrality, and that commissioners were appointed by the two courts, to settle all differences relative to these Islands.

"SOME years after, a ship from Guinea, with a large cargo

BOOK

III.

of slaves, was either wrecked or run on shore upon the Island of St. Vincent, into the woods and mountains of which great numbers of the negroes escaped (*a*). Here, whether willingly or unwillingly is a little uncertain, the Indians suffered them to remain, and partly by the accession of runaway slaves from Barbadoes, partly by the children they had by the Indian women, they became very numerous; so that about the beginning of the current century they constrained the Indians to retire into the north-west part of the island. These people, as may be reasonably supposed, were much dissatisfied with this treatment; and complained of it occasionally both to the English and to the French, that came to wood and water amongst them. The latter at length suffered themselves to be prevailed upon to attack these invaders, in the cause of their old allies; and from a persuasion that they should find more difficulty in dealing with these Negroes, in case they were suffered to strengthen themselves, than with the Indians. After much deliberation, in the year 1719, they came with a considerable force from Martinico, and landing without much opposition, began to burn the Negro huts and destroy their plantations, supposing that the Indians would have attacked them in the mountains, which if they had done, the blacks had probably been extirpated, or forced to submit and become slaves. But either from fear or policy, the Indians did nothing, and the Negroes falling in the night, and retreating to inaccessible places in the day, destroyed so many of the French, (amongst whom was Mr. Paulian, major of Martinique, who commanded them) that they were forced to re-

(*a*) I am informed by Sir William Young, who is perfectly well acquainted with these people, that they were originally a race of *Mooers*, a tribe or nation from the Bight of Benin.

fire. When by this experiment they were convinced that force would not do, they had recourse to fair means, and by dint of persuasions and presents, patched up a peace with the Negroes as well as the Indians, from which they received great advantage.

“ Things were in this situation when Captain Uring came with a considerable armament to take possession of St. Lucia and this Island, in virtue of a grant from our late sovereign King George I. to the late Duke of Montague. When the French had dislodged this gentleman, by a superior force from St. Lucia, he sent Captain Braithwaite to try what could be done at the Island of St. Vincent, in which he was not at all more successful, as will best appear from that gentleman’s report to Mr. Uring, which, as it contains several curious circumstances relative to the country, and to the two independent nations who then inhabited it, belongs properly to this subject, and cannot but prove entertaining to the reader. The paper is without date, but it appears from Mr. Uring’s memoirs that this transaction happened in the spring of the year 1723.”

“ T H E R E P O R T .

“ IN pursuance of a resolution in council, and your order for
 “ so doing, the day you sailed with his Grace’s colony for An-
 “ tego, I sailed with the Griffin sloop, in company with his
 “ Majesty’s ship the Winchelsea, to St. Vincent. We made
 “ the island that night, and next morning run along shore, and
 “ saw several Indian huts, but as yet no Indians came off to us,
 “ nor could we get ashore to them, by reason there was no

BOOK

III.

“ ground to anchor in. Towards the evening, two Indians
 “ came on board, and told us, we might anchor in a bay to
 “ leeward, and when we were at anchor they would bring
 “ their General on board. Here we came to an anchor in deep
 “ water, and very dangerous for the sloop. One, whom they
 “ call General, came on board, with several others, to the num-
 “ ber of twenty-two. I entertained them very handsomely,
 “ and made the Chief some trifling presents, but found he was
 “ a person of no consequence, and that they called him *Chief*
 “ to get some present from me. Here two of the Indians were
 “ so drunk they would not go ashore, but staid on board some
 “ days, and were well entertained. After this, little winds and
 “ great currents drove us off for several days; but at last, we
 “ came to an anchor in a spacious bay, to leeward of all the
 “ island, the draught of which I ordered to be taken by our
 “ surveyor, for your better understanding the place, being the
 “ only one where a settlement could be made. The ship and
 “ sloop were scarce come to anchor, before the strand of the
 “ shore was covered with Indians, and among them we could
 “ discover a white, who proved to be a Frenchman. I took
 “ Captain Watson in the boat with me, with a Frenchman,
 “ and immediately went ashore. As soon as I came amongst
 “ them, I asked them, why they appeared all armed? For every
 “ man had cutlasses, some had musquets, pistols, bows and
 “ arrows, &c. They with very little ceremony inclosed me,
 “ and carried me up the country about a mile, over a little
 “ rivulet, where I was told I was to see their General. I found
 “ him sitting amidst a guard of about a hundred Indians, those
 “ nearest his person had musquets, the rest bows and arrows,
 “ and

“ and great silence. He ordered me a seat, and a Frenchman
 “ stood at his right hand, for an interpreter: he demanded of
 “ me, what brought me into his country, and of what nation?
 “ I told him English, and I was put in to wood and water, as
 “ not caring to say any thing else before the Frenchman; but
 “ told him if he would be pleased to come on board our ships,
 “ I would leave Englishmen in hostage for him and those he
 “ should be pleased to bring with him; but I could not prevail
 “ with him either to come on board, or suffer me to have wood
 “ and water. He said he was informed we were come to force
 “ a settlement, and we had no other way to remove that jea-
 “ lousy but to get under sail. As soon as I found what influence
 “ the Frenchman’s company had upon them, I took my leave,
 “ after making such replies as I thought proper, and returned
 “ to my boat under a guard. When I came to the shore, I
 “ found the guard there were increased by a number of Ne-
 “ groes, all armed with fuzees. I got in my boat, without any
 “ injury, and went on board to Captain Orme, and told him
 “ my ill success.

“ IMMEDIATELY after, I sent on shore the ship’s boat with
 “ a mate, with rum, beef and bread, &c. with some cutlasses,
 “ and ordered a Frenchman who went with the mate, to desire
 “ the guard to conduct them to their General, and to tell him,
 “ that though he denied me the common good of water and a
 “ little useless wood, nevertheless I had sent him such refresh-
 “ ments as our ships afforded. Our people found the French-
 “ man gone, and that then the Indian General seemed pleased,
 “ and received what was sent him, and in return sent me bows
 “ and arrows.”

BOOK

III.

“ Our people had not been long returned before their General sent a canoe, with two chief Indians, who spoke very good French, to thank me for my presents, and to ask pardon for his refusing me wood and water, and assured me I might have what I pleased; and they had orders to tell me, if I pleased to go ashore again, they were to remain hostages for my civil treatment. I sent them on board the man of war, and with Captain Watson went on shore. I was well received, and conducted as before. But now I found the brother of the chief of the Negroes was arrived, with five hundred Negroes, most armed with fuzees. They told my interpreter they were assured we were come to force a settlement, or else they would not have denied me what they never before denied any English, *viz.* wood and water: But, if I pleased, I might take in what I wanted under a guard. Finding them in so good a humour, I once more introduced the desire I had to entertain them on board our ships, and with some difficulty prevailed with them, by leaving Captain Watson on shore under their guard as a hostage. I carried them on board the King’s ship, where they were well entertained by Captain Orme, who gave the Indian General a fine fuzee of his own, and to the Chief of the Negroes something that pleased him. Captain Orme assured him of the friendship of the King of England, &c. The Negroe Chief spoke excellent French, and gave answers with the French compliments. Afterwards I carried them on board the Duke’s sloop, and after opening their hearts with wine, for they scorned to drink rum, I thought it a good time to tell them my commission, and what brought me on their coast. They told me it was

“ well

“ well I had not mentioned it ashore, for their power could
 “ not have protected me ; that it was impossible ; the Dutch
 “ had before attempted it, but were glad to retire. They like-
 “ wise told me, two French sloops had, the day before we came,
 “ been amongst them, gave them arms and ammunition, and
 “ assured them of the whole force of Martinico for their pro-
 “ tection against us. They told them also, that they had drove
 “ us from St. Lucia, and that now we were come to endeavour
 “ to force a settlement there ; and, notwithstanding all our
 “ specious pretences, when we had power, we should enslave
 “ them ; but declared they would trust no Europeans ; that
 “ they owned themselves under the protection of the French,
 “ but would as soon oppose their settling amongst them, or any
 “ act of force from them, as us, as they had lately given an ex-
 “ ample, by killing several ; and they further told me, it was
 “ by very large presents the French ever got in their favour
 “ again ; but they resolved never to put it in the power of any
 “ European to hurt them. They advised me to think what
 “ they said was an act of friendship. This being all I could
 “ get from them, I dismissed them with such presents as his
 “ Grace ordered for that service, with a discharge of cannon,
 “ and received in return as regular volleys of small shot as I
 “ ever heard. In the night the *Witchelsta* drove from her
 “ anchors, which as soon as I perceived, and had received
 “ Captain Watson from the shore, I got under sail, and stood
 “ to the man of war.”

SUCH is the history of a very weak and fruitless attempt
 which was made, under the authority of the British govern-
 ment,

BOOK

III.

ment, to obtain possession of this island in the year 1723: an interval of forty years succeeds, in which I find no occurrence in its history that deserves recital. The country became a theatre of savage hostilities between the Negroes and the Charaibes, in which it is believed that the former were generally victorious; it is certain that they proved so in the end, their numbers, in 1763, being computed at two thousand; whereas of the red or native Charaibes, there were not left (as hath already been observed) more than one hundred families, and most of these, if I am rightly informed, are by this time exterminated. It is however worthy of remark, that the African intruders have adopted most of the Charaibean manners and customs; among the rest, the practice of flattening the foreheads of their infants, as described in the first part of this work, and perhaps it was chiefly from this circumstance that they acquired the appellation of the black Charaibes.

THE first measure of the English government in respect to this island, after the peace of Paris, was to dispose of the lands—I dare not say to the best advantage; for no less than 24,000 acres, being more than one-fourth part of the whole country, were gratuitously assigned over to two individuals (*a*). The remainder was ordered to be sold for the benefit of the publick, and 20,538 acres were accordingly disposed of by auction for the sum of £.162,854. 11s. 7d. sterling (*b*). As nearly
one

(*a*) Mr. Swinburne had twenty thousand acres, and General Monckton four thousand.

(*b*) The Lords of the Treasury fixed a minimum, below which no land could be sold, which was £.5 sterling *per* acre for every acre of cleared land, and twenty
§ shillings

one half the country was judged unfit for any profitable cultivation, these grants and sales comprehended all the lands, of any kind of value, from one end of the island to the other. The commissioners indeed were directed not to survey or dispose of any of the lands inhabited or claimed by the Charaibes, until they should receive further instructions from the crown; but as it was impossible to ascertain how far the claims of these people extended, the survey alone was postponed, and the sales were suffered to proceed, to the amount that I have mentioned; no doubt being entertained by the several purchasers, that the British government would ratify the acts of its commissioners, and put them into possession of the lands which they had bought, without any regard to the claims of the Charaibes of either race; which in truth were considered as of no consequence or validity.

By what arts of persuasion the British government was induced to give its sanction and support to the measures which followed, it is now useless to enquire; but posterity will learn with indignation, that the sales and allotments I have men-

shillings for every acre in wood, and the principal conditions of sale were these, "that every purchaser should pay down twenty *per cent.* of the whole purchase money, together with six-pence sterling *per acre*, for the expence of surveying the land, and that the remainder of the purchase money should be secured by bonds; to be paid by equal instalments in the space of five years next after the date of the grant. That each purchaser should keep on the lands so by him purchased, one white man, or two white women, for every hundred acres of land, as it became cleared, for the purpose of cultivating the same; or in default thereof, or non-payment of the remainder of the purchase money, the lands were to be forfeited to the crown." Some of the lands sold extravagantly high, as far as fifty pounds sterling *per acre*.

HISTORY OF THE

BOOK

III.

tioned, gave rise to a war with the Charaibes, in the course of which, it became the avowed intention of government to exterminate those miserable people altogether, or, by conveying them to a barren island on the coast of Africa, consign them over to lingering destruction. By repeated protests and representations from the military officers employed in this disgraceful business, and the dread of parliamentary enquiry, administration at length thought proper to desist, and the Charaibes, after surrendering part of their lands, were permitted to enjoy the remainder unmolested, and they possess them, I believe, to this hour.

ON the 19th of June 1779, St. Vincent's shared the common fate of most of the British West Indian possessions, in that unfortunate war with America, which swallowed up all the resources of the nation, being captured by a small body of troops from Martinico, consisting of only four hundred and fifty men, commanded by a Lieutenant in the French navy. The black Charaibes however, as might have been expected, immediately joined the enemy, and there is no doubt that the terror which seized the British inhabitants, from an apprehension that those people would proceed to the most bloody enormities, contributed to the very easy victory which was obtained by the invaders; for the island surrendered without a struggle. The terms of capitulation were favourable, and the island was restored to the dominion of Great Britain by the general pacification of 1783. It contained at that time sixty-one sugar estates, five hundred acres in coffee, two hundred acres in cacao, four hundred in cotton, fifty in indigo, and five hundred in tobacco, besides land

land appropriated to the raising provisions, such as plantains, yams, maize, &c. All the rest of the country, excepting the few spots that had been cleared from time to time by the Charaibes, retained its native woods, and most of it, I believe, continues in the same state to the present hour.

ST. VINCENT's contains about 84,000 acres, which are every where well watered, but the country is very generally mountainous and rugged; the intermediate vallies, however, are fertile in a high degree, the soil consisting chiefly of a fine mold, composed of sand and clay, well adapted for sugar. The extent of country at present possessed by British subjects is 23,605 acres, and about as much more is supposed to be held by the Charaibes. All the remainder is thought to be incapable of cultivation or improvement.

THE Island, or rather the British territory within it, is divided into five parishes, of which only one was provided with a church, and that was blown down in the hurricane of 1780: whether it is rebuilt I am not informed. There is one town, called Kingston, the capital of the island, and the seat of its government, and three villages that bear the name of towns, but they are inconsiderable hamlets, consisting each of a few houses only.

BUT the publick establishment that reflects the greatest honour on St. Vincent's is its celebrated botanick garden, under the provident and well directed care of Mr. Anderson. It consists of 30 acres, of which no less than sixteen are in

BOOK
III.

high cultivation, abounding not only with almost every species of the vegetable world, which the hand of nature has bestowed on these islands for use and beauty, for food and luxury, but also with many valuable exoticks from the East Indies, and South America.—If it be surpassed in this latter respect, by the magnificent garden of Mr. East (*c*), it claims at least the honour of seniority, and does infinite credit both to its original founders and present directors.

IN the frame of its government and the administration of executive justice, St. Vincent seems to differ in no respect from Grenada.—The council consist of twelve members, the assembly of seventeen. The Governor's salary is two thousand pounds sterling, one half of which is raised within the island, the other half is paid him out of the Exchequer of Great Britain.

THE military force consists at present of a regiment of infantry, and a company of artillery, sent from England; and a black corps raised in the country—but provided for, with the former on the British establishment, and receiving no additional pay from the island. The militia consists of two regiments of foot, serving without pay of any kind.

THE number of inhabitants appears, by the last returns to government, to be one thousand four hundred and fifty Whites, and eleven thousand eight hundred and fifty-three Negroes.

(*c*) In Jamaica. See p. 197.

OF the labour of these people I have no other means of shewing the returns, than from the Inspector General's account of the exports from this island for 1787, a table of which, as in the case of the other islands, is subjoined. In this table, however, I conceive is comprehended the produce of the several islands dependant on the St. Vincent government, *viz.* Bequia, containing 3,700 acres, a little island, valuable from the commodiousness of its fine harbour, called Admiralty Bay; Union, containing 2,150 acres; Canouane, containing 1,777 acres; and Mustique, containing about 1,200 acres (*d*); the Negroes employed in the cultivation of these islands (in number about 1,400) being, I believe, included in the 11,853 before mentioned.

(*d*) There are likewise the little Islets of Petit Martinique, Petit St. Vincent, Maillereau, and Balleseau, each of which produces a little cotton.

An ACCOUNT of the Number of Vessels, their Tonnage, and Men (including their repeated Voyages) that cleared Outwards from the Island of ST. VINCENT, &c. to all Parts of the World, between the 5th of JANUARY 1787 and the 5th of JANUARY 1788; with the Species, Quantities, and Value of their Cargoes, according to the actual Prices in London. By the Inspector General of Great Britain.

	SHIPPING.		CUT SUGAR.	RUM.	MELASSES.	COFFEE.	COTTON.	CACAO.	Miscellaneous Articles, as Hides, Dying Woods, &c.	Total, according to the Current Prices in London.
	No	Tons.	Men.	Cwt. qrs. lbs.	Gallons.	Cwt. qrs. lbs.	lbs.	Cwt. qrs. lbs.	Value.	£. s. d.
<i>Whitby Bound.</i>										
To Great Britain	30	6,086	463	64,449 1 27	15,766	9,656	632 1 5	99 2 24	£. s. d.	£. s. d.
American States	21	2,587	174	579 — —	51,300	—	2 — —	43 2 —	2570 7 6	175,471 9 6
Foreign W. Indies	71	3,963	332	— — —	21,200	—	— — —	— — —	16 — —	9,019 1 8
	—	—	—	— — —	—	—	— — —	— — —	5 3 6	1,860 3 6
	122	12,636	969	65,028 1 27	88,266	9,656	634 1 5	143 — 24	2591 11 —	186,450 14 8

BOOK

III.

of the cultivable lands were ordered to be sold on the same conditions as those of St. Vincent, by commissioners nominated for that purpose, and no less than 94,346 acres (comprehending one half of the island) were accordingly disposed of by auction, in allotments from fifty to one hundred acres, yielding the sum of £.312,092. 11s. 1d. sterling money (*g*).

It does not however appear that the purchases thus made by British subjects have answered the expectation of the buyers; for the French inhabitants of Dominica are still more numerous than the English, and possess the most valuable coffee plantations in the island, the produce of which has hitherto been found its most important staple. They differ but little, in manners, customs, and religion, from the inhabitants of the other French islands in the West Indies, and their priests have been hitherto appointed by superiors in Martinico; to the government of which island, and to the laws of their own nation, they consider themselves to be amenable.

I AM sorry historical justice obliges me to observe, that the liberal conduct of the British government towards these peo-

sum of two shillings sterling *per annum*, for every acre of land, of which the lease should consist." And further, "that they should not sell or dispose of their lands, without the consent or approbation of the governor, or commander in chief of that island, for the time being." This indulgence however did not extend to more than three hundred acres of land occupied by each French subject.

(*g*) No person was allowed to purchase, either in his own name, or in the name of others, in trust for him, more than three hundred acres, if in Dominica, or five hundred acres if in St. Vincent.

ple, after they became adopted subjects, did not meet with that grateful return from them, which, for the general interests of mankind, ought to be religiously manifested on such occasions.

CHAP.
III.

AT the commencement of the hopeless and destructive war between Great Britain and her Colonies in North America, the island of Dominica was in a flourishing situation. The port of Roseau having been declared a free port by act of parliament, was resorted to by trading vessels from most parts of the foreign West Indies, as well as from America. The French and Spaniards purchased great numbers of Negroes there for the supply of their settlements, together with vast quantities of the merchandise and manufactures of Great Britain; payment for all which was made chiefly in bullion, indigo, and cotton, and completed in mules and cattle; articles of prime necessity to the planter (*b*).

THUS the island, though in itself certainly not so fertile as some other of this extent in its neighbourhood, was becoming very rapidly a colony of considerable importance; but unfortunately it wanted that protection, which alone could give its possessions stability and value.

To those who recollect the frantick rage, with which all the faculties and means of Great Britain were directed towards, and applied in, the subjugation of America, the utter disregard which

(*b*) Roseau is still a free-port, but the restrictions and regulations of the late act are so rigid, that foreigners have no encouragement to resort to it, and, since some late seizures, consider the law as a snare to invite them to ruin.

BOOK

III.

was manifested by the then administration towards the security of this and the other British islands in the West Indies, may not perhaps be matter of surprise; but it will hereafter be scarcely believed, that the whole regular force allotted, during the height of the war, for the protection of Dominica, consisted of no more than six officers and ninety-four privates! This shameful neglect was the more remarkable, as this island, from its local situation, between Martinico and Guadaloupe, is the best calculated of all the possessions of Great Britain in that part of the world, for securing to her the dominion of the Charribean sea. A few ships of war stationed at Prince Rupert's Bay, would effectually stop all intercourse of the French settlements with each other, as not a vessel can pass, but is liable to capture by ships cruizing off that bay, and to windward of the island. This indeed was discovered when it was too late.

It is probable that this, and the other circumstances which I have recounted, namely, the growing prosperity of the colony, and the criminal inattention of the British Ministry towards its security, had already attracted the vigilant rapaciousness of the French government; but it is asserted, that many of the inhabitants within the colony, who had formerly been subjects of France, scrupled not, on the first intimation of hostilities having been commenced in Europe, in the year 1778, to invite an attack from Martinico. Proof of this may not perhaps easily be made, but it is certain that their subsequent conduct gave too much cause for such a suspicion.

ON Monday, the 7th of September, in that year, a French
8 armament,

armament, consisting of a forty-gun ship, three frigates, and about thirty sail of armed sloops and schooners, having on board upwards of two thousand regular troops, and a lawless banditti of volunteers, about half that number, appeared off the island, under the command of the Marquis de Bouillé, governor of Martinico, and general of the French Windward West-Indian Islands. Part of the troops having soon afterwards landed without opposition, the enemy proceeded to the attack of Fort Cashacrou, the chief defence of the island, and in which a detachment of the regulars was stationed. This fort was built on a rock, about three hundred feet in perpendicular height, surrounded on three sides by the sea, and was considered so very defensible, that it was supposed a few hundred men, well provided, would maintain it against as many thousands. Great therefore was the astonishment of the English in the town of Roseau, in perceiving, by the French colours flying on it, that this fort had surrendered without resistance; but, strange as it may seem, the case appeared afterwards to be, that some of the French inhabitants had insinuated themselves into the fort a few nights before, and having intoxicated with liquor the few soldiers that were there on duty, had contrived to spike up the cannon.

HAVING thus made themselves masters of Fort Cashacrou, the enemy landed their whole force about noon, and began their march for the town, which was defended by Fort Melville, and three other batteries; but unfortunately these batteries were ill provided, and worse manned. The whole number of the militia did not exceed one hundred; for but few of the French

BOOK

III.

inhabitants thought proper to assemble, and of those that made their appearance, many withdrew themselves again, and were no more seen until after the island had surrendered.

THE small force however that was collected, behaved with that spirit and gallantry, which give room to lament that they were not better supported. Three times was the enemy driven out of Fort Loubiere, of which they had possessed themselves in their march, and twice were the colours which they had hoisted thereon shot away. Their commissary-general, and upwards of forty of their soldiers, were killed, and de Bouillé himself had a very narrow escape; his sword being shot away from his side.

BUT gallantry was unavailing against such superiority of numbers; for about two thousand of the French having shortly after gained possession of the heights above Roseau, this last circumstance determined the fate of the island. The bravery of the inhabitants, however, obtained for them very honourable terms of capitulation. Besides, being permitted to march out with all military honours, they were allowed to retain their civil government, and the free exercise of their religion, laws, customs, and ordinances; to preserve the administration of justice in the same persons, in whom it was then vested (*i*), and to enjoy their possessions, of what nature soever, unmolested;

(*i*) It was stipulated that the members of the council should constitute a court of chancery, the powers of which were vested solely in the governor before the surrender.

a privilege

a privilege also which was expressly extended to absent as well as resident proprietors.

C H A P.

III.

DE BOUILLE having thus completed his conquest, departed for Martinico; leaving the Marquis Dechilleau commander in chief of Dominica, whose conduct, during four years that he continued in the island, is said to have been so wantonly oppressive and tyrannical, that we are left to wonder at the patient long-suffering and forbearance of the people under his government, in submitting to it for half the time.

His first measure was to disarm the English inhabitants, and distribute their arms among the runaway Negroes, with whom he actually entered into an engagement for their assistance, if wanted. He issued a proclamation, forbidding the English to assemble together more than two in a place, under the penalty of military execution, and he commanded the centinels to shoot them if they passed in greater numbers. He ordered that no lights should be seen in their houses after nine o'clock at night, and that no English person should presume to walk the streets after that hour, without a candle and lanthorn. Mr. Robert How, an English merchant, and owner of a ship then in the bay, attempting to go on board his own vessel after that hour, was shot dead in the attempt, and the centinel who killed him was raised to a higher station in his regiment for having thus (as the governor expressed it) *done his duty*.

So very apprehensive was this governor that the English inhabitants were forming designs to retake the island, that every

BOOK

III.

letter of theirs was opened for his inspection before it was delivered. And, deeming this measure insufficient to furnish him with the knowledge of their private transactions, he adopted the practice of going himself in disguise, or employing others who better knew the English language, in order to listen at their doors and windows in the night-time, to the conversation which passed in domestick intercourse.

HE repeatedly threatened to set fire to the town of Roseau, in case the Island should be attacked, and, though this was never attempted by the English forces, yet that town was set fire to by the French soldiers, who, there is every reason to suppose, did it by the governor's private orders. This supposition was strongly corroborated by his behaviour on the night of that melancholy event, at which he himself was present the best part of the time, like another Nero seemingly diverted with the scene, and would not allow his soldiers to assist in extinguishing the flames (save only in houses that belonged to the French inhabitants) but permitted them to pillage the sufferers.

THIS fire happened the evening of Easter Sunday, 1781, by which upwards of five hundred houses were consumed in a few hours; and a vast quantity of rich merchandize and effects destroyed, to the value of two hundred thousand pounds sterling.

WHILE the wretched inhabitants were thus groaning under domestick despotism, they had no resources from without. Their trade was entirely cut off, insomuch, that during five years and
three

three months, the time that the island of Dominica was in possession of the French, it was resorted to by no vessels from Old France, nor was any of its produce exported to the kingdom; but part of it was sent in neutral bottoms to the Dutch Island of St. Eustatius, before its capture by Admiral Rodney; and from thence it was exported to England, under the most extravagant expences and loss to the proprietors.

OTHER parts of their produce were sent in Dutch vessels, which were engaged for the purpose in England, to Rotterdam; and after the breaking out of the war with the Dutch, the produce of Dominica was sent under imperial colours to Ostend, where the sugar sold from six to eight pounds sterling the hoghead.

THESE accumulated distresses ended in the absolute ruin of many of the planters, and we are assured, on good authority, that no less than thirty sugar plantations were, in consequence thereof, thrown up and abandoned by the proprietors. At length, however, the day of deliverance arrived; for, in the month of January 1783, Dominica was restored to the government of England. The joy which, on this event, animated the bosom and enlightened the countenance of every man, whom painful experience, under an arbitrary government, had taught to set a right value on the British constitution, may be conceived, but cannot be described. The inhabitants were now restored to the full enjoyment of their former privileges, under a civil establishment, similar to those of the other British colonies in the West Indies, which being hereafter to be described

BOOK

III.

at length, it is unnecessary to enlarge upon in this place, except to observe, that the legislative authority of this island is vested in the commander in chief, a council of twelve gentlemen, and an assembly of nineteen members (*k*). The few observations therefore which follow, concerning its present state and productions, will conclude my account.

DOMINICA contains 186,436 acres of land; and is divided into ten parishes. The town of Roseau is at present the capital of the island, and is situated in the parish of St. George, being about seven leagues from Prince Rupert's bay. It is on a point of land on the S. W. side of the island, which forms two bays, *viz.* Woodbridge's bay to the north, and Charlotteville bay to the southward.

ROSEAU is about half a mile in length, from Charlotteville to Roseau river, and mostly two furlongs in breadth, but less in some parts, being of a very irregular figure. It contains not more than five hundred houses, exclusive of the cottages occupied by Negroes. Before its capture by the French, it contained upwards of one thousand.

THIS island is twenty-nine miles in length, and may be reckoned sixteen miles in breadth. It contains many high and rugged mountains, interspersed with fine vallies, and in general they appear to be fertile. Several of the mountains contain

(*k*) The governor's salary is one thousand two hundred pounds sterling *per annum* exclusive of his fees of office.

unextinguished volcanoes, which frequently discharge vast quantities of burning sulphur. From these mountains also issue springs of hot water, some of which are supposed to possess great virtue in the case of tropical disorders. In some places the water is said to be hot enough to coagulate an egg (1).

DOMINICA is well watered, there being upwards of thirty fine rivers in the Island, besides a great number of rivulets. The soil, in most of the interior country, is a light brown-coloured mould, and appears to have been washed from the mountains. Towards the sea-coast, and in many of the vallies, it is a deep, black, and rich native earth, and seems well adapted to the cultivation of all the articles of West Indian produce. The under stratum is in some parts a yellow or brick clay, in others a stiff terrace, but it is in most places very stony.

I AM afraid, however, that the quantity of fertile land is but a very small proportion of the whole; there not being more than fifty sugar plantations at present in cultivation, and it is computed, that on an average, one year with another, those fifty plantations do not produce annually more than three thousand

(1) In the woods of Dominica are innumerable swarms of bees, which hive in the trees, and produce great quantities of wax and honey, both of which are equal in goodness to any in Europe. It is precisely the same species of bee as in Europe, and must have been transported thither; the native bee of the West Indies being a smaller species, unprovided with stings, and very different in its manners from the European.

BOOK
III.

hogheads of sugar. This is certainly a very small quantity of that article for such an extensive Island, or even for the number of sugar plantations at present under cultivation, allowing only one hundred acres of canes to each.

COFFEE seems to answer better than sugar, there being somewhat more than two hundred coffee plantations in Dominica, which in favourable years have produced three millions of pounds weight.

A SMALL part of the lands are also applied to the cultivation of cacao, indigo, and ginger; and I believe that most of these articles, as well as of the cotton, which are comprehended in the exports, are obtained from the dominions of foreign states in South America, and imported into this island under the free-port law.

THE number of white inhabitants, of all descriptions and ages, appear, by the last returns to government, in 1788, to be 1236; of free negroes, &c. 445, and of slaves 14,967. There are also from twenty to thirty families of the ancient natives, or Charaibes, properly so called. They are a very quiet, inoffensive people, speak a language of their own, and a little French, but none of them understand English (*m*).

SUCH

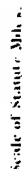
(*m*) A late writer gives the following account of these people: "They are of a clear copper colour, have long, sleek, black hair; their persons are short, stout, and well made, but they disfigure their faces by flattening their foreheads in infancy. They live chiefly by fishing in the rivers and the sea, or by fowling in the

SUCH is the information which I have collected concerning the civil history and present state of Dominica, for great part of which I am indebted to a late publication by Mr. Atwood. Nothing now remains but to set forth the particulars and value of its productions, which I shall adopt, as in other cases, from the return of the Inspector General for the year 1787.

the woods, in both which pursuits they use their bows and arrows with wonderful dexterity. It is said they will kill the smallest bird with an arrow at a great distance, or transfix a fish at a considerable depth in the sea. They display also very great ingenuity in making curious wrought panniers or baskets of silk grass, or the leaves and bark of trees."

ACCOUNT of the Number of Vessels, their Tonnage, and Men (including their repeated Voyages) that cleared outwards from the Island of Antigua, to all Parts of the World, between the 5th January 1787, and the 5th January 1788, with the Species, Quantities, and Value of their Cargoes, according to the actual Prices in London.

Port of Bound.	SHIPPING.			SUGAR.		RUM.	MELASSES.	CA CAO.		COFFEE.		INDIGO.	COTTON.	GINGER.	Value of Miscellaneous Articles, as Hydes, Dying-Woods, &c.	Total Value according to the Prices current in London.	
	N ^o .	Tons.	Men.	Cwt. qtr. lb.	Gallons.	Gallons.	Cwt. qtr. lb.	Cwt. qtr. lb.	Cwt. qtr. lb.	lbs.	lbs.	lbs.	Cwt.				
Britain	56	3,682	966	58,665 1 21	1,492	9,423	1,126 2 26	17,387 3 6	21,230	961,066	161	20 — —	194 — —	21 13 6	41 6 —	155 1 —	302,987 15 —
India	9	1,046	85	11,163 — —	3,600	—	8 — 4	—	—	9,750	—	—	—	—	—	—	19,900 11 6
American States	16	2,003	147	1,066 — —	31,600	—	45 — —	543 — —	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	7,164 5 —
Spanish Colonies	34	1,096	96	408 — —	25,400	7,380	15 — —	219 — —	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	4,295 3 6
W. Indies	67	5,299	520	—	1,300	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	155 1 —
	162	12,126	1,514	71,302 1 21	63,392	16,803	1,194 3 2	18,149 3 6	11,230	970,816	161	20 — —	194 — —	21 13 6	41 6 —	155 1 —	302,987 15 —



of

ST. CHRISTOPHER'S.

for the
HISTORY of the WEST INDIES

— by —
— Bryan Edwards Esq: —

C H A P. IV.

Leeward Charaibean Island Government, comprehending St. Christopher's, Nevis, Antigua, Montserrat, and the Virgin Islands.—Civil history and Geographical Description of each.—Table of Exports from each Island for 1787; and an Account of the Money arising from the Duty of Four and a Half per Cent. Observations concerning the Decline of the Islands, which conclude their History.

THESE several islands, since the year 1672, have constituted one distinct government; the governor being stiled *Captain General of the Leeward Charaibean Islands*. He visits each occasionally, but his chief seat of residence is Antigua; the government of each island, in the absence of the governor-general, being usually administered by a lieutenant-governor, whose authority is limited to that particular island, and where no lieutenant-governor is appointed, the president of the council takes the command. I shall treat of them separately, and afterwards combine, in a concise summary, those circumstances which are common to them all.

C H A P.
IV.

THEIR civil history will be short; for in this part of my subject I have but little to add to the recital of Oldmixon, and other writers, who have preceded me; and where novelty is wanting, brevity is indispensibly requisite.

SECTION I.

ST. CHRISTOPHER'S.

BOOK

III.

THE island of St. Christopher was called by its ancient possessors, the Charaibes, *Liamuiga*, or the Fertile Island. It was discovered in November 1493, by Columbus himself, who was so pleased with its appearance, that he honoured it with his own Christian name. But it was neither planted nor possessed by the Spaniards. It was, however, (notwithstanding that the general opinion ascribes the honour of seniority to Barbadoes) the eldest of all the British territories in the West Indies, and, in truth, the common mother both of the English and French settlements in the Charaibean islands. The fact, as related by an historian (*a*), to whose industry and knowledge I have been so largely indebted in my account of St. Vincent, was this, "In the number of those gentlemen who accompanied Captain Roger North, in a voyage to Surinam, was Mr. Thomas Warner, who making an acquaintance there with Captain Thomas Painton, a very experienced seaman, the latter suggested how much easier it would be to fix, and preserve in good order, a colony in one of the small islands, despised and deserted by the Spaniards; than on that vast country, the continent,

(a) Dr. Campbell.

where, for want of sufficient authority, all things were fallen into confusion; and he particularly pointed out for that purpose the island of St. Christopher. This gentleman dying, Mr. Warner returned to England in 1620, resolved to put his friend's project in execution. He accordingly associated himself with fourteen other persons, and with them took his passage on board a ship bound to Virginia. From thence he and his companions sailed ~~from~~ St. Christopher's, where they arrived in January 1623, and by the month of September following had raised a good crop of tobacco, which they proposed to make their staple commodity." It has been shewn in a former chapter, that the first actual establishment in Barbadoes, took place the latter end of 1624.

By the generality of historians, who have treated of the affairs of the West Indies, it is asserted that a party of the French, under the command of a person of the name of D'Esnambuc, took possession of one part of this island, on the same day that Mr. Warner landed on the other; but the truth is, that the first landing of Warner and his associates happened two years before the arrival of D'Esnambuc; who, it is admitted by Du Tertre, did not leave France until 1625. Unfortunately, the English settlers, in the latter end of 1623, had their plantations demolished by a dreadful hurricane, which put a sudden stop to their progress. In consequence of this calamity, Mr. Warner returned to England to implore succour; and it was on that occasion that he sought and obtained the powerful patronage and support of James Hay, Earl of Carlisle. This nobleman caused a ship to be fitted out, laden with all kinds of necessaries.

BOOK

III.

series. It was called the Hopewell; and arrived at St. Christopher's on the 18th of May 1624; and thus he certainly preserved a settlement, which had otherwise died in its infancy. Warner himself did not return to St. Christopher's until the year following. He was then accompanied by a large body of recruits, and D'Esnambuc arrived about the same time; perhaps the same day. This latter was the captain of a French privateer; and, having in an engagement with a Spanish galleon of superior strength, been very roughly handled, he was obliged, after losing several of his men, to seek refuge in these islands. He brought with him to St. Christopher's about thirty hardy veterans, and they were cordially received by the English, who appear at this time to have been under some apprehensions of the Charaibes. Hitherto Warner's first colony had lived on friendly terms with these poor savages, by whom they were liberally supplied with provisions; but having seized on their lands, the consciousness of deserving retaliation made the planters apprehensive of an attack, when probably none was intended. Du Tertre relates, that the French and English receiving information of a projected revolt, concurred in a scheme for seizing the conspirators beforehand. Accordingly they fell on the Charaibes by night, and, having murdered in cold blood from one hundred to one hundred and twenty of the stoutest, drove all the rest from the island, except such of the women as were young and handsome, of whom, says the reverend historian, they made concubines and slaves. Such is the account of a contemporary author, Pere Du Tertre, who relates these transactions with perfect composure, as founded on common usage, and not unwarrantable in their nature. He adds,

that such of the Charaibes as escaped the massacre, having given the alarm to their countrymen in the neighbouring islands, a large body of them returned soon afterwards, breathing revenge; and now the conflict became serious. The Europeans, however, more from the superiority of their weapons, than of their valour, became conquerors in the end; but their triumph was dearly purchased; one hundred of their number having been left dead on the field of battle.

AFTER this exploit, which Du Tertre calls a glorious victory, the Charaibes appear to have quitted altogether this and some of the small islands in the neighbourhood, and to have retired southwards. The two leaders, Warner and Desnambuc, about the same time, found it necessary to return to Europe for the purpose of soliciting succour from their respective nations; and bringing with them the name of conquerors, they severally met with all possible encouragement. Warner was knighted by his sovereign, and through the interest of his noble patron sent back as governor in 1626 with four hundred new recruits, amply supplied with necessaries of all kinds; while Desnambuc, under the patronage of Richlieu (the minister of France) projected the establishment of an exclusive company for trading to this and some of the other islands. That minister concurred with Desnambuc in opinion, that such an institution was best adapted to the purposes of commerce and colonization;—an erroneous conclusion, which Desnambuc himself had soon abundant occasion to lament; for the French in general either misunderstood or disapproved the project. Subscriptions came in reluctantly, and the ships which the new company fitted out on this occasion, were so wretchedly supplied with provisions and necessaries,

BOOK

III.

that of five hundred and thirty-two recruits, who sailed from France with Desnambuc, in February 1627, the greater part perished miserably at sea for want of food.

THE English received the survivors with compassion and kindness; and for preventing contests in future about their respective limits, the commanders of each nation agreed to divide the whole island pretty equally between their followers. A treaty of partition for this purpose was reduced to writing, and signed, with many formalities, on the third of May 1627: it comprehended also a league defensive and offensive; but this alliance proved of little avail against the Spanish invasion in 1629, the circumstances whereof I have elsewhere related. Yet surely, unjustifiable as that attack may be deemed, if the conduct of the new settlers towards the Charaibes was such as Du Tertre relates, we have but little cause to lament over the miseries which befel them. The mind exults in the chastisement of cruelty, even when the instruments of vengeance are as criminal as the objects of punishment.

It may now be thought that those of the two nations who survived so destructive a storm, had learnt moderation and forbearance in the school of adversity; and indeed for some years they appear to have lived on terms of good neighbourhood with each other; but at length national rivalry and hereditary animosity were allowed their full influence, insomuch that, for half a century afterwards, this little island exhibited a disgusting scene of internal contention, violence and bloodshed. It is impossible at this time to pronounce with certainty, whether the French or
the

the English were the first aggressors. It is probable that each nation would lay the blame on the other. We are told that in the first Dutch war, in the reign of Charles II. the French king declaring for the United States, his subjects in St. Christopher's, disdaining an inglorious neutrality, attacked the English planters, and drove them out of their possessions; which were afterwards, by the treaty of Breda, restored to them. In 1689, in consequence of the revolution which had taken place in England the preceding year, the French planters in this island, declaring themselves in the interests of the abdicated monarch, attacked and expelled their English neighbours a second time, laying waste their plantations, and committing such outrages as are unjustifiable among civilized nations, even in a time of open and avowed hostility. Their conduct on this occasion was deemed so cruel and treacherous, that it was assigned by King William and Queen Mary among the causes which induced them to declare war against the French nation. Even fortune herself, inclining at length to the side of justice, from henceforward deserted them; for, after they had continued about eight months sole masters of the island, the English under the command of General Codrington, returning in great force, not only compelled the French inhabitants to surrender, but actually transported eighteen hundred of them to Martinico and Hispaniola. It is true, that reparation was stipulated to be made them by the treaty of Ryswick in 1697; but war again breaking out between the two nations in 1702, the French planters derived but little advantage from that clause in their favour. They had however, in 1705, the gloomy satisfaction to behold many of the English possessions again laid waste by a

BOOK

III.

French armament, which committed such ravages, that the British parliament found it necessary to distribute the sum of £.103,000 among the sufferers, to enable them to re-settle their plantations. Happily, this was the last exertion of national enmity and civil discord within this little community; for, at the peace of Utrecht, the island was ceded wholly to the English, and the French possessions publickly sold for the benefit of the English government. In 1733, £.80,000 of the money was appropriated as a marriage portion with the Princess Anne, who was betrothed to the Prince of Orange. Some few of the French planters, indeed, who consented to take the oaths, were naturalized, and permitted to retain their estates.

SUCH was the origin and progress of the British establishment in the Island of St. Christopher. The circumstances which attended the French invasion in the beginning of 1782, when a garrison of less than one thousand effective men (including the militia) was attacked by eight thousand of the best disciplined troops of France, supported by a fleet of thirty-two ships of war; the consequent surrender of the island, after a most vigorous and noble defence; and its restoration to Great Britain by the general peace of 1783, being within every person's recollection, need not be related at large in this work. I shall therefore conclude with the following particulars, which I presume are somewhat less familiar to the general reader, and their accuracy may be depended on.

ST. CHRISTOPHER lies in 17° 15' North latitude, and
63°

63° 17' West longitude; it is about fourteen leagues in circuit, and contains 43,726 acres of land, of which about 17,000 acres are appropriated to the growth of sugar, and 4000 to pasturage. As sugar is the only commodity of any account that is raised, except provisions and a little cotton, it is probable, that nearly one half the whole island is unfit for cultivation. The interior part of the country consists indeed of many rugged precipices, and barren mountains. Of these, the loftiest is Mount-Misery (evidently a decayed volcano) which rises 3,711 feet in perpendicular height from the sea. Nature, however, has made abundant amends for the sterility of the mountains, by the fertility she has bestowed upon the plains. No part of the West-Indies that I have seen, possesses even the same species of soil that is found in St. Christopher's. It is in general a dark grey loam, so light and porous as to be penetrable by the slightest application of the hoe; and I conceive it to be the production of subterraneous fires, the black ferruginous pumice of naturalists, finely incorporated with a pure loam, or virgin mould. The under stratum is gravel, from eight to twelve inches deep. Clay is nowhere found, except at a considerable height in the mountains.

By what process of nature the soil which I have mentioned becomes more especially suited to the production of sugar than any other in the West Indies, it is neither within my province or ability to explain. The circumstance, however, is unquestionable. Canes, planted in particular spots, have been known to yield 8000 lbs. of Muscovado sugar from a single acre. One gentleman, in a favourable season made 6,400 lbs.

BOOK

III.

or four hogheads of sixteen cwt. each, *per* acre, on an average return of his whole crop. It is not however pretended, that the greatest part, or even a very large proportion of the cane land, throughout the island, is equally productive. The general average produce for a series of years is 16,000 hogheads of sixteen cwt. which, as one-half only of the whole cane land, or 8,500 acres, is annually cut (the remainder being in young canes) gives nearly two hogheads of sixteen cwt. *per* acre for the whole of the land in ripe canes; but even this is a prodigious return, not equalled I imagine by any other sugar country in any part of the globe. In Jamaica, though some of the choicest lands may yield in favourable years two hogheads of sixteen cwt. *per* acre; the cane land which is cut annually, taken altogether, does not yield above a fourth part as much.

I AM informed, however, that the planters of St. Christopher's are at a great expence for manure; that they never cut *raton* canes (*b*); and although there is no want in the country of springs and rivulets for the support of the inhabitants, their plantations suffer much in dry weather, as the substratum does not long retain moisture.

THIS island is divided into nine parishes, and contains four towns and hamlets, viz. Basseterre (the present capital, as it was formerly that of the French, containing about 800 houses) Sandy-Point, Old Road and Deep Bay. Of these, the two first are ports of entry, established by law. The fortifications consist of Charles-Fort, and Brimstone-Hill, both near Sandy Point;

(*b*) *Raton* canes are shoots from old roots, as will be fully explained hereafter.

three batteries at Basseterre, one at Fig-tree Bay, another at Palmeto-Point, and some smaller ones of no great importance.

C H A P.
IV.

THE proportion which St. Christopher's contributes, with the other islands, towards an honourable provision for the Governor General, is £.1000 currency *per annum*; which is settled on him by the assembly immediately on his arrival. He has besides some perquisites; and in time of war they are considerable.

EACH island within this government has a separate council, and each of them an assembly, or house of representatives. In St. Christopher's, the council should consist of ten members, but it is seldom that more than seven are present. The house of assembly is composed of twenty-four representatives, of whom fifteen make a quorum. The requisite qualification is a freehold of forty acres of land, or a house worth forty pounds a year. Of the electors, the qualification is a freehold of ten pounds *per annum*.

THE Governor of this, and the other islands in the same government, is chancellor by his office, and in St. Christopher's sits alone. Attempts have been made to join some of the council with him, as in Barbadoes; but hitherto without success, the inhabitants choosing rather to submit to the expence and delay of following the chancellor to Antigua, than suffer the inconveniency of having on the chancery bench judges, some of whom it is probable, from their situation and connections, may be interested in the event of every suit that may come before them.

IN

BOOK

III.

IN this island, as in Jamaica, the jurisdiction of both the King's Bench and Common Pleas, centers in one superior court, wherein justice is administered by a chief justice and four puisne judges. The chief is appointed by the crown, the others by the governor in the King's name, and they all hold their commissions during pleasure. The office of chief judge is worth about £.600. *per annum*. The emoluments of the assistant judges are trifling.

THE present number of white inhabitants is computed at 4000, and taxes are levied on 26,000 negroes; and there are about three hundred blacks and mulattoes of free condition.

As in the other British islands in the neighbourhood, all the white men from the age of sixteen to sixty are obliged to enlist in the militia, and in this island they serve without pay. They form two regiments of foot, although the whole number of effective men in each regiment seldom exceeds three hundred; but there is likewise a company of free blacks, and this, before the late war, constituted the whole of the military force within the island; the British government refusing to send them troops of any kind.

OF the wisdom of such conduct in Great Britain, the reader will be able properly to judge, when he is told, that the natural strength of this island, from the conformation and inequalities of its surface, is such, that a garrison of two thousand effective troops, properly supplied with ammunition and provisions, would

would in all human probability have rendered it impregnable to the formidable invasion of 1782.

CHAP.
IV.

WITH St. Christopher's surrendered also the island of Nevis; from which it is divided only by a small channel, and of which I shall now give some account.

SECTION II.

N E V I S.

THIS beautiful little spot is nothing more than a single mountain, rising like a cone in an easy ascent from the sea; the circumference of its base not exceeding eight English leagues. It is believed that Columbus bestowed on it the appellation of *Nieves*, or *The Snows*, from its resemblance to a mountain of the same name in Spain; but it is not an improbable conjecture, that in those days a white smoke was seen to issue from the summit, which at a distance had a snow-like appearance, and that it derived its name from thence. That the island was produced by some volcanic explosion, there can be no doubt; for there is a hollow, or crater, near the summit, still visible, which contains a hot spring strongly impregnated with sulphur; and sulphur is frequently found in substance, in the neighbouring gullies and cavities of the earth.

BOOK
III.

THE country is well watered, and the land in general fertile, a small proportion towards the summit of the island excepted, which answers however for the growth of ground provisions, such as yams and other esculent vegetables. The soil is stony; the best is a loose black mould, on a clay. In some places, the upper stratum is a stiff clay, which requires labour, but properly divided and pulverised, repays the labour bestowed upon it. The general produce of sugar (its only staple production) is one hoghead of sixteen cwt. *per* acre from all the canes that are annually cut, which being about 4000 acres, the return of the whole is an equal number of hogheads, and this was the average fixed on by the French government in 1782, as a rule for regulating the taxes. As at St. Christopher's the planters seldom cut ratoon canes.

THIS island, small as it is, is divided into five parishes. It contains a town called Charles-Town, the seat of government and a port of entry, and there are two other shipping places, called Indian-Castle and New-Castle. The principal fortification is at Charles-Town, and is called Charles Fort. The commandant is appointed by the crown, but receives a salary from the island.

THE government, in the absence of the Governor-General, is administered by the president of the council. This board is composed of the president, and six other members. The house of assembly consists of fifteen representatives; three for each parish.

THE administration of common law is under the guidance of a chief justice, and two assistant judges, and there is an office for the registry of deeds.

C H A P.
IV.

THE present number of white inhabitants is stated to me not to exceed six hundred, while the negroes amount to about ten thousand; a disproportion which necessarily converts all such white men as are not exempted by age and decrepitude, into a well-regulated militia, among which there is a troop consisting of fifty horse, well mounted and accoutred. English forces, on the British establishment, they have none.

THE English first established themselves in this island in the year 1628, under the protection and encouragement of Sir Thomas Warner. Among the different classes of men, who sought to improve their fortunes in St. Christopher's by the patronage of that enterprising leader, it can hardly be presumed, that every individual experienced the full gratification of his hopes and expectations. In all societies, there are many who will consider themselves unjustly overlooked and forgotten. Of the companions of Warner's earliest voyages, it is probable that some would set too high a value on their services, and of those who ventured afterwards, many would complain, on their arrival, that the best lands were pre-occupied. To soften and temper such discordancy and disquiet, by giving full employment to the turbulent and seditious, seems to have been one of the most important objects of Warner's policy. Motives of this nature induced him, without doubt, to plant a colony in Nevis at so early a period; and the wisdom and propriety of his first regulations gave strength and stability to the settlement.

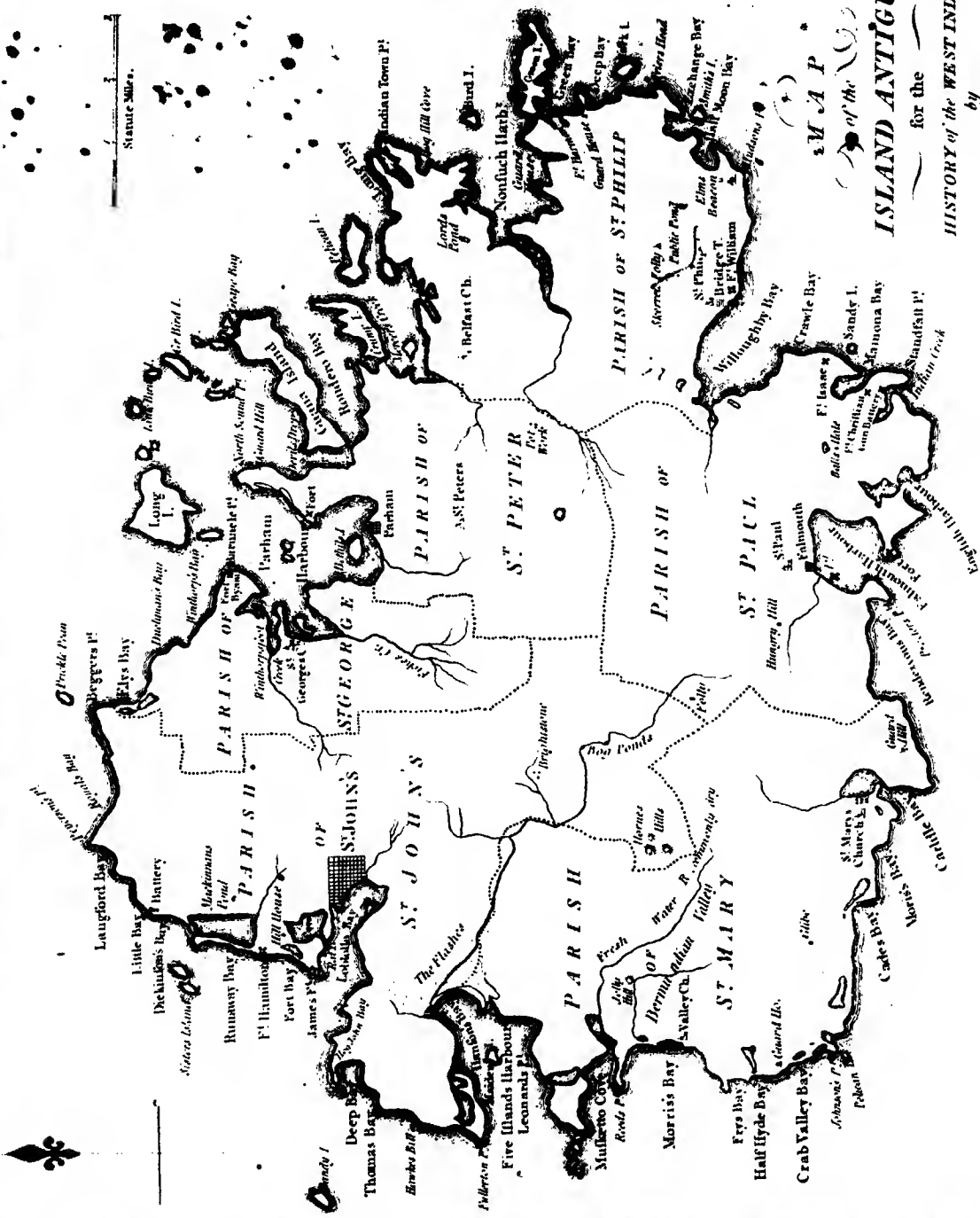
BOOK

III.

WHAT Warner began wisely, was happily completed by his immediate successor Mr. Lake, under whose administration Nevis rose to opulence and importance. "He was a wise man," says Du Tertre, "and feared the Lord." Making this island the place of his residence, it flourished beyond example. It is said, that about the year 1640, it possessed four thousand whites: so powerfully are mankind invited by the advantages of a mild and equitable system of government! Will the reader pardon me, if I observe at the same time, that few situations in life could have afforded greater felicity than that of such a governor. Living amidst the beauties of an eternal spring, beneath a sky serene and unclouded, and in a spot inexpressively beautiful (for it is enlivened by a variety of the most enchanting prospects in the world, in the numerous islands which surround it) but above all, happy in the reflection that he conciliated the differences, administered to the necessities, and augmented the comforts of thousands of his fellow creatures, all of whom looked up to him as their common father and protector! If there be pure joy on earth, it must have existed in the bosom of such a man; while he beheld the tribute of love, gratitude and approbation towards him in every countenance, and whose heart at the same time told him that he deserved it.

I AM sorry that I must present the reader with a very different picture, in the account that I am now to give of Antigua.

Statute Miles.



MAP
of the
ISLAND ANTIGUA
for the
HISTORY of the WEST INDIES
by
Bryan Edwards Esq^r.

SECTION III.

ANTIGUA.

ANTIGUA is situated about twenty leagues to the eastward of St. Christopher's, and was discovered at the same time with that island, by Columbus himself, who named it, from a church in Seville, *Santa Maria de la Antigua*. We are informed by Ferdinand Columbus, that the Indian name was *Jamaica*. It is a singular circumstance, that this word, which in the language of the larger islands signified a country *abounding in springs*, should, in the dialect of the Charaibes, have been applied to an island that has not a single spring or rivulet of fresh water in it.

CHAP.
IV.

THIS inconvenience, without doubt, as it rendered the country uninhabitable to the Charaibes, deterred for some time the European adventurers in the neighbouring islands from attempting a permanent establishment in Antigua; but nature presents few obstacles which the avarice or industry of civilized man will not endeavour to surmount. The lands were found to be fertile, and it was discovered that cisterns might be contrived to hold rain-water (*b*). So early as 1632,

(*b*). The water thus preserved is wonderfully light, pure, and wholesome.

BOOK

III.

a few English families took up lands there, and began the cultivation of tobacco. Among these was a son of Sir Thomas Warner, whose descendants still possess very considerable property in the island, one of them (Ashton Warner, Esquire) having been, in 1787, president of the council, and commander in chief in the absence of the governor.

BUT it was chiefly to the enterprising spirit and extensive views of Colonel Codrington, of Barbadoes, that Antigua was indebted for its growing prosperity and subsequent opulence. This gentleman removing to this island about the year 1674, applied his knowledge in sugar-planting with such good effect and success, that others, animated by his example, and assisted by his advice and encouragement, adventured in the same line of cultivation. Mr. Codrington was some years afterwards nominated captain-general and commander in chief of all the leeward Charaibbean islands, and, deriving from this appointment, the power of giving greater energy to his benevolent purposes, had soon the happiness of beholding the good effects of his humanity and wisdom, in the flourishing condition of the several islands under his government.

THE prosperity of Antigua was manifested in its extensive population; for when, in the year 1690, General Codrington commanded on the expedition against the French inhabitants of St. Christopher's, as hath been related in the history of that island, Antigua furnished towards it no less than eight hundred effective men: a quota, which gives room to estimate the whole number of its white inhabitants at that time, at upwards of five thousand.

MR. CODRINGTON dying in 1698, was succeeded in his government by his son Christopher; a gentleman eminently distinguished for his attainments in polite literature; and who, treading in the same paths as his illustrious father, gave the people under his government the promise of a long continuance of felicity (*c*). His administration, however, terminated at the end of six years; for in 1704 he was superseded (I know not on what account) by Sir William Mathews; who dying soon after his arrival, the Queen was pleased to appoint to the government of this and the neighbouring islands, Daniel Park, Esq. a man whose tragical end having excited the attention of Europe, and furnished a lesson for history to perpetuate, I shall be excused for entering somewhat at large into his conduct and fortune.

MR. PARK was a native of Virginia, and was distinguished for his excesses at a very early time of life. Having married a lady of fortune in America, his first exploit was to rob his wife of her money, and then desert her. With this money he came to England, and obtained a return to Parliament; but gross bribery being proved against him, he was expelled the house. His next adventure was to debauch the wife of a friend, for which being prosecuted, he quitted England, and made a campaign with the army in Flanders, where he had the fortune.

(*c*) He was the author, if I mistake not, of a copy of verses prefixed to Garth's Dispensary, in which is this beautiful triplet:

I read thee over with a lover's eye :
Thou hast no faults, or I no faults can spy ;
Thou art all beauty ;—or all blindness I.

BOOK

III.

to attract the notice, and acquire the patronage, of the Duke of Marlborough.—In 1704, he attended the Duke as one of his aides-de-camp, and as such, on the event of the battle of Hochstet, having been sent by his Grace to England, with intelligence of that important victory, he was rewarded by the Queen with a purse of a thousand guineas, and her picture richly set with diamonds. The year following, the government of the Leeward Islands becoming vacant, Mr. Park, through the interest of his noble patron, was appointed to succeed Sir William Mathews therein, and he arrived at Antigua in July 1706.

As he was a native of America, and his interest with the British administration was believed to be considerable, the inhabitants of the Leeward Islands, who were probably unacquainted with his private character, received him with singular respect, and the assembly of Antigua, even contrary to a royal instruction, added a thousand pounds to his yearly income, in order, as it was expressed in the vote, to relieve him from the expence of house-rent; a provision which, I believe, has been continued ever since to his successors in the government.

THE return which Mr. Park thought proper to make for this mark of their kindness, was an avowed and unrestrained violation of all decency and principle. He feared neither God nor man; and it was soon observed of him, as it had formerly been of another detestable tyrant, *that he spared no man in his anger, nor woman in his lust.* One of his first enormities was to
 X debauch

debauch the wife of a Mr. Chester, who was factor to the royal African company, and the most considerable merchant in the island. Apprehending that the injured husband might meditate revenge, the worthy governor endeavoured to be beforehand with him, by adding the crime of murder to that of adultery; for Chester having about this time had the misfortune to kill a person by accident, his excellency, who had raised a common soldier to the office of provost-marshal, brought him to a trial for his life; directing his instrument the provost-marshal, to impanel a jury of certain persons, from whom he doubted not to obtain Chester's conviction; and the execution of this innocent and injured man would undoubtedly have followed, if the evidence in his favour had not proved too powerful to be overborne; so that the jury were compelled to pronounce his acquittal.

ANOTHER of his exploits was an attempt to rob the Codrington family of the island of Barbuda (of which they had held peaceable possession for thirty years) by calling on them to prove their title before himself and his council; a measure which gave every proprietor reason to apprehend that he had no security for his possessions but the governor's forbearance.

HE declared that he would suffer no provost-marshal to act, who should not at all times summon such juries as he should direct. He changed the mode of electing members to serve in the assembly, in order to exclude persons he did not like; and not being able by this measure to procure an assembly to his wish, he refused to call them together even when the French threatened an invasion.

BOOK

III.

HE entered the house of Mr. Chester, the person before mentioned, with an armed force, and seized several gentlemen (some of them the principal men of the island) who were there met for the purpose of good fellowship, on suspicion that they were concerting measures against himself; most of whom he sent by his own authority to the common jail, and kept them there without bail or trial.

By these, and a thousand other odious and intemperate proceedings, the whole country became a party against him, and dispatched an agent to England to lay their grievances before the crown, adopting, in the first instance, all moderate and legal means to procure his removal; but from the delays incident to the business, the people lost all temper, and began to consider forbearance as no longer a virtue. More than one attempt was made on the governor's life, in the last of which he was grievously, but not mortally, wounded. Unhappily the furious and exasperated state of men's minds admitted of no compromise, and the rash impetuous governor was not of a disposition to soften or conciliate, if occasion had offered.

At length, however, instructions came from the crown, directing Mr. Park to resign his command to the lieutenant-governor, and return to England by the first convenient opportunity; at the same time commissioners were appointed to take examinations on the spot, concerning the complaints which had been urged against his conduct. It would have been happy if the inhabitants of Antigua had borne their success with moderation; but the triumphant joy which they manifested,

manifested, on receipt of the Queen's orders, provoked the governor into desperation. He declared that he would continue in the government in spite of the inhabitants, and being informed, that a ship was about to sail for Europe, in which he might conveniently have embarked, he refused to leave the country. In the meanwhile, to convince the people that his firmness was unabated, and that he still considered himself in the rightful exercise of his authority, he issued a proclamation to dissolve the assembly.

MATTERS were now coming fast to an issue. The assembly continued sitting notwithstanding the governor's proclamation, and resolved, that having been recalled by his sovereign, his continuance in the government was usurpation and tyranny, and that it was their duty to take charge of the safety and peace of the island. On hearing of this vote, the governor secretly ordered a party of soldiers to surround them; but the assembly having obtained information of his intentions, immediately separated to provide for their personal safety. The ensuing night, and the whole of the following day, were employed in summoning the inhabitants from all parts of the island, to hasten to the capital, properly armed, to protect their representatives. It was given out, however, that the governor's life was not aimed at; all that was intended, was to secure his person, and send him from the island.

ON Thursday the 7th of December 1710, early in the morning, about five hundred men appeared in arms, in the town of Saint John's, where Colonel Park had been making provision

BOOK

III.

for resistance in case of an attack. He had converted the government house into a garrison, and stationed in it all the regular troops that were in the island. On the approach of the inhabitants however, his courage deserted him. The sight of an injured people, coming forward as one man, with deliberate valour, to execute on his person that punishment which he must have been conscious his enormities well merited, overwhelmed him with confusion and terror. Although he must have been apprized, that his adversaries had proceeded too far to retreat, he now, for the first time, when it was too late, had recourse to concession. He dispatched the provost-marshal with a message, signifying his readiness to meet the assembly at Parham, and to consent to whatever laws they should think proper to pass for the good of the country. He offered at the same time to dismiss his soldiers, provided six of the principal inhabitants would remain with him as hostages for the safety of his person. The speaker of the assembly, and one of the members of the council, unwilling to carry matters to the last extremity, seemed inclined to a compromise, and proposed themselves as two of the hostages required by the governor; but the general body of the people, apprehensive that further delay might be fatal to their cause, called aloud for immediate vengeance; and instantly marched forward in two divisions. One of these, led by Mr. Piggot, a member of the assembly, taking possession of an eminence that commanded the government house, attacked it with great fury. The fire was briskly returned for a considerable time, but at length the assailants broke into the house. The governor met them with firmness, and shot Piggot dead with his own hand, but received in the same

moment a wound which laid him prostrate. His attendants, seeing him fall, threw down their arms, and the enraged populace, seizing the person of the wretched governor, who was still alive, tore him into a thousand pieces, and scattered his reeking limbs in the street. Besides the governor, an ensign and thirteen private soldiers, who fought in his cause, were killed outright, and a lieutenant and twenty-four privates wounded. Of the people, thirty-two were killed and wounded, besides Mr. Piggot. The governor's death instantly put an end to this bloody conflict.

Thus perished, in a general insurrection of an insulted and indignant community, a brutal and licentious despot, than whom no state criminal was ever more deservedly punished. He was a monster in wickedness, and being placed by his situation beyond the reach of ordinary restraint, it was as lawful to cut him off by every means possible, as it would have been to shoot a wild beast that had broke its limits, and was gorging itself with human blood. "The people of England, says an eminent writer (*d*) heard with astonishment of Park's untimely fate; but the publick were divided in their sentiments; some looking upon his death as an act of rebellion against the crown, and others considering it as a sacrifice to liberty. The flagrancy of the perpetration, and compassion for the man, at last got the better." In the latter assertion however, the writer is clearly mistaken; for the English government, after full investigation, was so thoroughly satisfied of Mr. Park's misconduct, as to issue, much to its honour, a general pardon of all persons concerned in his death, and two of the principal actors therein were even promoted some time afterwards to seats in the council.

FROM this period I close my account of the civil concerns of Antigua, finding no occurrence in its subsequent history of sufficient importance to detain the reader; what remains therefore is chiefly topographical, and I hope will be found correct.

ANTIGUA is upwards of fifty miles in circumference, and contains 59,838 acres of land, of which about 34,000 are appropriated to the growth of sugar, and pasturage annexed: its other principal staples are cotton-wool and tobacco; to what extent of cultivation I am not informed; and they raise in favourable years great quantities of provisions.

THIS island contains two different kinds of soil; the one a black mould on a substratum of clay, which is naturally rich, and when not checked by excessive droughts, to which Antigua is particularly subject, very productive. The other is a stiff clay on a substratum of marl. It is much less fertile than the former, and abounds with an inirradicable kind of grass, in such a manner that many estates consisting of that kind of soil, which were once very profitable, are now so impoverished and overgrown with this sort of grass, as either to be converted into pasture land, or to become entirely abandoned. Exclusive of such deserted land, and a small part of the country that is altogether unimprovable, every part of the island may be said to be under cultivation.

FROM the circumstances that have been related, it is difficult to furnish an average return of the crops, which vary to so great a degree,

a degree, that the quantity of sugar exported from this island in some years, is five times greater than in others; thus in 1779 were shipped 3,382 hogshheads, and 579 tierces; in 1782 the crop was 15,102 hogshheads, and 1,603 tierces; and in the years 1770, 1773, and 1778, there were no crops of any kind; all the canes being destroyed by a long continuance of dry weather, and the whole body of the negroes must have perished for want of food, if American vessels with corn and flour had been at that time, as they now are, denied admittance.

It seems to me on the whole, that the island has progressively decreased both in produce and white population. The last accurate returns to government were in 1774. In that year, the white inhabitants of all ages and sexes were 2,590, and the enslaved negroes 37,808, and I believe, that 17,000 hogshheads of sugar of sixteen cwt. are reckoned a good saving crop. This, as one-half the canes only are cut annually, is about a hogshhead of sugar *per* acre for each acre that is cut. The produce of 1787 will be given hereafter; and I believe it was a year more favourable to Antigua, in proportion to its extent, than to any other of the British islands in the West Indies.

ANTIGUA is divided into six parishes and eleven districts, and contains six towns and villages. Saint John's (*e*), (the capital) Parham, Falmouth, Willoughby Bay, Old Road, and James Fort; of which, the two first are legal ports of entry.—No island, in this part of the West Indies, can boast of so many

(*e*) The town of Saint John's was nearly destroyed by fire on the 17th of August 1769; upwards of 260 houses being consumed; besides wharfs, cranes, &c. &c.

BOOK

III.

excellent harbours. Of these, the principal are English harbour and Saint John's, both well fortified, and at the former, the British government has established a royal navy-yard and arsenal, and conveniencies for careening ships of war.

THE military establishment generally consists of two regiments of infantry, and two of foot militia. There are likewise a squadron of dragoons, and a battalion of artillery, both raised in the island, and the regulars receive additional pay, as in Jamaica.

IT hath been already observed, that the governor or captain-general of the leeward Charaibbean islands, although directed by his instructions to visit occasionally each island within his government, is generally stationary at Antigua : he is chancellor of each island by his office, but commonly holds the court in Antigua, and in hearing and determining causes from the other islands, presides alone. In causes arising in Antigua, he is assisted by his council, after the practice of Barbadoes ; and, by an act of the assembly of this island, confirmed by the crown, the president and a certain number of the council may determine chancery causes during the absence of the governor-general. The other courts of this island are a court of king's-bench, a court of common-pleas, and a court of exchequer.

THE legislature of Antigua is composed of the commander in chief, a council of twelve members, and an assembly of twenty-five ; and it is very much to its honour that it presented the first example to the sister islands of a melioration of the criminal law respecting

respecting negroe slaves, by giving the accused party the benefit of a trial by jury: and allowing in the case of capital convictions four days between the time of sentence and execution. And it is still more to the honour of Antigua, that its inhabitants have encouraged, in a particular manner, the laudable endeavours of certain pious men, who have undertaken, from the purest and best motives, to enlighten the minds of the negroes, and lead them into the knowledge of religious truth. In the report of the lords of the committee of council on the slave-trade, is an account of the labours of the society known by the name of the *Unitas Fratrum*, (commonly called *Moravians*) in this truly glorious pursuit; from which it appears that their conduct in this business displays such sound judgment, breathes such a spirit of genuine christianity, and has been attended with such eminent success, as to entitle its brethren and missionaries to the most favourable reception, from every man whom the accidents of fortune have invested with power over the poor Africans; and who believes (as I hope every planter believes) that they are his fellow-creatures, and of equal importance with himself in the eyes of an all-seeing and impartial governor of the universe. With an abridgment of that account, I shall close the subject of my present discussion.

“ THE church of the united brethren have, ever since the year 1732, been active in preaching the gospel to different heathen nations in many parts of the world, but not with equal success in all places. The method here described, and made use of by the missionaries of the said church, in leading the negro-slaves in the West Indies to the knowledge and practice of

christianity, is followed, in all points that are not local, in all the missions of the brethren.

AFTER many years unsuccessful labour, experience has taught them, that the plain testimony concerning the death and passion of Jesus Christ the Son of God, together with its cause and happy consequences, delivered by a missionary touched with an experimental sense of it, is the surest way of enlightening the benighted minds of the negroes, in order to lead them afterwards step by step into all truth : they therefore make it a rule, never to enter into an extensive discussion of the doctrines of God's being an infinite spirit, of the holy trinity, &c. nor to seek to open their understandings in those points, until they believe in Jesus, and that the word of the cross has proved itself the power of God unto salvation, by the true conversion of their hearts. Both in the beginning and progress of their instructions, the missionaries endeavour to deliver themselves as plainly and intelligibly to the faculties of their hearers as possible ; and the Lord has given his blessing even to the most unlearned, that went forth in reliance upon him, to learn the difficult languages of the negroes, so as to attain to great fluency in them : one great difficulty arises indeed from the new ideas and words necessary to express the divine truths to be introduced into them, but even this has been surmounted through God's grace.

As it is required of all believers, that they prove their faith by their works ; the brethren teach, that no habit of sin, in any land or place, nor any prevailing custom whatever, can be admitted

mitted as a plea for a behaviour not conformable to the moral law of God, given unto all mankind. Upon the fulfilment of this, the missionaries insist every where. Every thing that is accounted decent and virtuous among christians, is inculcated into the minds of the people. Drunkenness, adultery, whoredom, forcery, theft, anger and revenge, and all other works of the flesh, as enumerated by our Lord and his Apostles as proceeding from the heart, being plain proofs that man is either unconverted, or again fallen into heathenism and idolatry, it follows of course, that any one guilty of these things is put away from the congregation, and not re-admitted before a true and sincere repentance is apparent, and the offence done away: but it is not sufficient that the believers abstain from open scandal, their private behaviour in their families, and in every occurrence of life, must evidence a thorough change of heart and principles: indeed the believing negroes in Antigua, and in other places where the brethren have missions, are so much under the influence of their masters, and of a variety of circumstances that attend their being slaves, that it may perhaps seem more difficult to effect a change of customs and practices, and to enforce a steady christian conduct in all cases amongst them, than amongst free heathens; and yet it must be owned, to the praise of God, that this is visible at present in many thousand converted negroes.

THE missionaries, however, have frequent occasion to see with sorrow, how deeply rooted the habit of sin, and the tendency to excuse it, is in the minds of the negroes; who, when unconverted, are particularly given to an unbounded gratification of

BOOK

III.

every sensual lust; but on this very account it becomes the more needful to watch, and not to suffer the least deviation from the right path, to remain unnoticed in the believers. It has been before observed, that baptism is administered to none, but to such in whom a thorough conversion of heart is already perceivable. As soon as they are considered as candidates for baptism, they are subject to the discipline of the church, by which if they offend, and private admonition and reproof have not the desired effect, they are excluded from the fellowship of the rest, though they may attend publick service, and every means is still faithfully applied to bring them back. Thus a communicant, in case of an offence given, is not admitted to the Lord's supper. This discipline has, by God's blessing, had so good an effect, that many a believing negro would rather suffer the severest bodily punishment than incur it. If they confess their sins, and heartily repent, they are willingly, and, according to the nature of the offence, either privately, or in the presence of a part or the whole of the congregation, re-admitted to the fellowship of the church. The believing negroes are not suffered to attend any where, where the unconverted meet for the sake of feasting, dancing, gaming, &c. and the usual plea *of not entering into the sinful part of these diversions*, is never admitted, inasmuch as the least step towards vice and immorality, generally plunges them by degrees into gross sins. The hankering after the vain traditions of their forefathers, is considered as a falling off from that love to the Lord Jesus and his doctrines, which once prompted them to forsake all ungodliness, and devote themselves unto God; and if they persist in evil ways, the faithfulness

fulness due to the rest of the flock on the part of the missionaries demands their separation, lest they seduce others.

CHAP.

IV.

THE polygamy of the negroes has caused no small embarrassment to the missionaries. The following is a short account of the brethren's manner of treating them in this particular: When a negro man or woman applies as above described, to be baptized or received into the congregation, strict enquiry is made concerning every circumstance attending his or her situation and connections in life. If it is found that a man has more than one wife, the question arises, how the brethren have to advise him in this particular: St. Paul says, "if any brother hath a wife that believeth not, and that is yet an heathen, and she be pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away," 1 Cor. vii. 21; but again he says, "a bishop must be blameless, the husband of one wife," 1 Tim. iii. 2. We read of no further precept in the holy scriptures concerning this subject; the brethren therefore were of opinion, that the missionaries should keep strictly to the following resolutions:

I. THAT they could not compel a man, who had, before his conversion, taken more than one wife, to put away one or more of them, without her or their consent.

II. BUT yet, that they could not appoint such a man to be a helper or servant in the church; and

III. THAT a man who believeth in Christ, if he marry, should take only one wife in marriage, and that he is bound to keep himself only to that woman, till death parts them.

THE

BOOK

III

THE instances that a man has three wives are few; all mistresses must of course be put away without exception; besides this, the missionaries lose no opportunity of inculcating into the minds of the married people, how to walk in this state conformable to the rules laid down in holy writ, and every deviation from them is severely censured. If any baptized man leaves his wife, and takes another, and takes one or more wives besides the first, or in case he has had two, and one dies, and he should marry another, he is excluded the fellowship of the church. Neither can the brethren admit of the heathenish customs in courting a wife, but they expect, that in case a believer wish to marry, he do all things in a decent and christian manner: it is of course expected that all baptized parents educate their children in the fear of the Lord, shewing them a good example. If by a sale of negroes by auction, or in any other way, wives are torn from their husbands, or husbands from their wives, and carried off to distant islands, though the brethren do not advise, yet they cannot hinder a regular marriage with another person, especially, if a family of young children, or other circumstances, seem to render an helpmate necessary; and, as is mostly the case, no hopes remain of the former ever returning. A certificate of baptism is given to every baptized negro, that must thus leave the congregation; and there have been instances, that by their godly walk and conversation in distant parts, they have caused others to hearken to their word and believe.

THOUGH all the above injunctions are of such a nature, that they not only war against their heathenish propensities, but even against what some might call excusable indulgencies; yet
it

it is a fact, that at this present time, some thousand negroes in Antigua, and other islands, submit to them with willingness.

CHAP.

IV.

THE number of converted Negro slaves under the care of the brethren, at the end of the year 1787, was,

In Antigua, exactly	-	-	-	5,465
In St. Kitt's, a new mission	-	-	-	80
In Barbadoes and Jamaica, about	-	-	-	100
In St. Thomas, St. Croix, and St.				
Jan, about	-	-	-	10,000
In Surinam, about	-	-	-	400

STILL living in the West Indies and Surinam 16,045, as nearly as can be ascertained from the latest accounts."

SECTION IV.

M O N T S E R R A T.

OF this little island, neither the extent nor the importance demands a very copious discussion. It was discovered at the same time with St. Christopher's, and derived its name from a supposed resemblance which Columbus perceived in the face of the country, to a mountain of the same name near Barcelona.

THE name was all that was bestowed upon it by the Spaniards. Like Nevis, it was first planted by a small colony from St. Christopher's, detached in 1632 from the adventurers under

Warner.

BOOK

III.

Warner. Their separation appears indeed to have been partly occasioned by local attachments and religious dissensions; which rendered their situation in St. Christopher's uneasy, being chiefly natives of Ireland, of the Romish persuasion. The same causes, however, operated to the augmentation of their numbers; for so many persons of the same country and religion adventured thither soon after the first settlement, as to create a white population which it has ever since possessed; if it be true, as asserted by Oldmixon, that at the end of sixteen years there were in the island upwards of one thousand white families, constituting a militia of three hundred and sixty effective men.

THE civil history of this little island contains nothing very remarkable. It was invaded by a French force in 1712, and suffered so much from the depredations of that armament, that an article was inserted in the treaty of Utrecht for appointing commissioners to enquire into the damages; which, however, were not made good to the sufferers. It was again invaded, and with most of the other islands captured by the French in the late war, and restored with the rest.

NOTHING therefore remains but to furnish the reader with an account of its present state in respect of cultivation, productions, and exports.

MONTSERRAT is about three leagues in length, and as many in breadth, and is supposed to contain about thirty thousand acres of land, of which almost two-thirds are very mountainous, or very barren. The land in cultivation is appropriated nearly

as follows. In sugar, six thousand acres: In cotton, provisions, and pasturage, two thousand each. None other of the tropical staples are raised. Its average crop from 1784 to 1788, were 2,737 hogshheads of sugar of sixteen hundred weight, 1,107 puncheons of Rum, and 275 bales of cotton. The exports of 1787, and their value at the London market, will be seen in a table annexed to this chapter. They are produced by the labour of one thousand three hundred whites, and about ten thousand negroes.

THE government is administered in this, as in the other islands, by a legislature of its own, under the captain general. The council consists of six members, and the assembly of eight, two from each of the four districts into which it is divided; and the proportion which Montserrat contributes to the salary of the captain general is *£.400 per annum*.

SECTION V.

VIRGIN ISLANDS.

OF the Virgin Islands I have so few particulars to communicate, that I fear the reader will accuse me of inattention or idleness in my researches. I have, however, solicited information of those who I thought were most likely to afford it; but if my enquiries were not slighted, my expectations were not gratified.

BOOK

III.

tified. Even in a late historical account by Mr. Sackling, the chief justice of these islands, I find but little of which I can avail myself. It furnishes no particulars concerning their extent, their cultivation, or their commerce. It is silent as to the number of their present English inhabitants. The author is even misinformed as to the origin of their present name; for he supposes that it was bestowed upon them in 1580, by Sir Francis Drake, in honour of Queen Elizabeth; but the fact is, that these islands were named Las Virgines, by Columbus himself, who discovered them in 1493, and gave them this appellation in allusion to the well known legend in the Römish ritual of the 11,000 virgins.

THE Spaniards of those days, however, thought them unworthy of further notice. A century afterwards (1596) they were visited by the earl of Cumberland, in his way to the attack of Porto Rico, and the historian of that voyage, whose narrative is preserved in Hakluyt's collection, calls them "a knot of little islands wholly uninhabited, sandy, barren, and craggy." The whole group may comprehend about forty islands, islets, and keys, and they are divided at present between the English, the Spaniards, and Danes. The English hold Tortola, and Virgin Gorda (*e*), Josvan Dykes, Guana Isle, Beef and Thatch Islands, Anegada, Nichar, Prickly Pear, Camana's, Ginger, Cooper's, Salt Island, Peter's Island, and several others of little value. The Danes possess Santa Cruz (*f*), St. Thomas,

(*e*) This last is likewise called Penniston, and corruptly Spanish Town. It has two very good harbours.

(*f*) Ste. Croix, or Santa Cruz, belonged originally to the French, and was sold by them to the Danes, in 1733, for the sum of 75,000 *l*. Its inhabitants are chiefly

Thomas, with about twelve smaller islands dependent thereon, and St. John, which last is of importance as having the best harbour of any island to the leeward of Antigua, and the Spaniards claim Crab Island, the Green or Serpent Island, the Tropic Keys, and Great and Little Passage.

THE first possessors of such of these islands as now belong to the British government, were a party of Dutch Bucaniers who fixed themselves at Tortola (in what year is not recorded) and built a fort there for their protection. In 1666, they were driven out by a stronger party of the same adventurers, who, calling themselves English, pretended to take possession for the crown of England, and the English monarch, if he did not commission the enterprize, made no scruple to claim the benefit of it; for Tortola and its dependencies were soon afterwards annexed to the Leeward Island government, in a commission granted by King Charles II. to Sir William Stapleton, and I believe that the English title has remained unimpeached from that time to this.

THE Dutch had made but little progress in cultivating the country when they were expelled from Tortola; and the chief merit of its subsequent improvements was reserved for some English settlers from the little island of Anguilla, who, about a century past, embarked with their families and settled in the Virgin Islands. Their wants were few, and their government

chiefly English, and the lands being exceedingly fertile, the produce of this little island (most of which I believe is smuggled into Great Britain as the produce of Tortola) is very considerable, particularly sugar.

BOOK

III.

simple and unexpensive. The deputy governor, with a council nominated from among themselves, exercised both the legislative and judicial authority, determining, in a summary manner, without a jury, all questions between subject and subject; and as to taxes, there seem to have been none laid: when money was absolutely necessary for publick use, it was raised, I believe, by voluntary contribution.

UNDER such a system, it was impossible that the colony could attain to much importance. It wanted the advantage of English capitals; but credit is sparingly given where payment cannot easily be enforced. The inhabitants therefore, whose numbers in 1756, amounted to 1,263 whites, and 6,121 blacks, reasonably hoped to be put on the same footing with the sister islands, by the establishment of a perfect civil government, and constitutional courts of justice among them; but in this expectation they were not gratified until the year 1773. In that year, they presented an humble petition to the captain-general of the Leeward Island government, requesting his excellency to unite with them in an application to his Majesty, for permission to elect an assembly of representatives out of the freeholders and planters, in order that such assembly, with the governor and council, might frame proper laws for their peace, welfare, and good government; *pledging themselves, in that case, to grant to his Majesty, his heirs and successors, an impost of four and a half per centum, in specie, upon all goods and commodities the growth of these islands, similar to that which was paid in the other Leeward Islands.*

THEIR application (thus sweetened) proved successful. It was signified to them that his Majesty, fully considering the persons, circumstances, and condition of his said Virgin Islands, and the necessity there was, from the then state of their culture and inhabitancy, that some adequate and perfect form of civil government should be established therein; “and finally trusting “that his faithful subjects in his said Virgin Islands, who “should compose the new assembly, would, as the first act of “legislation, cheerfully make good the engagement of granting “to his Majesty, his heirs and successors, the impost of four “and a half *per centum*, on all the produce of the Virgin “Islands, to be raised and paid in the same manner as the “four and a half *per centum* is made payable in the other “*Leeward Islands*,” did cause his royal pleasure to be signified to the governor in chief, that he should issue writs in his Majesty’s name, for convening an assembly or house of representatives, who, together with a council, to be composed of twelve persons, to be appointed by the governor for that purpose, might frame and pass such laws as should be necessary for the welfare and good government of the said Islands.

ACCORDINGLY, on the 30th of November, 1773, the governor in chief of the Leeward Islands, in obedience to his Majesty’s orders, issued a proclamation for convening an assembly or house of representatives of the Virgin Islands, who met on the 1st of February following, and very honourably complied with their engagement to the crown; the very first act passed by them being the grant before mentioned of four and a half *per centum*, on the produce of the colony for ever. They after-

wards passed a grant of £. 400 currency *per annum*, as their proportion towards the salary of the governor-general.

SUCH was the price at which the Virgin Islands purchased the establishment of a constitutional legislature. If it be difficult to reconcile this precedent with the doctrines which have been maintained in the case of Grenada, it may perhaps be said (as I believe the fact was) that the inhabitants of these islands were unapprised of the rights which they inherited as British subjects, when they voluntarily proposed to subject themselves and their posterity to the tax in question for permission to enjoy them; and their posterity may perhaps dispute the authority which their forefathers exercised on this occasion.

THE chief, and almost the only staple productions of these islands are sugar and cotton. Of the quantity of land appropriated to the cultivation of either, I have no account, nor can I venture even to guess, at the quantity of unimproved land which may yet be brought into cultivation: Tortola itself is not more than fifteen miles long, and six miles broad: the exports of 1787 will presently be given, and I have only to add, that they were raised by the labour of about one thousand two hundred whites, and nine thousand blacks.

HAVING so far treated of the several islands which constitute what is called the Leeward Island Government, as they stand distinct from each other, I close my account, as in former cases, with an authentick Table of their Returns for 1787; after which, I shall, as proposed, offer a few observations on circumstances which are common to them all.

An ACCOUNT of the Number of Vessels, &c. that have cleared outwards from the Islands of St. Christopher's, Montserrat, Antigua, Nevis, and the Virgin Islands, between the 5th January 1787, and the 5th January 1788; together with an Account of their Cargoes, and the Value thereof.

ST. CHRISTOPHER'S.

Whither bound.	SHIPPING.				Sugar.	Rum.	Molasses.	Indigo.	Cotton.	Dying Woods. in Value.	Miscellaneous Articles in Value.	TOTAL
	No.	Tonnage.	Mens.	Carrs.	grs. lbs.	Gallons.	Gallons.	lbs.	lbs.	£. s. d.	£. s. d.	£. s. d.
To Great Britain	53	11,692	764	23,197	2 12	78,299	8,154	318	48,640	5,824 1 6	33,195 16 10	48,178 15 5
Ireland	3	350	30	3,099	—	8,500	—	—	—	—	20 11	6,538 6
American States	21	2,457	140	586	—	167,740	—	—	—	—	186 10	15,812 15
British Colonies in America	19	1,201	110	646	—	65,000	—	—	—	—	19	6,588 10
Foreign West Indies	104	7,155	546	—	—	15,070	—	—	—	165	15 1 6	1,458 14
Total from St. Christopher's	200	23,155	1,590	235,528	2 12	334,609	8,154	318	48,640	5,989 1 6	33,456 19 4	515,014 — 5

ANTIGUA.

To Great Britain	65	13,856	901	25,275	1 18	128,936	3,510	26	131,010	1,742 6 6	49,400 18 3	224,581 19 6
Ireland	16	1,989	159	23,295	—	97,400	—	—	29,500	24,800	43	54,768 16 8
American States	71	8,281	552	6,779	—	375,150	1,700	—	—	—	407 5	4,507 19 2
British Colonies in America	34	2,127	177	844	—	109,520	700	—	—	—	14 7	11,031 15 4
Foreign West Indies	47	2,540	259	53	—	5,740	—	—	—	—	1,075	1,632 5
Total from Antigua	233	27,863	2,048	284,422	1 18	716,556	5,910	26	160,510	4,142 6 6	48,006 10 3	594,500 15 8

MONTserrat AND NEVIS.

To Great Britain	25	5,471	341	22,225	— 21	44,400	1,375	140	9,977	30 7 0	1,102 3 2	185,729 10 11
American States	20	1,850	158	1,995	—	122,710	—	—	—	—	70 10	13,021 12 6
British Colonies in America	7	370	49	64	—	21,310	—	—	500	—	41 5 3	2,053 14 3
Foreign West Indies	71	3,885	377	—	—	14,300	—	—	—	—	89 4	13,350 19
Africa	1	102	3	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—
Total from Montserrat and Nevis	122	10,707	944	14,284	— 21	289,076	1,315	140	9,472	302 7 6	1,563 3 5	214,410 8

VIRGIN ISLANDS.

To Great Britain	25	5,437	344	28,749	1 6	517	2,011	—	28,557	6,561 2 6	2,312 18 5	16,102 17 7
American States	3	571	21	61	—	13,900	—	—	1,500	—	6 4	1,499 9
British Colonies in America	4	216	22	363	—	7,000	—	—	—	—	10 5	1,250 5
Foreign West Indies	8	481	51	—	—	—	—	—	—	90	10 11	100 11
Total from the Virgin Islands	40	6,516	446	79,223	1 6	21,417	2,011	—	28,077	6,651 2 6	2,340 18 5	166,959 12 6
Grand Total	595	69,121	4,978	709,542	2 1	1,361,648	17,388	484	1,026,699	17,134 18 —	85,147 11 5	1,448,371 2 3

BOOK
III.

IN surveying these islands collectively, the circumstance that first presents itself to notice is the burthen of the four and half *per centum* on their exported produce, to which they are all subject equally with Barbadoes, and which, though granted by their own assemblies, was in most other cases, as well as the Virgin Islands, the price of a constitutional legislature, and a communication of the common privileges of British subjects.

It would without doubt be satisfactory to the reader to be furnished with an account of the produce of this duty, and the particulars of its disposal, but no such information, to my knowledge, has of late years been given to the publick. The last return that I am possessed of, is dated so long ago as the year 1735. From thence it appears, that the whole money collected on this account, both in Barbadoes and the Leeward Islands, in twenty-one years, (from Christmas 1713 to Christmas 1734) amounted to £.326,529. 2s. 3d½. sterling, of which it is shameful to relate that no more than £.140,032. 13s. 5d½. was paid into the British Exchequer; upwards of £.80,000 having been retained in the Islands for the charges of collecting, and £.105,000 more, expended in Great Britain in the payment of freight, duties, commissions, fees of office, and other claims and deductions (*g*).

(*g*) Some years after this, a new mode of collecting the duties was, I believe, adopted, which rendered the tax more productive to government.

FROM

FROM the net money paid into the exchequer, the Governor General of these islands receives a salary of £. 1,200 sterling, exclusive of the several sums granted him by the colonial assemblies (*g*), and I believe that salaries are allowed from the same fund to the Lieutenant General, and the several Lieutenant Governors. I have been informed too, that the Governors of the Bahama and Bermudas islands are likewise paid out of this duty. The balance which remains, after these and some other deductions are made, is wholly at the king's disposal.

BUT it is impossible not to observe, that almost all the islands within this government, as well as Barbadoes, have been, for many years past, progressively on the decline; and it is therefore probable that the present net produce of this duty is not more than sufficient to defray the several incumbrances with which it is loaded. The negroes indeed have been kept up, and even augmented, by purchase, because, as the lands have become impoverished, they have required a greater expence of labour to make them any way productive; but as the returns have not increased in the same degree, nothing could have saved the planters from ruin, but the advanced price of sugar in the markets of Europe.

It appears from authentick accounts laid before parliament,

(*g*) These grants are as follow: Antigua and St. Christopher's £. 1000 currency each. Nevis £. 400. Montserrat £. 400. Virgin Islands £. 400. The usual rate of exchange is 165 *per cent*. These sums therefore, added to £. 1200 sterling, paid out of the exchequer, make his whole salary £. 3000 sterling *per annum*.

BOOK
III.

that the import of sugar into Great Britain from all the British West Indies (Jamaica excepted), has decreased, in the course of twenty years from 3,762,804 cwt. to 2,563,228 cwt. (*b*). The difference in value, at a medium price, cannot be less than £.400,000 sterling, and it will be found to have fallen chiefly on those islands which are subject to the duty in question; to the effects of which, therefore, the deficiency must be chiefly attributed: for being laid, not on the land, but on the produce of the land, it operates as a tax on industry, and a penalty which falls heaviest on the man who contributes most to augment the wealth, commerce, navigation, and revenues of the mother-country. It is considered by the planters as equal to ten *per cent.* on the net produce of their estates for ever. Under such a burthen, which while it oppresses the colonies, yields a profit of no great consideration to the crown, they have been unable to stand a competition with the British planters in the other islands, and have been depressed still more by the rapid growth and extensive opulence of the French colonies in their neighbourhood. Thus a check has been given to the spirit of improvement, and much of that land which, though somewhat impoverished by long cultivation, would still, with the aid of manure, contribute greatly to the general returns, is abandoned, because the produce of the poorest soil is taxed as high as that of the most fertile.

To the loss arising from a decrease of produce, accompanied with an increase of contingent expences, must be added the ruinous effects of capture in the late American war. The

(*b*) Being the average of two periods, the first from 1772 to 1775, the second from 1788 to 1792.

damages sustained in St. Christopher's alone, by *Dr. Crafter's* invasion in 1732, from the destruction of negroes and cattle, and the burning of the canes, were estimated at £.160,000 sterling, which sum was made up to the sufferers by a poll-tax on the slaves, of no less than forty shillings. The annual taxes for defraying the current charges of their internal governments, in all the islands, are also exceedingly burthensome; besides parish taxes for the repair of the roads, the maintenance of the clergy, and the relief of the poor.

BUT, under all these and the other discouragements which are felt by the proprietors, the wealth which still flows from these little dependencies into the mother-country, must fill every reflecting mind with surprise and admiration. An extent of cultivated territory, not equal to one-tenth part of the county of Essex, adding yearly one million and a half to the national income, is a circumstance that demonstrates beyond all abstract reasoning, the vast importance to Great Britain of having sugar islands of her own. At the same time, it is both amusing and instructive to consider how little the present returns from these islands are answerable to the hopes and expectations of their first European possessors; or rather it affords an animated illustration of the wisdom of Providence, which frequently renders the follies and weaknesses of man productive of good. The first English adventurers were influenced wholly by the hopes of opening a golden fountain, similar to that which was flowing from Peru and Mexico into Spain. The nation was told of countries where the mountains were composed of diamonds, and the cities built wholly of ingots of gold. Such

BOOK
III.

were the dreams of Cabot, Frobisher, and Gilbert, and it is a lamentable display of the power of avarice on the human mind, to behold the sagacious and learned Raleigh bewildered in the same folly ! Experience has at length corrected this frenzy, and Europe is now wise enough to acknowledge that gold and silver have only an artificial and relative value ; that industry alone is real wealth, and that agriculture and commerce are the great sources of national prosperity.

THE produce of these islands however, though of such value to the mother-country, is raised at an expence to the cultivator, which perhaps is not equalled in any other pursuit, in any country of the globe. It is an expence too, that is permanent and certain ; while the returns are more variable and fluctuating than any other ; owing to calamities, to which these countries are exposed, both from the hands of God and man ; and it is mournful to add, that the selfish or mistaken policy of man is sometimes more destructive than even the anger of Omnipotence !

AT the time that I write this, (1791) the humanity of the British nation is tremblingly alive to the real or fictitious distresses of the African labourers in these and the other islands of the West Indies : and the holders and employers of those people seem to be marked out to the publick indignation for proscription and ruin. So strong and universal a sympathy allows no room for the sober exercise of reason, or it would be remembered, that the condition of that unfortunate race, must depend greatly on the condition and circumstances of their owners. Oppression towards the principal, will be felt with double force by

by his dependants, and the blow that wounds the master, will exterminate the slave.

CHAP.
IV.

THE propriety of these remarks will be seen in subsequent parts of my work, when I come in course to treat of the slave trade and slavery; and to consider the commercial system of Great Britain towards her West Indian dependencies, of which I have now completed the catalogue. Here then I might close the third book of my history, but it has probably occurred to the reader, that I have omitted the two governments of *Bahama* and *Bermudas* (*i*); to which indeed it was my intention, when I began my work, to appropriate a distinct chapter. An examination of my materials has induced me to alter my purpose; finding myself possessed of scarce any memorials concerning the civil history of those islands, that are not given in the numerous geographical treatises with which the shelves of the bookellers are loaded. To repeat therefore what may be found in books that are always at hand, were to manifest disrespect to the reader, and disregard to myself. Of the *present* state of the Bahama islands, I need not be ashamed to acknowledge my ignorance, inasmuch as even the lords of the committee of council for the affairs of trade and plantations, were unable to obtain satisfactory information concerning it. To their lordships enquiries, in 1789, as to the extent of territory in those islands,—the quantity of land in cultivation,—the number of

(*i*) I have also passed over unnoticed the small islands of Anguilla and Barbuda, as being of too little importance to merit particular description. The former belongs to the Leeward Island government; the latter is the private property of the Codrington family.

BOOK

III.

white inhabitants,—productions and exports, &c. the only answer that could be obtained from the Governor was this, *that it was at that time impossible to ascertain any of those particulars.* It appears, however, from the testimony of other persons, that these islands in general are rocky and barren; that the only article cultivated for exportation is cotton, of which the medium export is fifteen hundred bags of two cwt.; that the inhabitants (who in 1773 consisted of two thousand and fifty-two whites, and two thousand two hundred and forty-one blacks) have been of late years considerably augmented by emigrants from North America; but of their present numbers no precise account is given.

CONCERNING Bermudas Governor Brown is more explicit. From his answers to their Lordships' queries, it appears that they contain from twelve to thirteen thousand acres of very poor land, of which nine parts in ten are either uncultivated, or reserved in woods for the supplying of timber for building small ships, sloops, and shallops for sale; this being in truth the principal occupation and employment of the inhabitants; and the vessels which they furnish, being built of cedar, are light, buoyant, and unexpensive.

OF the land in cultivation, no part was appropriated to any other purpose than that of raising Indian corn, and esculent roots and vegetables (of which a considerable supply is sent to the West Indian Islands) until the year 1785, when the growth of cotton was attempted, but with no great success, there not being at present more than two hundred acres applied in this line of culture.

THE number of white people of all ages in Bermudas is five thousand four hundred and sixty-two; of blacks four thousand nine hundred and nineteen (*k*).

CHAP.
IV.

Thus it appears that the lands become less fertile as we recede from the tropicks, and were there not, as there certainly is, an unaccountable propensity in the greater part of mankind, to under-rate what they have in actual possession, it would require but little effort to convince the publick of the vast importance of our West Indian dependencies; of which the progressive growth has now been traced from the first settlement. What remains is to convey that conviction to the English reader. This then, after taking a cursory survey, for the gratification of curiosity, of the present inhabitants and the system of agriculture, will be the chief endeavour of the subsequent volume.

(*k*) It were an act of great injustice to the inhabitants of Bermudas, to omit the very honourable testimony which Governor Brown has transmitted to government, concerning their treatment of their negro slaves. "Nothing (he observes) can better shew the state of slavery in Bermudas than the behaviour of the blacks in the late war. There were at one time between fifteen and twenty privateers fitted out from hence, which were partly manned by negro slaves, who behaved both as sailors and marines irreproachably; and whenever they were captured, always returned, if it was in their power. There were several instances wherein they had been condemned with the vessel and sold, and afterwards found means to escape; and through many difficulties and hardships returned to their masters service. In the ship *Regulator*, a privateer, there were seventy slaves. She was taken and carried into Boston. Sixty of them returned in a flag of truce directly to Bermudas. Nine others returned by the way of New York. One only was missing, who died in the cruize, or in captivity."

Report of the Privy Council on the Slave Trade. Part III.

A P P E N D I X

T O

V O L U M E T H E F I R S T .

Plantæ numerosissimæ quibus obveſtit globum terraqueum Deus optimus maximus, ſunt
totidem documenta infinitæ ſapientiæ, natæ in gloriam ſui Creatoris, et in commodum
hominis, cujus eſt eas intueri.

AMCEN. ACAD. vol. vi. p. 40.

HORTUS EASTENSIS:

O R,

A CATALOGUE of EXOTIC PLANTS, in the Garden of HINTON EAST, Esquire, in the Mountains of Liguanea, in the Island of JAMAICA, at the time of his decease. By ARTHUR BROUGHTON, M. D.

Classis I.

M O N A N D R I A.

MONOGYNIA.

CANNA	<i>indica var. lutea</i>	Yellow Indian Shot	East-Indies	Mr. Shakespear, 1780
AMOMUM	<i>Granum paradisi*</i>	Guinea Pepper	Guinea	Tho. Hibbert, Esq. 1785
	<i>Zingiber</i>	Common Ginger	East-Indies	
CURCUMA	<i>longa</i>	Turmeric	East-Indies	Z. B. Edwards, Esq. 1783
KÆMPFERIA	<i>Galanga</i>	Galangale	East-Indies	Dr. Tho. Clarke, 1775
THALIA	<i>geniculata</i>	Indian Arrow-root	South-America	

Classis II.

D I A N D R I A.

MONOGYNIA.

NYCTANTHES	<i>Sambac</i>	Arabian Jasmine		
	<i>var. fl. pleno</i>	Double Arabian Jasmine	East-Indies	H. East, Esq. 1775
JASMINUM	<i>officinale</i>	Common Jasmine		
	<i>lanceolatum?</i>	Narrow-leav'd Jasmine	East-Indies	H. East, Esq. 1787
	<i>azoricum</i>	Azorian Jasmine	Madeira	H. East, Esq. 1787
	<i>odoratissimum</i>	Yellow Indian Jasmine	Madeira	M. Wallen, Esq. 1787
OLEA	<i>europæa</i>	European Olive	Europe	M. Wallen, Esq. 1783
	<i>fragrans</i>	Sweet-scented Olive	China	H. East, Esq. 1783
SYRINGA	<i>vulgaris</i>	Common Lilac	Perfia	M. Wallen Esq. 1774
	<i>persica</i>	Persian Lilac	Perfia	M. Wallen, Esq. 1785
JUSTICIA	<i>sp. nov. arborca</i>		Italy	Tho. Hibbert, Esq. 1787
DIANTHERA	<i>americana</i>	American Balsam	Virginia	

* This plant has now several times perfected its seed, from which it appears to be the true Guinea or Malagita Pepper and Grains of Paradise of the Shops; it is not however an AMOMUM, but approaches nearer to the LIMODORUM than any other known Genus.

ROSMARINUS	<i>officinalis</i>	Rosemary	Europe	
SALVIA	<i>officinalis</i>	Garden Sage	S. of Europe	
	<i>africana</i>	African Sage	C. of G. Hope	Dr. Tho. Clarke, 1775
	<i>coccinea</i>	Scarlet Sage	East-Florida	Dr. Tho. Clarke, 1775
	<i>Solarea</i>	Clary	Syria	H. East, Esq.

TRIGYNIA.

PIPER	<i>nigrum</i>	Black Pepper	East-Indies	Thos. Hibbert, Esq. 1789
-------	---------------	--------------	-------------	--------------------------

Classis III.

TRIANDRIA.

MONOGYNIA.

VALERIANA	<i>Locusta</i>	Lamb's Lettuce	Portugal	H. East, Esq.
TAMARINDUS	<i>indica</i>	Tamarind Tree	India. America	
CROCUS	<i>sativus</i>	Spring Crocus	England	M. Wallen, Esq. 1779
IXIA	<i>rosea</i>	Rose-coloured Ixia	C. of G. Hope	H. East, Esq.
	<i>chinensis</i>	Spotted Ixia	China	H. East, Esq. 1789
GLADIOLUS	<i>communis</i>	Common Flag	S. of Europe	M. Wallen, Esq. 1774
ANTHOLYZA	<i>aethiopica</i>		C. of G. Hope	H. East, Esq. 1788
IRIS	<i>pumila</i>	Dwarf Iris	Austria	H. East, Esq.
WACHENDORFIA	<i>thyrsiflora</i>		C. of G. Hope	H. East, Esq. 1790
LYGEUM	<i>Spartum</i>	Rush-leaved Lygeum	Spain	H. East, Esq. 1791

DIGYNIA.

AVENA	<i>sativa</i>	Oats		M. Wallen, Esq. 1773
ARUNDO	<i>Bambos</i>	Bamboo Cane *	East-Indies	M. Wallen, Esq.
HORDEUM	<i>vulgare</i>	Barley		M. Wallen, Esq. 1773

Classis IV.

TETRANDRIA.

MONOGYNIA.

SCABIOSA	<i>cretica</i>	Cretan Scabious	Candia	H. East, Esq. 1788
	<i>atropurpurea</i>	Sweet Scabious	Italy	M. Wallen, Esq. 1779
	<i>stellata</i>	Starry Scabious	Spain	H. East, Esq. 1788
RUBIA	<i>tinctorum</i>	Madder	S. of Europe	Mr. Thame, 1790
BUDLEJA	<i>globosa</i> †		Chili	H. East, Esq. 1788
PLANTAGO	<i>lanceolata</i>	Rib-wort Plantain	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1772
CISSUS	<i>quadrangularis</i>		India	H. East, Esq. 1791
OLDENLANDIA	<i>umbellata</i>	Chè	India	H. East, Esq. 1791
ALCHEMILLA	<i>vulgaris</i>	Ladies Mantle	Britain	H. East, Esq. 1791

TETRAGYNIA.

ILEX	<i>aquifolium</i>	Common Holly	Britain	H. East, Esq. 1774
	<i>Cassine</i>	Paraguay Tea	• Carolina	Mr. Gale, 1772
	<i>nov. Sp.</i>		Madeira	Thos. Hibbert, Esq. 1787

* This most valuable production is now successfully cultivated in all parts of Jamaica.

† Hort. Kewensis, vol. i. p. 150.

Classis

Class V.

P E N T A N D R I A.

MONOGYNIA.

HELIOTROPIMUM	<i>peruvianum</i>	Peruvian Turnsole	Peru	H. East, Esq. 1788
ANCHUSA	<i>officinalis</i>	Baglofs	Europe	H. East, Esq. 1774
CYNGLOSSUM	<i>officinale</i>	Hound's-tongue	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1775
BORAGO	<i>officinalis</i>	Borage	England	M. Wallen, Esq. 1772
PRIMULA	<i>veris</i>	Primrose	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1780
	<i>auricula</i>	Auricula	Austria	H. East, Esq. 1790
CYCLAMEN	<i>perficum</i>	Persian Cyclamen	Candia	H. East, Esq. 1787
AZALEA	<i>viscosa</i>	White Azalea	N. America	H. East, Esq.
PLUMBAGO	<i>rosea</i>	Bengal Lead-wort	Bengal	H. East, Esq. 1787
PHLOX	<i>glaberrima</i>	Smooth Lychnidea	N. America	Mr. Thame, 1787
CONVOLVULUS	<i>Scammonia</i>	Scammony Bind-weed	Levant	Dr. Tho. Clarke, 1775
	<i>purpureus major</i>	Large purple Bind-w.	America	H. East, Esq.
	<i>minor</i>	Small purple Bind-w.	America	H. East, Esq.
	<i>tricolor</i>	Trailing Bind-weed	Spain	H. East, Esq.
	<i>canariensis</i>	Perennial Bind-weed	Canary Islands	
	<i>speciosus</i>	Broad-leav'd Bind-w.	East-Indies	
IPOMOEA	<i>Quamoclit</i>	Indian Creeper	East-Indies	
CAMPANULA	<i>rotundifolia</i>	Bell-flower	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1772
CINCHONA *		Hispaniola Bark	Hispaniola	Mr. Thame, 1790
COFFEA	<i>arabica</i>	Coffee-Tree	Arabia	
LONICERA	<i>Periclymenum</i>	Common Honeyfuckle	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773
	<i>symphoricarpos</i>	St Peter's Wort	Carolina	H. East, Esq.
	<i>tartarica</i>	Tartarian Honeyfuckle	Russia	H. East, Esq.
MIRABILIS	<i>Jala n</i>	Marvel of Peru	E. and W. Indies	
VERBASCUM	<i>Thapsus</i>	Great Mullein	Britain	H. East, Esq. 1772
DATURA	<i>Metel</i>	Hairy Thorn Apple	Africa	
NICOTIANA	<i>Tabacum</i>	Virginian Tobacco	America	
PHYSALIS	<i>Alkekengi</i>	Winter Cherry	S. of Europe	H. East, Esq. 1779
SOLANUM	<i>tuberosum</i>	Common Potato	Peru	
	<i>Melongena</i>	Egg Plant	India	
	<i>Sodomaum?</i>	Bolangena	Africa	
RHAMNUS	<i>Fujuba</i>	Jujube-tree	East-Indies	Dr. Tho. Clarke, 1790
DIOSMA	<i>ciliata</i>	Ciliated-Diosma	C. of Good Hope	H. East, Esq. 1788
MANGIFERA	<i>indica</i> †	Mango Tree	East-Indies	Lord Rodney, 1782
RIBES	<i>grossularia</i>	Gooseberry	Europe	M. Wallen, Esq. 1772

* *Affinis Cinchona Caribae*

† The Mango is inserted in its usual Place, although in reality it is Polygamious, and hitherto very imperfectly described.—*N. B.* This Plant, with several others, as well as different Kinds of Seeds, were found on board a French Ship (bound from the Isle de France for Hispaniola) taken by Capt. Marshall of his Majesty's Ship Flora, one of Lord Rodney's Squadron, in June 1782, and sent as a Prize to this island. By Capt. Marshall, with Lord Rodney's approbation, the whole Collection was deposited in Mr. East's Garden, where they have been cultivated with great assiduity and success.

	<i>rubrum</i>	Red Currant	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1772
	<i>nigrum</i>	Black Currant	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1772
VITIS	<i>vinifera</i>	Grape Vine		
CELOSIA	<i>crifata</i>	Cockscomb	Asia	
	<i>var.</i>	Buff-coloured Cockscomb	Asia	H. East, Esq. 1774
GARDENIA	<i>florida</i>	Cape Jasmine	China	Dr. Tho. Clarke, 1775
	<i>Thunbergia</i>	Starry Gardenia	C. of G. Hope	Dr. Tho. Clarke, 1775
ALLAMANDA	<i>cathartica</i>	Galarips	South-America	Tho. Hibbert, Esq. 1789
VINCA	<i>rosea</i>	Red Periwinkle	East-Indies	
	<i>alba *</i>	White Periwinkle		Mr. Thame
NERIUM	<i>Oleander fl. rubro</i>	Red South-Sea Rose	Spain. Portugal	
	<i>fl. albo</i>	White South-Sea Rose		H. East, Esq. 1787
	<i>fl. pleno.</i>	Double Oleander		

DIGYNIA.

ASCLEPIAS	<i>fruticosa</i>	Shrubby Swallow-wort	Africa	H. East, Esq.
	<i>gigantea</i>	Auricula Tree		
STAPELIA	<i>variegata</i>	Variegated Stapelia	C. of G. Hope	Tho. Hibbert, Esq. 1787
BETA	<i>hybrida</i>	Mangel Wurzel	Europe	H. East, Esq. 1790
	<i>vulgaris</i>	Common Beet	England	
DAUCUS	<i>Carota</i>	Garden Carrot	Britain	
GOMPHRENA	<i>globosa</i>	Globe Amaranth	India	
CORIANDRUM	<i>sativum</i>	Coriander	England	Mr. Thame, 1787
PASTINACA	<i>sativa</i>	Garden Parsnip	England	
ANETHUM	<i>graveolens</i>	Dill	Spain. Portugal	H. East, Esq.
	<i>Feniculum</i>	Fennel	England	
CARUM	<i>Carvi</i>	Caraway	Britain	Mr. Thame, 1787
PIMPINELLA	<i>Anisum</i>	Anise	Egypt	Mr. R. Lloyd, 1787
APIUM	<i>Petroselinum</i>	Parsley	Sardinia	
	<i>graveolens</i>	Celery	Britain	
CASSINE	<i>capensis</i>	Hottentot Cherry	C. of G. Hope	H. East, Esq. 1788
SAMBUCUS	<i>Ebulus</i>	Dwarf Elder	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773
	<i>nigra</i>	Black-berried Elder	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773
RHUS	<i>Coriaria</i>	Elm-leav'd Sumach	S. of Europe	Tho. Hibbert, Esq. 1787
	<i>typhinum</i>	Virginian Sumach	Virginia	Mr. Gale, 1772

PENTAGYNIA.

LINUM	<i>usitatissimum</i>	Common Flax	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773
	<i>maritimum</i>	Sea Flax	Italy	H. East, Esq. 1788

Classis VI.

HEXANDRIA.

MONOGYNIA.

TRADESCANTIA	<i>discolor</i> †	Purple Spider-wort	Honduras	Mr. Shakespeare, 1782
NARCISSUS	<i>odoratus</i>	Sweet-scented Narciss.	S. of Europe	Mr. Thame, 1773

* This Plant first appeared here on a dunghill where the red had been thrown out, and has since continued steady from seed.

† Hort. Kewensis, vol. i. p. 403.

HEMANTHUS CRINUM	<i>Tixetta</i>	Polyanthus Narcissus	Spain. Portugal	Mr. Thame, 1773
	<i>Jonquilla</i>	Jonquil	Spain	Mr. Thame, 1773
	<i>punicus</i>	Blood-Flower	Guinea	H. East, Esq. 1785
	<i>Americanum</i>	American Crinum	S. America	
AMARYLLIS	<i>Zeylanicum?</i>	Ceylon Crinum	East-Indies	
	<i>Asiaticum</i>	Indian Crinum	East-Indies	
	<i>Africanum</i>	African blue Lily	C. of G. Hope	H. East, Esq. 1770
	<i>Atamasco</i>	Atamasco Lily	N. America	H. East, Esq.
	<i>formosissima</i>	Jacoba Lily	S. America	M. Wallen, Esq. 1772
	<i>reginae</i>	Mexican Lily	S. America	H. East, Esq. 1790
	<i>Belladonna</i>	Belladonna Lilly	S. America	M. Wallen, Esq. 1774
	<i>aurea</i>	Golden Amaryllis	China	H. East, Esq. 1785
	<i>longifolia</i>	Long-leav'd Amaryllis	C. of G. Hope	H. East, Esq. 1789
	<i>radiata</i>	Snow-drop Amaryllis		H. East, Esq. 1789
ALLIUM	<i>vittata</i>	Striped Lilly		H. East, Esq. 1789
	<i>ascalonicum</i>	Jerusalem Shallot	Asia	H. East, Esq.
	<i>gracile*</i>	African Garlick	Africa	Dr. Tho. Clarke, 1775
	<i>faticum</i>	Garlick		
	<i>Porrum</i>	Leek		
LILIUM	<i>Cepa</i>	Onion		
	<i>bulbiferum</i>	Orange Lily	Italy	H. East, Esq. 1774.
	<i>pomponium</i>	Pomponian Lily	Siberia	H. East, Esq.
	<i>Chalcedonicum</i>	Scarlet Martagon Lily	Levant	H. East, Esq. 1790
	<i>Martagon</i>	Purple Martagon Lily	America	Mr. Thame, 1789
GLORIOSA	<i>superba</i>	Superb Lily	East-Indies	H. East, Esq. 1788
TULIPA	<i>gesneriana</i>	Tulip	Levant	M. Wallen, Esq.
ORNITHOGALUM	<i>pyrenaicum</i>	Star of Bethlehem	England	H. East, Esq. 1782
	<i>nutans</i>	Neapolitan D ^o	Italy	H. East, Esq. 1782
ASPHODELUS	<i>ramosus</i>	Branchy Asphodel	S. of Europe	H. East, Esq. 1784
ASPARAGUS	<i>officinalis</i>	Asparagus	England	
DRACÆNA	<i>Draco</i>	Dragon Tree	East-Indies	Dr. Tho. Clarke, 1775
POLYANTHES	<i>ferrea</i>	Purple Dracæna	China	H. East, Esq. 1787
	<i>tuberosa fl. pleno</i>	Tuberose	East-Indies	
HYACINTHUS	<i>orientalis</i>	Hyacinth	Levant	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773
ALETIRIS	<i>capensis</i>	Cape Aletris	C. of G. Hope	H. East, Esq. 1788
YUCCA	<i>hyacinthoides</i>	Ceylon Aloe	Ceylon	H. East, Esq. 1790
	<i>gloriosa</i>	Superb Aloe	N. America.	Dr. Lindsay
	<i>aloifolia</i>		South-America	
ALOE	<i>draconis</i>		South-Carolina	
	<i>perfoliata</i>			
BERBERIS	<i>var. barbad.</i>	Barbadoes Aloe		
	<i>vulgaris</i>	Berberby	Britain	Mrs. Brodbelt, 1770

DIGYNIA.

ORYZA*	<i>fativa</i>	Common Rice		M. Wallen, Esq.
--------	---------------	-------------	--	-----------------

TRIGYNIA.

RUMEX	<i>obtusifolius</i>	Blunt-leav'd Dock	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773
-------	---------------------	-------------------	---------	----------------------

* Hort. Kewensis, vol. i. p. 429; said to be a native of Jamaica, but erroneously.

Classis VII.

H E P T A N D R I A.

M O N O G Y N I A.

ÆSCULUS	<i>Hippocastanum</i>	Horse Chestnut	Asia	Mrs. Brodbelt, 1770
	<i>flava</i>	Yellow-flower'd Chest.	N. Carolina	H. East, Esq. 1790
	<i>Pavia</i>	Scarlet-flower'd Chest.	N. America	M. Wallen, Esq. 1774

Classis VIII.

O C T A N D R I A.

M O N O G Y N I A.

TROPEOLUM	<i>minus</i>	Indian Cress	Peru	M. Wallen, Esq. 1774
MELICOCCA	<i>bijuga</i>	Genip	South-America	
XIMENIA	<i>inermis</i>	Smooth Ximenia	East-Indies	H. East, Esq. 1784
FUCHSIA	<i>triphylla</i>	Scarlet Fuchsia	Chili	H. East, Esq.
LAWSONIA	<i>inermis</i>	Smooth Lawsonia	Africa	Monf. Nestoux *, 1789
	<i>spinesca</i>	Prickly Lawsonia	East-Indies	H. East, Esq. 1785
VACCINIUM	<i>Arctostaphylos</i>	Mad*. Whortle-Berry	Madeira	Tho. Hibbert, Esq. 1787
ERICA	<i>multiflora</i>	Many-flower'd Heath	S. of Europe	M. Wallen, Esq. 1784
OENOTHERA	<i>pumila</i>	Dwarf Primrose	N. America	M. Wallen, Esq.
NOV. GEN. †		The Akee	Africa	Dr. Tho. Clarke, 1778

TRYGINTA.

* Botanist to the French King at Hispaniola.

† This Plant was brought here in a Slave Ship from the Coast of Africa, and now grows very luxuriant, producing every Year large Quantities of Fruit; several Gentlemen are encouraging the Propagation of it. I do not know that it has hitherto been described; its Characters are as follows:

- CAL. Perianthium pentaphyllum inferum, foliolis ovatis acutis concavis, persistentibus villosis.
- COR. Petala quinque oblongo-lanceolata, acuta, villosa, ad basin sursum flexa et receptaculo adpressa, calyce alterna et eo longiora.
- STAM. Filamenta octo brevissima, pilosa, ad basin Germinis receptaculo glanduloso inserta. Antheræ oblongæ in orbem circa Germen dispositæ et ejusdem fere longitudinis.
- PIST. Germen subovatum triquetrum pilosum. Stylus longitudine Germinis, cylindricus, pilosus. Stigma obtusum.
- PER. Capsula carnosa, oblonga, utrinque obtusa, trigona, trilocularis, trivalvis, apice dehiscens.
- SEM. Tria, orbicularia, nitida, appendice aucta.

Arbor hæc quinquaginta pedes altitudine plerumque superat; Truncus cortice subfusco scabro tegitur ramis numerosis longis crassis irregularibus, inferioribus ad terram fere dependentibus. Folia habet pinnata, foliolis ovato-lanceolatis venosis integerrimis oppositis levibus superne nitidis, spithamæis, utrinque quatuor vel quinque, petiolis brevibus tumidis. Racemi simplices stricti, multiflori axillares, longitudine fere pinnarum, pedunculis propriis unifloris, stipulis lanceolatis, rufo-tomentosis, persistentibus. Flores parvi albidii inodori. Fructus magnitudinis ovi asserini, colore flavo, rubro, aurantiaco,

TRIGYNIA

SAPINDUS

edulis

Litchi Plumb

China

Dr. Tho. Clarke, 1775

Classis IX.

ENNENDRIA.

MONOGYNIA.

LAURUS

*Cinnamomum **

Cinnamon Tree

Ceylon

Lord Rodney, 1782

Camphora

Camphire Tree

Japan

Dr. Tho. Clarke, 1775

nobilis

Sweet Bay-Tree

Italy

Mr. Kuckan, 1770

indicae

Royal Bay-Tree

Madeira

H. East, Esq. 1788

fatens

Madeira Laurel

Madeira

Tho. Hibbert, Esq. 1787

Benzoin

Benjamin Tree

Virginia

Tho. Hibbert, Esq. 1787

Borbonia

Carolina Bay-Tree

Carolina

Mr. Gale, 1772

Sassafras

Sassafras Tree

N. America

M. Wallen, Esq. 1772

TRIGYNIA.

RHEUM

rhaponticum

Baftard Rhubarb

Asia

Mr. Thame, 1786

palmatum

True Rhubarb

China

Mr. Thame, 1786

Classis X.

DECANDRIA.

MONOGYNIA.

BAUHINIA

purpurea

Purple Bauhinia

East-Indies

H. East, Esq. 1790

scandens

Climbing Bauhinia

East-Indies

H. East, Esq. 1790

variegata

Variegated Bauhinia

East-Indies

H. East, Esq. 1790

CASSIA

Senna

Senna Tree

Egypt

H. East, Esq. 1787

Fistula

Sweet Cassia

E. & W. Indies

POINCIANA

*gulcherrima**var. fl. flavo* Yellow Flower-fence

Honduras

Mr. Shakespeare, 1782

GUILANDINA

Moringa †.

Horfe-radish Tree

East-Indies

H. East, Esq. 1784

RUTA

aurantiaco, vel ex utrifque mixto. Semina tria nitida nigra magnitudinis Nucis mofchata, quorum unum fæpiſſime abortit. Semini ſingulo adnaſcitur materies albida (Semen magnitudine excedens) conſiſtentia pinguedinis bovinæ et aqua leniter cocta Medullæ haud abſimilis. Ab Incolis in Guinea ad menſas apponitur vel per ſe vel Juſculo vel Pulmento elixa.

This Tree will doubtleſs, in a few years, become a very valuable Acquisition to the Iſland: ſome ſamples of the Bark lately ſent to England prove it to be the true Ceylon Cinnamon, and of the beſt Kind. It is now cultivated with great Attention in many parts of the Iſland.

† This Tree has hitherto been generally conſidered as a ſpecies of the Genus *Guilandina*, but very erroneouſly, as will appear from the following characters:

RUTA	<i>graveolens</i>	Garden Rue	S. of Europe	M. Wallen, Esq.
MELIA	<i>Azederach</i>	Bead-Tree	East-Indies	
QUASSIA	<i>amara</i>	Bitter Quassia	Guiana	Monf. Neétoux, 1789
KALMIA	<i>latifolia</i>	Broad-leav'd Kalmia	N. America	H. East, Esq. 1786
	<i>angustifolia</i>	Narrow-leav'd Kalmia	N. America	H. East, Esq. 1786
RHODODEN- DRON.	} <i>maximum</i>		N. America	H. East, Esq. 1786
	<i>ponticum</i>		Gibraltar	H. East, Esq. 1786
ARBUTUS	<i>Unclo</i>	Strawberry Tree	Ireland	H. East, Esq. 1785

D I G Y N I A.

SAXIFRAGA	<i>umbrosa</i>	London-Pride	England	M. Wallen, Esq. 1789
DIANTHUS	<i>barbatus</i>	Sweet-William Pink	Europe	M. Wallen, Esq. 1772
	<i>caryophyllus</i>	Clove July-flower	England	M. Wallen, Esq. 1772
	var.	Carnation		
	<i>Chinensis</i>	China Pink	China	M. Wallen, Esq. 1772
	<i>superbus</i>	Superb Pink	France	M. Wallen, Esq. 1772
NOV. GEN.*		Mandarin Orange	East-Indies	H. East, Esq. 1788.

TRYG Y.

- CAL.** Perianthium pentaphyllum, foliolis oblongis obtusis concavis, tribus superioribus reflexis, duobus inferioribus patentibus.
- COR.** Petala quinque. Petala duo superiora magnitudine foliolorum calycis, plana obtusa reflexa obovata; lateralia duo paulo majora concava obovata lunata minus reflexa; inferius spatulato-obovatum obtusum concavum, lateralibus majus, et genitalibus approximatum, patens.
- STAM.** Filamenta novem, quorum quinque tantum fertilia, ad basin crassa villosa, versus apices contorta, longitudine inæqualia, antheræ quinque bicapsulares subrotundæ. Sterilia quatuor minora longitudine etiam inæqualia, antheris minimis vel nullis, omnia petalis fere dimidio breviora.
- PIST.** Germen oblongum. Stylus filiformis leviter curvatus, petalis et staminibus longior. Stigma acutum.
- PER.** longum triangulare trivalve, utrinque acutum.
- SEM.** trialatum, alis lineis oblongis sibi invicem junctis. Nux fragilis rotunda. Nucleo rotundo trifidato.

Arbor viginti pedalis, cortice cinereo; Rami patentes numerosi. Folia tri vel quadripinnata sesquipedalia, foliolis ovalibus obtusis tri-linearibus teneris integerrimis pedicellatis; glandula parva pedicellata intra singulas foliolorum divisiones. Racemi axillares semipedales, calycis foliola subcarnea, petalis albis ad basin leviter purpureis. Pericarpium pedale fulcatum, angulis acutis. Calycis foliola et petala sæpe irregulariter reflexa et numero varia, sed Petalum inferius semper rectum et genitalibus approximatum.

- * This Shrub has been introduced into our Gardens here from England under the above Title, but I do not know on what Authority: the following are it's Characters, as nearly as I have been able to ascertain them.

- CAL.** Perianthium pentaphyllum inferum, foliolis parvis ovatis erectis.
- COR.** Petala quinque, laciniis ovatis vel subrotundis, erectis inferis, calyce duplo longioribus.
- STAM.** Filamenta decem circa Germen compressa, erecta, longitudine Corollæ. Antheræ parvæ simplices.

T R I G Y N I A.

SILENE	<i>Armeria</i>	Lobel's Catchfly	England	H. East, Esq. 1773.
--------	----------------	------------------	---------	---------------------

P E N T A G Y N I A.

SPONDIAS		South-Sea Plum	Asia	Lord Rodney, 1782
AGROSTEMMA	<i>coronaria</i>	Rose Campion	Italy	H. East, Esq.
SEDUN	<i>Anacampteros</i>	Evergreen Orpine	S. of France	H. East, Esq. 1791

Classis XI.

D O D E C A N D R I A.

M O N O G Y N I A.

PORTULACA	<i>triangularis</i>	Triangular-stalked Purslane	St. Vincent	Tho. Hibbert, Esq. 1787
HALESIA	<i>tetraptera</i>	Snow-drop Tree	Carolina	H. East, Esq. 1789
GARCINIA	<i>cornea</i> ? *	Small Mangostein	East-Indies	Lord Rodney, 1782

T R I G Y N I A.

REVEDA	<i>odorata</i>	Mignonette	Ægypt	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773
--------	----------------	------------	-------	----------------------

Classis XII.

I C O S A N D R I A.

M O N O G Y N I A.

CACTUS	<i>cochinillifer</i>	Cochineal Cactus	South-America	Monf. Nestoux, 1789
	<i>Perefskia</i>	Spanish Gooseberry	South-America	
PHILADELPHUS	<i>coronarius</i>	Dwarf Syringa	S. of Europe	H. East, Esq.
	<i>aromaticus</i>	Sweet-scented Syringa	New Zealand	H. East, Esq. 1787
EUGENIA	<i>Jambos</i>	Rose-Apple	India	Z. Bayly, Esq. 1762

PIST. Germen subrotundum. Stylus vix ullus. Stigma compressum.

PER. Bacca lucida membrano tenui obteſta, pulpa pauciſſima.

SEM. Duo, membrano proprio teſta, ſtriata, piſi magnitudine, ita ut duo applicata ſphærum conſtituunt, et forte ſemen unicum in duo fiſſile.

Frutex quatuor pedalis inordinate ramoſa, folia petiolata lanceolata-ovata alterna glabra integerrima; flores axillares congeſti ſubſeſſiles. Corolla alba. Germen facie æmulat fructum juniorum Citri Aurantii.

* This Tree was at firſt ſuppoſed to be the true Mangoeſtein, but having perfected it's fruit, on compariſon with the deſcription given of the true Mangoeſtein, we judge it to be the *G. cornea*. Male and Hermaphrodite flowers are found on the ſame Tree.

MYRTUS	<i>communis</i>			
	<i>var. romana</i>	Broad-leav'd Myrtle		
	<i>belgica</i>	Dutch Myrtle		
		Narrow-leaved Myrtle		M. Wallen, Esq. 1773
PUNICA	<i>Granatum fl. pleno</i>	Dble. flower'd Pomegr.	Spain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1774
AMYGDALUS	<i>Persica</i>	Peach Tree		M. Wallen, Esq.
	<i>var. Nectarina</i>	Nectarine Tree		M. Wallen, Esq.
PRUNUS	<i>communis</i>	Almond Tree	Africa	Dr. Tho. Clarke
	<i>Armeniaca</i>	Apricot Tree		Mr. Kuckan, 1773
	<i>Cerasus</i>	Cherry Tree	England	M. Wallen, Esq.
	<i>domestica</i>	Plum Tree	England	M. Wallen, Esq.

D I G Y N I A.

CRATÆGUS	<i>Oxyacantha</i>	Hawthorn	Britain	H. East, Esq. 1773
	<i>Crus Galli</i>	Cockspur Hawthorn	N. America	H. East, Esq.

P E N T A G Y N I A.

MESPIBUS	<i>germanica</i>	Dutch Medlar	England	H. East, Esq. 1774
	<i>Pyracantha</i>	Evergreen Thorn	Italy	H. East, Esq. 1774
PYRUS	<i>Malus</i>	Apple Tree	Britain	
	<i>communis</i>	Pear Tree	England	M. Wallen, Esq.
	<i>Cydonia</i>	Quince Tree	Germany	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773
MESEMBRYAN-	<i>crystallinum</i>	Ice-Plant	Greece	H. East, Esq. 1787
THEMUM				
SPIRÆA	<i>Ulmaria</i>	Meadow-Sweet	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1772

P O L Y G Y N I A.

ROSA	<i>lutea</i>	Yellow Austrian Rose	Germany	H. East, Esq.
	<i>cinnamomea</i>	Cinnamon Rose	S. of Europe	H. East, Esq.
	<i>centifolia</i>	Hundred-leav'd Rose	Spain	H. East, Esq.
	<i>damascena</i>	Damask Rose	France	M. Wallen, Esq.
	<i>gallica</i>	Red Rose	S. of Europe	M. Wallen, Esq.
	<i>moscosa</i>	Moss Rose	France	H. East, Esq.
	<i>moschata</i>	Musk Rose	Italy	H. East, Esq.
	<i>alba</i>	White Rose	Europe	H. East, Esq.
	<i>rubiginosa</i>	Sweet-Brier Rose	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq.
	<i>idaeus</i>			
RUBUS	<i>var. ruber</i>	Red Raspberry	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773
	<i>albus</i>	White Raspberry	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773
FRAGARIA	<i>vesca</i>			
	<i>var. chilensis</i>	Chili Strawberry	Chili	M. Wallen, Esq. 1772
	<i>pratensis</i>	Hautboy Strawberry	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1772

Classis XIII.

P O L Y A N D R I A.

M O N O G Y N I A.

CAPPARIS	<i>spinosa</i>	Caper Shrub	Italy	H. East, Esq. 1774
PAPAYER	<i>Rheas</i>	Red Poppy	Britain	H. East, Esq. 1773
THEA	<i>viridis</i>	Green-Tea Tree	China	Dr. Tho. Clarke, 1775
	<i>Beha</i>	Bohea Tea-Tree	China	Mr. Baker, 1771
CARYOPHYLLUS	<i>aromaticus</i> *	Clove Tree	Molucca Islands	Dr. Tho. Clarke, 1789
CISTUS	<i>potulifolius</i>	Poplar-leav'd Cistus	Portugal	H. East, Esq. 1779
	<i>incanus</i>	Hoary-leav'd Cistus	Portugal	H. East, Esq. 1779
	<i>crisus</i>	Curled-leav'd Cistus	Portugal	H. East, Esq. 1779
	<i>Tuberaria</i>	Plantain-leav'd Cistus	Portugal	H. East, Esq. 1779
DELPHINIUM	<i>grandiflorum</i>	Great-flower'd Larksp.	Siberia	H. East, Esq. 1774
	<i>Conjoida</i>	Branching Larkspur	England	M. Wallen, Esq. 1772
	<i>elatum</i>	Bee Larkspur	Siberia	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773
ACONITUM	<i>Napellus</i>	Chinese Larkspur	China	H. East, Esq. 1773
		Wolfshane	France	

P E N T A G Y N I A.

AQUILEGIA	<i>vulgaris</i>	Columbine Flower	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1772
NIGELLA	<i>damascena</i>	Fennel Flower	Spain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1772

P O L Y G Y N I A.

ILLICICUM	<i>floridanum</i>	Aniseed Tree	Florida	H. East, Esq. 1787
LIRIODENDRON	<i>Tulipifera</i>	Tulip Tree	N. America	H. East, Esq. 1776
MAGNOLIA	<i>grandiflora</i>	Laurel-leav'd Magnol.	Carolina	Mr. Gale, 1772
	<i>glauca</i>	Swamp Magnolia	N. America	Mr. Gale, 1772
	<i>acuminata</i>	Blue Magnolia	N. America	H. East, Esq. 1788
ANNONA		Cherimoya	S. America	H. East, Esq. 1786
ANEMONE	<i>hortensis</i>	Garden Anemone	Italy	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773
ATRAGENE	<i>indica</i>		S. America	H. East, Esq. 1788
CLEMATIS	<i>Flammula</i>	Virgin's Bower	S. of France	
ADONIS	<i>autumnalis</i>	Flos Adonis	England	M. Wallen, Esq.
RANUNCULUS	<i>auricomus</i>	Wood Crowfoot	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773

Classis XIV.

D I D Y N A M I A.

G Y M N O S P E R M I A.

SATUREJA	<i>hortensis</i>	Garden Savory	Italy	
HYSSOPUS	<i>officinalis</i>	Hyssop	S. of Europe	
NEPETA	<i>Cataria</i>	Catmint	Britain	H. East, Esq.
LAVANDULA	<i>Spica</i>	Common Lavender	S. of Europe	M. Wallen, Esq. 1774

* Two of these Plants were presented to Doctor Clarke by Monsieur Nestoux, from the King's Garden at Port au Prince; they appeared in a very luxuriant State of Growth on their Arrival, but have since died.

LAVANDULA	<i>Stæchas dentata multifida</i>	French Lavender Tooth'd-leav'd Lav.	S. of Europe S. of Europe	H. East, Esq. 1787 H. East, Esq. 1787
SIDERITIS	<i>candicans</i>	Canary Lavender	Canary Islands	Dr. Tho. Clarke, 1784
MENTHA	<i>viridis piperita</i>	Iron-wort Spear-Mint	Madeira England	H. East, Esq.
	<i>Pulegium</i>	Pepper-Mint	England	
GLECOMA	<i>hederacea</i>	Pennyroyal	Britain	
BETONICA	<i>officinalis</i>	Ground Ivy	Britain	H. East, Esq.
MARRUBIUM	<i>vulgare</i>	Wood Bony	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq.
ORIGANUM	<i>Onites</i>	Horehound	Britain	
	<i>Majorana</i>	Pot Marjoram	Sicily	
THYMUS	<i>vulgaris</i>	Sweet Marjoram		
	<i>maslichina</i>	Garden Thyme	Italy	
MELISSA	<i>officinalis</i>	Mastick Thyme	Spain	H. East, Esq.
DRACOCEPHALUM	<i>Russchiana</i>	Balm	Britain	
			Sweden	H. East, Esq. 1788
	<i>Moldavica</i>	Moldavian Balm	Moldavia	M. Wallen, Esq. 1774
OCYMU	<i>Basilicum</i>	Sweet Basil	Persia	M. Wallen, Esq.

ANGIOSPERMIA.

ANTIRRHINUM	<i>majus asarina</i>	Snap-dragon Toad-flax	England Italy	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773 H. East, Esq. 1773
DIGITALIS	<i>purpurea ambigua</i>	Purple Fox-glove Yellow Fox-glove	Britain Switzerland	H. East, Esq. 1787 H. East, Esq. 1784
BIGNONIA	<i>Catalpa</i>	Trumpet-flower	Carolina	H. East, Esq. 1788
BROWALLIA	<i>elata</i>	Upright Browallia	Peru	Dr. Tho. Clarke, 1775
SESAMUM	<i>orientale</i>	Vanglo, or Oil Plant	East-Indies	
BARLERIA	<i>prionites</i>	Thorny Barleria	India	H. East, Esq. 1788
VITEX	<i>Agnus Castus</i>	Chaste Tree	Sicily	Monf. Nectoux, 1789
PEDALIUM	<i>Murex</i>	Prickly-fruited Pedal.	East-Indies	Tho. Hibbert, Esq. 1787
MELIANTHUS	<i>major</i>	Honey-flower	C. of G. Hope	H. East, Esq. 1784

Classis XV.

TETRADYNAMIA.

SILICULOSA.

LEPIDIUM	<i>latifolium sativum</i>	Pepper-wort Garden Crefs	Britain Germany	H. East, Esq. 1788
COCHLEARIA	<i>officinalis</i>	Scurvy-grafs	Britain	H. East, Esq. 1773
	<i>Armoracia</i>	Horfe-radiih	England	
IBERIS	<i>umbellata</i>	Candy tuft	S. of Europe	H. East, Esq. 1775
ALYSSUM	<i>halimifolium</i>	Sweet Alysson	Italy	H. East, Esq. 1774
	<i>incanum</i>	Hoary Alysson	Italy	H. East, Esq. 1788
LUNARIA	<i>annua</i>	Honesty	Germany	H. East, Esq. 1773

SILIUOSA.

SISYMBRIUM	<i>Nasturtium</i>	Water-cress	Britain	
CHEIRANTHUS	<i>Cheiri</i>	Wall-flower	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1772
	<i>incanus</i>	Queen's Stock	Italy	M. Wallen, Esq. 1772
	<i>annuus</i>	Ten-week Stock	Spain	H. East, Esq. 1772
HESPERIS	<i>trifolii</i>	Night-sinelling Rocket	Hungary	H. East, Esq. 1772
SINAPIS	<i>alba</i>	White Mustard	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq.
	<i>nigra</i>	Black Mustard	Britain	
BRASSICA	<i>Rapa</i>	Turnep	England	
	<i>oleracea</i>	Common Cabbage	England	
		var. 1. Red Cabbage		
		2. Savoy Cabbage		
		3. Cauliflower		
		4. Brocoli		
		5. Turnep-rooted Cabbage		
RAPHANUS	<i>fatiuus</i>	Garden Radish	China	
		var. 1. Turnep Radish		
		2. Black Radish		

Classis XVI.

MONADELPHIA.

PENTANDRIA.

GERANIUM	<i>malacoides</i>	Mallow-leav'd Geran.	S. of Europe	H. East, Esq. 1788
	<i>alchimilloides</i>	Mantle-leav'd Geran.	C. of G. Hope	H. East, Esq. 1788
	<i>coriandrifolium</i>	Coriander-leav'd Ger.	C. of G. Hope	H. East, Esq. 1788
	<i>zonale</i>	Horse-shoe Geran.	C. of G. Hope	
	<i>quercifolium</i>	Oak-leav'd Geran.	C. of G. Hope	H. East, Esq. 1788
	<i>Radula</i>		C. of G. Hope	H. East, Esq. 1788
	<i>vitifolium</i>	Balm-scented Geran.	C. of G. Hope	M. Wallen, Esq.
	<i>capitatum</i>	Rose-scented Geran.	C. of G. Hope	M. Wallen, Esq.
	<i>betulinum</i>	Birch-leav'd Geran.	C. of G. Hope	H. East, Esq. 1778
	<i>Bohemicum</i>		C. of G. Hope	H. East, Esq. 1788
	<i>laevigatum</i>		C. of G. Hope	H. East, Esq. 1788
	<i>Hermannifolium</i>		C. of G. Hope	H. East, Esq. 1788
	<i>palmatum</i>		C. of G. Hope	H. East, Esq. 1788

DODECANDRIA.

PENTAPETES	<i>phanicea</i>	Scarlet Pentapetes	East-Indies	Dr. Tho. Clarke, 1775
------------	-----------------	--------------------	-------------	-----------------------

POLYANDRIA.

ADANSONIA	<i>digitata</i>	Monkies-Bread	Senegal	H. East, Esq.
SIDA	<i>indica</i>	Indian Mallow	India	H. East, Esq.
ALCEA	<i>rosea</i>	Holly-hock	China	M. Wallen, Esq. 1774
MALVA	<i>capensis</i>	Cape Mallow	C. of G. Hope	H. East, Esq. 1787
	<i>crispa</i>	Curl'd Mallow	Syria	H. East, Esq. 1774
	<i>rotundifolia</i>	Dwarf Mallow	Britain	Capt. Jones
LAVATERA	<i>thuringiaca</i>	Great-flower'd Lav.	Hungary	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773

HIBISCUS

HIBISCUS	<i>populneus</i>	Poplar-leav'd Hibisc.	East Indies	H. East, Esq. 1784
	<i>mutabilis</i>	Changeable Rose	East Indies	M. Wallen, Esq.
	<i>Rosa firenfis</i>	China Rose	China	M. Wallen, Esq.
	<i>syriacus</i>	Althæa frutex	Syria	M. Wallen, Esq.
	<i>fulvus</i>	Fig-leav'd Hibiscus	Ceylon	H. East, Esq. 1788
	<i>Trionum</i>	Bladder Hibiscus	C. of G. H	H. East, Esq. 1788
CAMELLIA	<i>Sabdariffa</i>	Sorrel Hibiscus	India	
	<i>japonica</i>	Japan Rose	Japan	H. East, Esq. 1787

Classis XVII.

D I A D E L P H I A.

D E C A N D R I A.

ERITHRINA	<i>herbaca</i>	Herbaceous Coral-tree	Carolina	Mr. Gale, 1772
	<i>grandiflora</i>	Large flowering C. tree		H. East, Esq.
SPARTIUM	<i>juncum</i>	Spanish Broom	S. of Europe	M. Wallen, Esq. 1777
	<i>scoparium</i>	Common Broom	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq.
	<i>monospermum</i>	White-flower'd Broom	Portugal	M. Wallen, Esq.
GENISTA	<i>candicans</i>	Hoary Genista	S. of Europe	H. East, Esq. 1788
ULEX	<i>europeus</i>	Furze or Whin	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq.
	<i>capensis</i>	Cape Furze	C. of G. Hope	H. East, Esq. 1782
CROTALARIA	<i>junceae</i>	Chinese Crotalaria	China	Dr. Tho. Clarke
	<i>retusa</i>	Wedge-leav'd Crot.	East-Indies	
	<i>verrucosa</i>	Blis-flower'd Crot.	East-Indies	H. East, Esq.
CROTALARIA	<i>gallida</i> *	Pale-flower'd Crotal.	Africa	Dr. Tho. Clark, 1775
	<i>laburnifolia</i>	Shrubby Crotalaria	Asia	H. East, Esq. 1791
	<i>quinquefolia</i>		India	H. East, Esq. 1791
	<i>rotundifolia</i>		Switzerland	H. East, Esq. 1791
ONONIS		Earth Nuts or Pindars	South-America	
ARACHIS	<i>hypogæa</i>	White Lupine		M. Wallen, Esq. 1773
LUPINUS	<i>albus</i>	Blue Lupine	Sicily	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773
	<i>varius</i>	Narrow-leav'd Lupine	Spain	H. East, Esq. 1780
	<i>angustifolius</i>	Yellow Lupine	Sicily	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773
	<i>luteus</i>	Kidney-Bean	India	
PHASEOLUS	<i>vulgaris</i>	Black-seeded Dolichos	Egypt	H. East, Esq. 1789
DOLICHOS	<i>Lablab</i>	Chinese Dolichos	East-Indies	H. East, Esq. 1789
	<i>finensis</i>		India	H. East, Esq. 1791
GLYCINE	<i>triloba</i>	Blue Clitoria	East-Indies	
CLITORIA	<i>ternatea</i>	White Clitoria		
	<i>fl. albo</i>	Garden Pea	S. of Europe	
PISUM	<i>sativum</i>	Sweet Pea	Sicily	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773
LATHYRUS	<i>odoratus</i>	Painted Lady Pea	Ceylon	H. East, Esq. 1781
	<i>var.</i>	Tangier Pea	Africa	H. East, Esq. 1781
	<i>tingitans</i>	Broad-leav'd Pea	England	H. East, Esq. 1781
	<i>latifolius</i>	Garden Bean	Egypt	
VICIA	<i>Faba</i>	Common Laburnum	Austria	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773
CYTISUS	<i>Laburnum</i>	Pigeon Pea	East-Indies	
	<i>Cajan</i>	Rose-Acacia	Carolina	H. East, Esq. 1786
ROBINIA	<i>hispida</i>	Large-flower'd Acacia	East-Indies	H. East, Esq. 1782
	<i>grandiflora</i>			

* Hort. Kew. vol. iii. p. 20.

ROBINIA	<i>mitis</i>		East-Indies	H. East, Esq. 1792
CORONILLA	<i>valentina</i>	Shrubby Coronilla	Spain	H. East, Esq. 1788
	<i>arabica</i>	Arabian Coronilla	Arabia	H. East, Esq. 1788
	<i>minima</i>	Small Coronilla	S. of Europe	H. East, Esq. 1788
ÆSCHYNOMENE	<i>grandiflora</i>	Pea-Tree	East-Indies	J. G. Kemeys, Esq. 1774
	<i>Sesban</i>	Egyptian Pea-Tree	Egypt	Dr. Tho. Clarke, 1775
	<i>aquatica</i>	Swamp Pea-Tree	East-Indies	H. East, Esq. 1780
HEDYSARUM	<i>gyrans</i>	Moving Plant	East-Indies	Dr. Tho. Clarke, 1775
GALEGA	<i>purpurea</i>	Purple Galega	East-Indies	H. East, Esq. 1790
LOTUS	<i>jacobæus</i>	Dark-flower'd Lotus	Azores	H. East, Esq. 1790
MEDICAGO	<i>polymorpha</i>			
	<i>var. scutellata</i>	Snail Medick	Europe	H. East, Esq.
	<i>intertexta</i>	Hedge-hog Medick	Europe	M. Wallen, Esq.

Classis XVIII.

P O L Y A D E L P H I A.

P E N T A N D R I A.

THEOBROMA	<i>Cacao</i>	Chocolate Nut-Tree	S. America	
AMBROMA	<i>augusta</i>	Maple-leav'd Ambroma	New S. Wales	H. East, Esq. 1791

D O D E C A N D R I A.

MONSONIA	<i>speciosa</i>	Fine-leav'd Monsonia	C. of G. Hope	H. East, Esq. 1791
----------	-----------------	----------------------	---------------	--------------------

I C O S A N D R I A.

CITRUS	<i>Media</i>	Citron-Tree	Asia	
	<i>var. 1.</i>	Lemon-Tree		
		2. Lime-Tree		
		3. Sweet Lime-Tree		
		4. Forbidden-fruit-Tree		
		5. Grape-fruit-Tree		
	<i>Aurantium</i>	Seville Orange-Tree	India	
	<i>var.</i>	China Orange-Tree		
	<i>Decumana</i>	Shaddock-Tree	India	

P O L Y A N D R I A.

HYPERICUM	<i>balearicum</i>	St. John's-wort	Majorca	H. East, Esq. 1788
	<i>monogynum</i>	Chinese St. John's wort	China	H. East, Esq. 1788

Classis XIX.

S Y N G E N E S I A.

P O L Y G A M I A Æ Q U A L I S.

SONCHUS	<i>oleraceus</i>	Sow-thistle	Britain	
LACTUCA	<i>saliva</i>	Garden Lettuce		

LEONTODON	<i>Taraxacum</i>	Dandelion	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1774
CICORIUM	<i>Endivia</i>	Endive		
	<i>var. crispa</i>	Curled-leav'd Endive		
CYNARA	<i>Scylmus</i>	French Artichoke	S. of France	
	<i>Cardunculus</i>	Cardoon Artichoke	Candia	
CREPIS	<i>babata</i>	Spanish Hawk-weed	S. of France	
SPILANTHUS	<i>Acmella</i>	Balm-leav'd Spilanthus	Ceylon	H. East, Esq. 1788

POLYGAMIA SUPERFLUA.

TANACETUM	<i>vulgare</i>	Garden Tansey	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq.
ARTEMISIA	<i>Abrotanum</i>	Southernwood	S. of Europe.	
	<i>Asanthium</i>	Wormwood	Britain	
GNAPHALIUM	<i>fulidum</i>	Strong-scented Ever-lasting	C. of G. Hope	H. East, Esq. 1788
XERANTHE- MUM	} <i>speciosissimum</i>	Shewy Xeranthemum	C. of G. Hope	H. East, Esq. 1775
ASTER		Shrubby Aster	C. of G. Hope	H. East, Esq. 1784
		Chinese Aster	China	M. Wallen, Esq. 1775
		Italian Aster	Italy	H. East, Esq. 1780
		Field Daisy	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773
BELLIS	<i>perennis</i>	French Marygold	Mexico	
TAGETES	<i>patula</i>	African Marygold	Mexico	
	<i>erecta</i>	Red Zinnia	N. America	H. East, Esq. 1772
ZINNIA	<i>multiflora</i>	Garden Chrysanthemum	Sicily	H. East, Esq. 1774
CHRYSAN- THEMUM	} <i>coronarium</i>	Camomile	Britain	Mrs. Duncomb, 1783
ANTHEMIS		Milfoil, or Yarrow	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq.
ACHILLEA				

POLYGAMIA FRUSTRANA.

HELIANTHUS	<i>annuus</i>	Common Sun-flower	Mexico	
	<i>indicus</i>	Dwarf Sun-flower		H. East, Esq.
	<i>tuberosus</i>	Jerusalem Artichoke	Brazil	H. East, Esq.
RUDBECKIA	<i>laciniata</i>		Virginia	H. East, Esq. 1789
	<i>kirta</i>	American Sun-flower	Canada	H. East, Esq. 1790
CENTAURE	<i>Cyanus</i>	Blue-bottle	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1774

POLYGAMIA NECESSARIA.

CALENDULA	<i>officinalis</i>	Garden Marygold	S. of Europe	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773
ARCTOTIS	<i>calendulacea</i>	Marygold Arctotis	C. of G. Hope.	H. East, Esq. 1783

MONOGAMIA.

LOBELIA	<i>sphulitica</i>	Blue Cardinal-flower	Virginia	Monf. Noctour, 1789
VIOLA	<i>odorata</i>	Sweet Violet	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773
	<i>var.</i>	Double-flower'd Violet	Britain	H. East, Esq. 1789
	<i>tricolor</i>	Heart's-ease or Pansies		Mrs. Brodbelt, 1769
IMPATIENS	<i>Balsamina</i>	Garden Balsam	East-Indies	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773

Classis XX.

G Y N A N D R I A.

D I A N D R I A.

LIMODORUM	<i>tuberosum</i>	Tuberous-rooted Lim.	N. America	
	<i>Tankervilleæ</i>	Chinese Limodorum	China	H. East, Esq. 1787
EPIDENDRUM	<i>Vanilla</i>	Vanilla	S. America	Mr. Thame, 1787

T R I A N D R I A.

SISYRINCHIUM	<i>bermudiana</i>		N. America	
--------------	-------------------	--	------------	--

P E N T A N D R I A.

PASSIFLORA	<i>maliformis?</i>	Water Lemon	Barbadoes	
	<i>cærulea</i>	Passion Flower	Brazil	M. Wallen, Esq. 1780

P O L Y A N D R I A.

ARUM	<i>bicolor *</i>	Painted Arum		H. East, Esq.
CALLA	<i>æthiopica</i>		C. of G. Hope	H. East, Esq. 1787

Classis XXI.

M O N O E C I A.

M O N A N D R I A.

CASUARINA	<i>equisetifolia</i>		East-Indies	H. East, Esq. 1788
ARTOCARPUS	<i>integrifolia</i>	Indian Jaca Tree	East-Indies	Lord Rodney, 1782

T R I A N D R I A.

TYPHA	<i>latifolia</i>	Large Reed-mace	Britain	
COIX	<i>Lactuca Jobi</i>	Job's Tears	East-Indies	M. Wallen, Esq.
PHYLLANTHUS	<i>Niruri</i>	Annual Phyllanthus	East-Indies	H. East, Esq. 1782

T E T R A N D R I A.

BUXUS	<i>sempervirens</i>	Box-tree	England	M. Wallen, Esq.
URTICA	<i>dioica</i>	Common Nettle	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq.
	<i>urens</i>	Lesser Nettle	Britain	H. East, Esq.
MORUS	<i>alba</i>	White Mulberry Tree	China	H. East, Esq. 1784
	<i>nigra</i>	Common Mulb. Tree	Italy	M. Wallen, Esq.
	<i>rubra</i>	Red Mulberry Tree	Carolina	H. East, Esq. 1774
	<i>papyrifera</i>	Paper Mulberry Tree	Japan	H. East, Esq. 1779

P E N T A N D R I A.

AMARANTHUS	<i>melancholicus</i>	Two-colour'd Amar.	East-Indies	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773
	<i>tricolor</i>	Three-colour'd Amar.	East-Indies	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773
	<i>cruentus</i>	Bloody Amaranth	East-Indies	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773

* Hort. Kew. vol. iii. p. 316.

POLYANDRIA.

QUERCUS	<i>Ilex</i>	Evergreen Oak Tree	S. of Europe	H. East, Esq. 1787.
	<i>Sub-rubra</i>	Cork Tree	S. of Europe	H. East, Esq.
	<i>alba</i>	Red Oak Tree	N. America	Mr. Thame, 1788
	<i>Robur</i>	White Oak Tree	Virginia	Mr. Thame, 1788
JUGLANS	<i>regia</i>	Common Oak Tree	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773
	<i>alba</i>	Walnut Tree	Persia	M. Wallen, Esq. 1774
	<i>nigra</i>	White Hickory Tree	N. America	M. Wallen, Esq. 1786
FAGUS	<i>Castanea</i>	Black Walnut Tree	N. America	Mr. Jones, 1786
	<i>pumila</i>	Chestnut Tree	England	Mrs. Brodbelt
CORYLUS	<i>Avellana</i>	Dwarf Chestnut Tree	N. America	M. Wallen, Esq.
PLATANUS	<i>orientalis</i>	Hazel-nut Tree	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1775
	<i>occidentalis</i>	Oramental Plane Tree	Levant	M. Wallen, Esq.
		Common Plane Tree	N. America.	Mr. Thame, 1775

MONADELPHIA.

PINUS	<i>sylvestris</i>	Common Pine Tree	Europe	M. Wallen, Esq. 1775
	<i>Pinaster</i>	Cluster Pine Tree	Europe	M. Wallen, Esq. 1775
	<i>Pinea</i>	Stone Pine Tree	Europe	M. Wallen, Esq. 1775
	<i>Cembra</i>	Siberian Pine Tree	Siberia	M. Wallen, Esq. 1775
	<i>Sirobus</i>	Weymouth Pine Tree	N. America	M. Wallen, Esq. 1775
	<i>Cedrus</i>	Cedar of Libanon	Levant	H. East, Esq. 1788
	<i>Larix</i>	White Larch Tree	Germany	H. East, Esq. 1788
THUJA	<i>orientalis</i>	Chinese Arbor Vitæ	China	H. East, Esq. 1775
CUPRESSUS	<i>sempervirens</i>			
	<i>var. striata</i>	Upright Cypress Tree	Candia	H. East, Esq. 1773
	<i>horizontalis</i>	Spreading Cypr. Tree	Candia	Mr. Thame, 1786
	<i>disticha</i>	Deciduous Cypr. Tree	N. America	Mr. Salt, 1786
CROTOK	<i>juniperoides</i>	African Cypress Tree	C. of G. Hope	H. East, Esq. 1789
	<i>schiferum</i>	Tallow Tree	China	John Ellis, Esq. 1765

SYNGENESIA.

MOMORDICA	<i>Balsamina</i>	Smooth Cerafee	India	
	<i>Charantia</i>	Hairy Cerafee	East Indies	
CUCURBITA	<i>Pepo</i>	Pumpkin Gourd		
	<i>Melopepo</i>	Squash Gourd		
	<i>Citrullus</i>	Water Melon	S. of Europe	
CUCUMIS	<i>Melo</i>	Common Melon		
	<i>Dudaim</i>	Apple-shap'd Cucum.	Levant	H. East, Esq.
	<i>fativus</i>	Common Cucumber		
	<i>flexuosus</i>	Turkey Cucumber		
CYOS	<i>angulata</i>	Chocho Vine	America	

Classis XXII.

I. D I O E C I A.

M O N A N D R I A.

PANDANUS	<i>odoratissimus</i>	Screw Pine	Ceylon	Lord Rodney, 1782
		D I A N D R I A.		
SALIX	<i>babylonica</i>	Weeping Willow	Italy	H. East, Esq. 1783
		T E T R A N D R I A.		
MYRICA	<i>cerifera</i>	Candleberry Myrtle	Carolina	Dr. Tho. Clarke, 1775
		P E N T A N D R I A.		
PISTACIA	<i>officinarum</i>	Pistachia Tree	Greece	H. East, Esq. 1783
	<i>Terebinthus</i>	Turpentine Tree	S. of Europe	H. East, Esq. 1790
	<i>Lentiscus</i>	Mastick Tree	S. of Europe	H. East, Esq. 1789
SPINACIA	<i>oleracea</i>	Garden Spinage		
CANNABIS	<i>fativa</i>	Hemp	India	M. Wallen, Esq.
		H E X A N D R I A.		
SMILAX	<i>Sarsaparilla</i>	Sarsaparilla	America	Z. Bayly, Esq. 1765 *
		O C T A N D R I A.		
POPULUS	<i>balsamifera.</i>	Tacamahac Poplar Tree	Siberia	H. East, Esq. 1791
		D E C A N D R I A.		
SCHINUS	<i>molle</i>	Peruvian Mastick Tree	Peru	H. East, Esq. 1783.

Classis XXIII.

P O L Y G A M I A.

M O N O E C I A.

Nov. GEN. †	Bichy Tree †	Guinea.
-------------	--------------	---------

TERMINALIA

* It was first planted by Mr. Bayly, at Nonfuch Plantation, in St. Mary's parish, and grew with great luxuriancy, but seems not to have been generally cultivated with that care which it merits.

† This Tree is noticed by Sir Hans Sloane in his Natural History of Jamaica, as having been imported from the Coast of Guinea, and planted in the mountains of Liguanea; it still continues to grow there, as well as in many other parts of the South Side of the Island: the following Characters were taken from a Tree growing in the Garden, which perfected its fruit.

Hermaphroditus Fls.

CAL. Nullus.

COR. Monopetala quinquepartita infera, laciniis ovatis acutis crassis subvillosis, striatis patento-erectis. Nectarium concavum, includens Germen, margine decem-dentato.

STAM.

POLYANDRIA.

QUERCUS	<i>Ilex</i>	Evergreen Oak Tree	S. of Europe	H. East, Esq. 1787.
	<i>Sub-r</i>	Cork Tree	S. of Europe	H. East, Esq.
	<i>rubra</i>	Red Oak Tree	N. America	Mr. Thame, 1788
	<i>alba</i>	White Oak Tree	Virginia	Mr. Thame, 1788
	<i>Robur</i>	Common Oak Tree	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1773
JUGLANS	<i>regia</i>	Walnut Tree	Persia	M. Wallen, Esq. 1774
	<i>alba</i>	White Hickery Tree	N. America	M. Wallen, Esq. 1786
	<i>nigra</i>	Black Walnut Tree	N. America	Mr. Jones, 1786
FAGUS	<i>Castanea</i>	Chestnut Tree	England	Mrs. Brodbelt
	<i>pumila</i>	Dwarf Chestnut Tree	N. America	M. Wallen, Esq.
CORYLUS	<i>Avellana</i>	Hazel-nut Tree	Britain	M. Wallen, Esq. 1775
PLATANUS	<i>orientalis</i>	Oriental Plane Tree	Levant	M. Wallen, Esq.
	<i>occidentalis</i>	America Plane Tree	N. America.	Mr. Thame, 1775

MONADELPHIA.

PINUS	<i>sylvestris</i>	Common Pine Tree	Europe	M. Wallen, Esq. 1775
	<i>Pinaster</i>	Cluster Pine Tree	Europe	M. Wallen, Esq. 1775
	<i>Pinea</i>	Stone Pine Tree	Europe	M. Wallen, Esq. 1775
	<i>Cembra</i>	Siberian Pine Tree	Siberia	M. Wallen, Esq. 1775
	<i>Strobus</i>	Weymouth Pine Tree	N. America	M. Wallen, Esq. 1775
	<i>Cedrus</i>	Cedar of Libanon	Levant	H. East, Esq. 1788
	<i>Larix</i>	White Larch Tree	Germany	H. East, Esq. 1788
THUJA	<i>orientalis</i>	Chinese Arbor Vitæ	China	H. East, Esq. 1775
CUPRESSUS	<i>sempervirens</i>			
	<i>var. stricta</i>	Upright Cypress Tree	Candia	H. East, Esq. 1773
	<i>horizontalis</i>	Spreading Cypr. Tree	Candia	Mr. Thame, 1786
	<i>disticha</i>	Deciduous Cypr. Tree	N. America	Mr. Salt, 1786
CROTON	<i>juniperoides</i>	African Cypress Tree	C. of G. Hope	H. East, Esq. 1789
	<i>sebiferum</i>	Tallow Tree	China	John Ellis, Esq. 1765

SYNGENESIA.

MOMORDICA	<i>Balsamina</i>	Smooth Cerafee	India	
	<i>Charantia</i>	Hairy Cerafee	East Indies	
CUCURBITA	<i>Pepo</i>	Pumpkin Gourd		
	<i>Melopepo</i>	Squash Gourd		
	<i>Citrullus</i>	Water Melon	S. of Europe	
CUCUMIS	<i>Melo</i>	Common Melon		
	<i>Dudaim</i>	Apple-shap'd Cucum.	Levant	H. East, Esq.
	<i>sativus</i>	Common Cucumber		
	<i>flexuosus</i>	Turkey Cucumber		
SCYOS	<i>angulata</i>	Chocho Vine	America	

Classis XXII.

D I O E C I A.

M O N A N D R I A.

PANDANUS	<i>odoratissimus</i>	Screw Pine	Ceylon	Lord Rodney, 1782
		D I A N D R I A.		
SALIX	<i>babylonica</i>	Weeping Willow	Italy	H. East, Esq. 1783
		T E T R A N D R I A.		
MYRICA	<i>cerifera</i>	Candleberry Myrtle	Carolina	Dr. Tho. Clarke, 1775
		P E N T A N D R I A.		
PISTACIA	<i>officinarum</i>	Pistachia Tree	Greece	H. East, Esq. 1783
	<i>Terebinthus</i>	Turpentine Tree	S. of Europe	H. East, Esq. 1793
	<i>Lentiscus</i>	Mastick Tree	S. of Europe	H. East, Esq. 1789
SPINACIA	<i>oleracea</i>	Garden Spinage		
CANNABIS	<i>fativa</i>	Hemp	India	M. Wallen, Esq.
		H E X A N D R I A.		
SMILAX	<i>Sarsaparilla</i>	Sarsaparilla	America	Z. Bayly, Esq. 1765 *
		O C T A N D R I A.		
POPULUS	<i>balsamifera</i>	Tacamahac Poplar Tree	Siberia	H. East, Esq. 1791
		D E C A N D R I A.		
SCHINUS	<i>molle</i>	Peruvian Mastick Tree	Peru	H. East, Esq. 1783.

Classis XXIII.

P O L Y G A M I A.

M O N O E C I A.

NOV. GEN.?	Bichy Tree †	Guinea.
------------	--------------	---------

TERMINALIA

* It was first planted by Mr. Bayly, at Nonfuch Plantation, in St. Mary's parish, and grew with great luxuriance, but seems not to have been generally cultivated with that care which it merits.

† This Tree is noticed by Sir Hans Sloane in his Natural History of Jamaica, as having been imported from the Coast of Guinea, and planted in the mountains of Liguanea; it still continues to grow there, as well as in many other parts of the South Side of the Island: the following Characters were taken from a Tree growing in the Garden, which perfected its fruit.

Hermaphroditus Flos.

CAL. Nullus.

COR. Monopetala quinquepartita infera, laciniis ovatis acutis crassis subvillosis, striatis patento-erectis. Nectarium concavum, includens Germen, margine decem-dentato.